

LESSONS IN FRENCH

AUTHORIZED BY

THE DEPARTMENT OF EDUCATION OF ONTARIO



TORONTO

THE COPP, CLARK COMPANY, LIMITED.





A. M. Robertson

Jan'y, 1890

Acorns.

CASSELL'S LESSONS IN FRENCH.

BY
LOUIS FASQUELLE, LL.D.

REVISED BY PROFESSOR DE LOLME.

*Corrected according to the 7th Edition (1877) of the
Dictionary of the French Academy, and
considerably enlarged by*

PROFESSOR E. ROUBAUD, B.A. (*Paris*).

Authorized by the Department of Education of Ontario.

PART I.

THE ONE HUNDRED AND TWENTY-THIRD THOUSAND.

CASSELL & COMPANY, LIMITED:
LONDON, PARIS, NEW YORK & MELEOURNE.

THE COPP, CLARK COMPANY, LIMITED:
9, FRONT STREET WEST, TORONTO.

[ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.]

PREFACE

TO THE

ONE HUNDRED AND FIRST THOUSAND.

IN the latest edition (1877) of their Dictionary, the French Academy having modified the spelling and accentuation of a large number of words, the Publishers have thought necessary to have their French Lessons revised and corrected, as some of these changes have a bearing upon the accidence.

The work done has, however, not been confined to these modifications: a chapter on the place of the personal pronouns; one on the way to render in French the English gerundial infinitive; another on French past participles used substantively, and several Exercises, both French and English, have been added to the First Part, in which several Chapters, especially those on the agreement of the Past Participle, and several Exercises, have also been revised, improved, and enlarged; other numerous modifications and improvements being introduced where needed.

The Second Part has been increased by a Chapter on the formation of the feminine of nouns, by a list of the French and one of the Anglo-French Homonyms and Paronyms, the two latter with a view to meet the requirements of those Students who wish to pass

the Examinations of the Universities which have introduced questions on this subject in their Examination Papers. Many other important improvements, modifications, and additions have also been made to this part, so that every one of the rules added to the First Part should have its counterpart in the Second ; and the Publishers may say that the work is now brought up to the present stage of philological knowledge, and can satisfy the requirements of all who may use it.

P R E F A C E .

THE following Lessons, which appeared originally in the pages of the POPULAR EDUCATOR, have received such high encomiums from those who, by their own unaided exertions, have learned from them to read and write the French Language, and with the help, perhaps, of the "Sixpenny Lessons in French," to speak it, that the Publishers have been encouraged, in issuing a new edition, to have a complete revision made of the work. This service has been performed by Professor De LOLME, who has gone carefully through the book, and made numerous improvements, and, where needed, corrections therein.

The *First Part* consists of a series of Lessons, proceeding gradually from the most simple to those which are more difficult, and leading the student gradually and insensibly to a knowledge of the structure and idioms of the language. This is greatly aided by easy Exercises, consisting of idiomatic French phrases to be turned into English, and *vice versa*, the one set forming a kind of key to the other. To each set of exercises are prefixed rules and examples, and a vocabulary of words to be used in the exercises.

The *Second Part* contains a Systematic Grammar of the French tongue, including its Etymology and

Syntax, each rule being illustrated by passages from the most distinguished French writers, exhibiting the many idiomatic usages, as well as the regular syntax, of the language.

The *Two Parts* combined thus form a practical as well as theoretical introduction to that which, next to the mother tongue, is the most important of all modern languages ; and it may be added that the work has met with equal approbation and success on both sides of the Atlantic.

INDEX.

	PAGE
SECT. I. The Letters, Vowels, Consonants, Diphthongs, Nasal Sounds, &c.	1
II. The Article : Present Indicative of <i>Avoir</i>	11
III. The Article continued	13
IV. The Article used Partitively	15
V. The Negatives : Present Indicative of <i>Avoir</i> Negatively	16
VI. Idiomatic uses of <i>Avoir</i>	19
VII. Pronouns and Pronominal Adjectives.	20
VIII. Demonstrative Adjectives and Pronouns	23
IX. Plural of Nouns.	25
X. Plural of Pronouns, the Article, and Posses- sives	27
XI. Agreement of Adjectives ; Feminine of do.	29
XII. Agreement of Adjectives ; Plural of do.	32
XIII. Place of the Adjective ; Relative Pronoun <i>En</i>	34
XIV. Plan of Exercises in Composing French ; List of Words for such Exercises	37
XV. Comparison of Adjectives	45
XVI. Superlative of Adjectives ; use of <i>Encore</i>	48
XVII. Adverbs of Quality ; <i>Quels, Que, &c.</i>	50
XVIII. Relative and Conjunction ; Numbers	52
XIX. Idiomatic Expressions relating to Time	55
XX. The Four Conjugations of Verbs	57
XXI. Idioms of the Verbs <i>Avoir</i> and <i>Être</i>	59
XXII. Stems and Terminations of the Verbs ; Present Indicative	62
XXIII. Irregular Verbs ; their Present Indicative	65

	PAGE
SECT. XXIV. Interrogative form of Present Indicative;	
Article contracted with <i>à</i>	68
XXV. Idiomatic use of some Verbs; Imperative .	70
XXVI. Place of the Pronouns	73
XXVII. Respective place of the Pronouns, &c. .	75
XXVIII. Exceptions to Rules on the Place of Per-	
sonal Pronouns	77
XXIX. Use of the Article; <i>Monsieur, Madame</i> , &c.	80
XXX. Use of the Article continued: Present Indi-	
cative	83
XXXI. Relative Pronouns; Present Indicative .	85
XXXII. Idiomatic Use of <i>Mettre, Faire</i> , &c. .	87
XXXIII. Impersonal Verbs	90
XXXIV. Place of the Adverb; Present Indicative .	92
XXXV. Indefinite Pronoun <i>On</i> ; other Idioms. .	94
XXXVI. Reflective Verbs; Present Indicative .	96
XXXVII. Reflective Pronouns used with Verbs .	100
XXXVIII. Uses of some Reflective Verbs . . .	102
XXXIX. Use of Reflective Verbs continued . .	104
XL. Reflective Verbs Conjugated with <i>En</i> .	106
XLI. The Past Indefinite Tense	108
XLII. The Past Participle, and its uses . .	111
XLIII. Use of the Auxiliary Verbs	113
XLIV. Idiomatic Expressions; <i>Combien, Mener</i> , &c.	116
XLV. Uses of Reflective and Impersonal Verbs .	118
XLVI. The Passive Verb; uses of <i>Le</i> instead of	
Nouns, &c.	120
XLVII. Idiomatic Expressions: <i>Aller, Être</i> , &c. .	122
XLVIII. Impersonal Verbs and their uses . .	124
XLIX. Impersonal Verbs continued	126
L. Object relating to some Verbs	128
LI. The Past Definite in the Four Conjugations	130
LII. The Past Definite of Irregular Verbs, &c. .	132
LIII. The Imperfect in the Four Conjugations .	135
LIV. The Imperfect of all Verbs	137
LV. The Past Anterior and the Pluperfect .	139
LVI. Idiomatic Constructions in Regimen, &c. .	141

	PAGE
SECT. LVII. Idiomatic uses of Tenses of Verbs . . .	143
LVIII. Idiomatic Phrases; <i>Changer, Tarder, &c.</i> . .	145
LIX. Rules for the Plural of Compound Nouns . .	146
LX. The two futures, Simple and Anterior . . .	148
LXI. Irregularities of the Future	150
LXII. The Two Conditionals; the Conditional Present	153
LXIII. Idiomatic Phrases; <i>Faire, le, la, les, &c.</i> . .	155
LXIV. Idiomatic Phrases; <i>Faire</i> continued . . .	157
LXV. Idioms; <i>Faire</i> used Reflectively and Im- personally	159
LXVI. Idioms relating to <i>Avoir, le, &c.</i>	161
LXVII. Idioms relating to <i>Avoir</i> and <i>Épouser</i> . .	163
LXVIII. Idioms relating to Words of Dimension, Weight, &c.	164
LXIX. Idioms relating to <i>Mettre, &c.</i>	167
LXX. The Imperative in the Four Conjugations . .	169
LXXI. The Imperative and Infinitive; Idioms, &c. .	171
LXXII. The Subjunctive in the Four Conjugations. .	172
LXXIII. Use of the Subjunctive	175
LXXIV. Use of the Subjunctive continued . . .	177
LXXV. The Imperfect and Pluperfect of the Sub- junctive	180
LXXVI. Government of Verbs.	182
LXXVII. Government of Verbs continued . . .	184
LXXVIII. Government of Verbs continued . . .	186
LXXIX. Complement of Adjectives	188
LXXX. Government of Prepositions	190
LXXXI. The Demonstrative Pronoun <i>Ce</i>	193
LXXXII. Idioms relating to the Pronouns <i>Ce</i> and <i>Que</i> .	195
LXXXIII. Government of Verbs, &c.	197
LXXXIV. Complement of Conjunctions	199
LXXXV. Regimen of Verbs, &c.	201
LXXXVI. Idioms relating to the Article, Adjective, &c. .	203
LXXXVII. Idioms relating to Pronouns, &c. . .	205
LXXXVIII. Some Peculiar Idioms	207
LXXXIX. Some Peculiar Idioms continued . . .	209

SECT.		PAGE
XC.	Idioms relating to <i>Tenir</i>	211
XCI.	Idioms relating to <i>Être</i>	213
XCII.	Some Peculiar Idioms.	215
XCIII.	Some Peculiar Idioms continued	217
XCIV.	Peculiar Idioms continued	220
XCV.	Idioms relating to <i>Monde, Gens, Tout, &c.</i>	222
XCVI.	Idioms relating to <i>En, Entendre, &c.</i>	224
XCVII.	The Present Participle; the Verbal Adjective	226
XCVIII.	The Present Participle continued	228
XCIX.	Practical Summary of Rules on the Past Participle	231
C.	The Preceding Summary continued	234
CI.	The Past Participle used substantively	238
CII.	Examples Illustrating the Various Uses of the Principal Conjunctions	239
CIII.	List of the Usual Abbreviations employed in French	244

LESSONS IN FRENCH.

SECTION I.

THE LETTERS.

THE French alphabet contains twenty-five letters, as follows, with their names in italics:—A, *ah*; B, *bay*; C, *say*; D, *day*; E, *eh*; F, *eff*; G, *zhay*; H, *ash*; I, *ee*; J, *zher*; K, *kah*; L, *ell*; M, *mm*; N, *nn*; O, *o*; P, *pay*; Q, *ku*; R, *err*; S, *ess*; T, *tag*; U, *u*; V, *vay*; X, *eer*; Y, *ee gree*; Z, *zed*.

W, called in French *double V*, might be added, as many foreign words which have that letter have been adopted into the French language.

The alphabet is divided into *vowels* and *consonants*.

THE VOWELS.—The vowels are *six* in number, namely:—

a e i o u y.

THE CONSONANTS.—The remaining letters of the alphabet, *nineteen* in number, are called consonants, namely:—

b c d f g h j k l m n p q r s t v x z,

which are divided into labials, dentals, gutturals, and liquids.

There are:—Four labials, viz., two sonant, *b, e*; two surd, *p, f*;—Five dentals, viz., two sonant, *d, z*; two surd, *t, s*; one sometimes surd, sometimes sonant, viz., *x*;—Five simple gutturals, viz., two sonant, *g, j*; three surd, viz., *c, k, q*;—One compound surd guttural, *ch*;—One guttural, sometimes aspirate, sometimes mute, *h*;—Four liquids, viz., *l, m, n, r*.

THE COMPOUND VOWELS.—There are eighteen compound vowels, namely:—*ai, ay, ei, ey, er, ez, ed, et, es, au, eau, eu, au, oi, oy, œ, oe, ou*.

They are thus called because they are sounded by one emission of the voice.

In the three following, *éi, éau, éu*, the *é* must be sounded by itself, and separately from the other letters.

THE DIPHTHONGS.—There are *six* diphthongs, namely:—

ia ié io ua ué ui.

They are thus called because, though pronounced as one syllable, the sound of both vowels is distinctly heard.

The following *eight* combinations of *three successive vowels* are also called diphthongs, namely:—

iai iau ieu oua oué oui uai uen.

These diphthongs are thus divided into syllables:—

i-ai i-au i-eu ou-a ou-é oui u-ai u-en.

THE NASAL VOWEL SOUNDS.—There are certain sounds,

called nasal vowel sounds, represented by the combination of the vowels with the consonants *m* and *n*, namely :—

am em im aim om um ym
an en in ain ein on un eun yn.

In the following, *éin*, *éim*, the *é* is sounded separately from the other letters.

THE NASAL DIPHTHONGAL SOUNDS.—There are also certain sounds called nasal diphthongal sounds, produced by the combination of *nasal vowel* sounds with a *vowel, not nasal*, before them, namely :—

iau ien ion uau uin ouan oin ouin.

THE LIQUIDS.—The following combinations of the consonants are called liquids, namely :—*ll*, *gn*.

FRENCH ACCENTS.

Accents, as used in French, are marks differing from each other, and placed over certain *vowels only*, for specific purposes. There are three accents, viz. :—

´	called the Acute	accent (thus, é)
`	„ Grave	„ („ è)
^	„ Circumflex	„ („ â)

The acute accent is used *only* over the vowel *e*, and indicates how it must be sounded.

The grave accent is used *only* over the vowels *a*, *e*, and *u*. When found over *e*, it indicates how this letter should be sounded.

The circumflex accent is the union of the acute and grave accents, and is used with all the vowels except *y*. It indicates that the letter over which it is placed *has a sound twice as long as it has without it*, viz. —

Âge, Bête, Bûche, Côte, Gîte, Mê-lée, Tête.

The accents not only indicate the pronunciation, but they also point out a change in the primitive spelling of many of the words in which they are found; thus *étouffer*, *âge*, *côte*, were formerly spelt *estouffer*, *aage*, *coste*. Besides this, they point out a difference in the meaning of words spelt alike; thus *de*, of; *dé*, thimble; *des*, of the; *dès*, as soon; *crû*, believed; *crû*, grown; *a*, has; *à*, to; *la*, her, the; *là*, there; etc.

Besides the three kinds of accents just enumerated, certain other marks or signs are used, called

Cedilla, Diæresis, Hyphen, and Apostrophe.

THE CEDILLA (ç) is a peculiar mark, somewhat resembling a figure 5, and placed *only under the letter c*, before the vowels *a*, *o*, and *u*, thus: ç.

It indicates that the letter *c* under which it is placed has the soft sound of *ss* as in the word *lesson* :—

Façade, pronounced Fas-sad. Reçu, pronounced Rus-su.

The **DIERESIS** (¨) consists of two dots placed *over* the vowels *e*, *i*, and *u*. It shows that the vowel over which it is placed is pronounced separately from the preceding vowel, thus indicating, in reality, a distinct syllable, as—

Naïveté, pronounced Na-ive-té.

The **HYPHEN** (-) is a short horizontal mark, which is used to connect words, as—

Belles-lettres, Celui-ci, Demi-kilomètre.

The **APOSTROPHE** (') is like a comma, and is used to show the elision, or cutting off, of a vowel before words commencing with a vowel or *h* mute, as :—

L'ami, instead of Le ami. L'homme, instead of Le homme.

The **EUPHONIC T** is thus called on account of its peculiar position between two parts of speech, viz., the verb and the pronoun. It is used *only* between a verb ending with a vowel and the pronouns *il*, *elle*, or *on*, and then a hyphen is placed both before and after it, thus :—

A-t-elle? Parle-t-on? A-t-il?

NAME AND SOUND OF THE VOWELS.

A, a—name, *ah*—has two distinct sounds, viz. :—

A short sound, as in the English word *fat*.

A long sound, as in the English word *mark*.

A has the short sound represented by the English word *fat* when it begins or ends a French word.

<i>French.</i>	<i>Pronounced.</i>	<i>English.</i>		<i>French.</i>	<i>Pronounced.</i>	<i>English.</i>
Alarme	A-larm	Alarm.		Dame	D-am	Married Woman.

A has the long sound represented by *a* in the English word *mark*, when it is pronounced as the first letter of the French alphabet, and also when under the circumflex accent.

Be careful, however, not to pronounce *Á á* like the sound of the English word *awe*, but give it the sound of *ah* prolonged, in the following examples, namely :—

Âge Ah-zh Age. Grâce Grah-s Favour.

This vowel is sometimes under a grave accent, thus—à, là, voilà; but its sound is not materially affected thereby.

E, e.—Name, *ay*; sound, like the letters *ay*, in the English word *day*.

It is used more than any other letter, namely :—in five different ways, and hence it has five different names, viz. :—

e silent, *e* mute or unaccented, *é* acute, *è* grave, *ê* circumflex.

E, e, SILENT.—When final, and in the middle of words, between two consonants, *e* is silent, as in the following words :—

Abaque A-bak Abacus | Contenance Cont'nans Attitude;
also between J or G and *a* or *o*, as in Jean, Georges.

E, e, UNACCENTED.—Name, *uh*; has two sounds, 1st, that of *e* in *her*, when final of monosyllables, as in *le*, *de*, *me*; when

at the end of the first syllable as, in *mena*, *frelata*, etc. ; and in the middle of words when following *l* or *r* preceded by another consonant as in *autrement*, *horriblement*, etc. ; 2nd, that of *ay* in *day*, before a double consonant, also before *c*, *f*, *l*, *p*, *r*, *s*, *x*, and before *nu*, *mr*, and *m* final, as in : *terre*, *pelle*, *avec*, *nef*, *fer*, *extase*, *indemne*, *déceuvr*, *harem*, etc.

Ê, é, ACUTE.—Name, *eh* ; sound, like the English word *ch*.
Examples :

Arrivé Ar-eev-eh *Arrived*. | Vérité Veh-ree-teh *Truth*.

È, è, GRAVE.—Name, *ay* ; sound, like the letters *ay* in the English word *day*. Examples :

Colère Ko-lair *Passionate*. | Madère Mad-air *Madeira*.

Ê, ê, CIRCUMFLEX.—Name, *a* ; sound, like the letter *a* in the English word *fame*.

Ê has a longer and broader sound than è.

I, i.—Name, *EE*, *ee* ; sound, like the letters *ee* in the English word *see*.

This vowel receives but one kind of accent, the circumflex, viz. :—*Î*, *î*, and has two sounds, viz., long and short ; long, as *ee* in the English word *feet*, and short, like *i* in the English word *pin*, or nearly like it. It becomes *nasal* in combination with the letters *m* and *n*, in which case the character of its own sound is completely changed. Examples :

Lime Leem *File*. | Liquide Lee-keed *Liquid*.

Î, î, CIRCUMFLEX.—Name, *EE*, *ee* ; sound, like the letters *ee* in the English word *feet* ; sound prolonged. Examples :

Abîme Ab-eem *Abyss*. | Gîte Zheet *Lodging-place*.

O, o.—The *o* has, in French, three different sounds : short, as in *cob* ; broad and prolonged, as in *cord* ; and full, as in *coat*.

The short sound, as in *cob*, is the most common one. The *o* has a broad and prolonged sound, as in *cord*, when followed by an *r*, thus—*castor*, *encore*, etc. The full sound, as in *coat*, is always given to the *o* when it has a circumflex accent over it. It is also full when final, as in *coco*, *loto*, etc., and when followed by a mute consonant, as in *mot*, *dos*, etc.

EXAMPLES OF THE SHORT SOUND :

Bloc Blok *Block*. | Gobelet Go-blai *Cup*.

EXAMPLES OF THE BROAD, PROLONGED SOUND :

Castor Kas-tor *Beaver*. | Essor Es-sor *Flight*.

EXAMPLES OF THE FULL SOUND ACCENTED :

Dépôt Deh-po *Storehouse*. | Rôle Role *Part*.

EXAMPLES OF THE FULL SOUND UNACCENTED :

Mot Mo *Word*. | Zéro Zeh-ro *Zero*.

U, u.—Name, *U*, *u* ; sound, nearly like the letter *u* in the English word *brunette*.

The sound of this vowel is peculiar, and there is no sound in the English language which exactly corresponds to it. The nearest approach to it is the sound of *u* in the word *brunette*.

EXAMPLES :

But Bu Aim. | Tribu Tree-bu Tribe.

Ū, û, CIRCUMFLEX.—*U, u*; sound, nearly like the letter *u* in the English word *brunette*. Examples :

Bûche Bush Log of wood. | Flûte Flute Flute.

This letter is silent when following *q*, except in a few words of Latin origin; *e.g.* : *quart* pronounced as if spelt *car*.

Y, y.—Name, *EE, ee*; sound, like the letters *ee* in the English word *bee*.

This letter is also an adverb, meaning *there*, and a pronoun.

When *y* stands alone, and thus becomes a word, its pronunciation is invariably like that of the letters *ee* in the English word *bee*, viz. :—*Il y a*, pronounced *eel e a*.

I is also pronounced like the letters *ee* in the English word *bee*, when it *begins* or *ends* a word; and also *when it occurs in the body of a word, after a consonant*, namely :—

Système Seess-tain System.

Whenever *y* is found in the body of a word *between two vowels*, it has the sound of two French *i*'s, viz. :—

Moyen should be pronounced as if printed thus: *moi-ien*; divided and pronounced in two syllables, namely, *moi-ien*.

NAME AND SOUND OF THE CONSONANTS.

B, b.—In any position within a word, this letter has the sound of the English letter *b*.

When doubled within a word, only one *b* is sounded, viz. :—

Abbesse Ab-ess Abbess.

At the end of proper names *b* is always sounded.

In these two words, namely, *aplomb* and *plomb*, the *b* is silent, and the next two preceding letters in each word, namely, *om*, take the nasal sound of *on*.

C, c.—This letter has two entirely distinct sounds, namely, *hard* and *soft*. Before the vowels *a, o, u*, and *æ*, and also before the consonants *c, l, n*, and *r*, it has the hard sound of the letter *k* in the English word *kill*, namely :—

Calamité Ka-la-me-tch Calamity. | Classe Klahss Class.

But before *e, i*, and *y*, and also with the cedilla before *a, o*, and *u*, it has the soft sound of the letter *s* in the English word *sea*, namely :—

Cèdre Saidr Cedar. | Façade Fas-sad Front.

When *final*, and *not preceded by the letter n*, *c* is generally sounded like the letter *k* in the English word *book*, namely :—

Avec A-vek With. | Échec Eh-shek Check.

D, d.—This letter generally has the sound of the letter *d* in

the English word *deed*. It is usually silent when *final*, except in proper names.

The principal exception to the above rule is when *d* is final just before a word beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute. In such a case the *d* has the sound of the letter *t* in the English word *top*; and in pronunciation is joined with the following word, as if it were its first letter, as will be seen in the two examples which follow, viz.:—

Un grand acteur, as if printed Un gran tacteur.

In another instance, *d* has also the sound of *t*, viz., at the end of the third person singular of the indicative mood of verbs of the fourth conjugation, when followed by the pronouns *il*, *elle*, or *on*. In these cases the *d* has the sound of the English *t*, and is joined to the following word in pronunciation, as if it were that word's first letter, namely:—

Entend-il? as if printed Enten-til?

F, f.—This letter is usually pronounced as the letter *f* in the English word *for*. It is sometimes sounded also in the end of words. In the French word *neuf*, which means *nine*, the *f* is silent when it precedes a word commencing with a consonant, thus: *neuf lis*, nine lilies, is pronounced as if printed *neu lis*.

But the striking peculiarity of this letter consists in the fact that it receives the sound of the letter *v*, as in the English word *vow*, before another word commencing with a vowel or *h* mute, and is joined with this word in pronunciation, as if it were its first letter, namely:—

Neuf animaux Neu vanimo *Nine animals.*

G, g.—Before the vowels *a*, *o*, and *u*, and the consonants, *d*, *h*, *l*, *n*, and *r* in the commencement of French words, *g* has the hard sound of the letter *g* in the English word *got*, namely:—

Gosier Go-zee-eh *Throat.* | Globe Glob *Globe.*

The *g* final of the word *bourg*, a market town, is silent, and so it is also in the names of towns ending in *bourg* and *berg*, as:

Augsbourg pronounced	Ogz-boor.
Cobourg „	Ko-boor, etc.
Bamberg „	Bamber, etc.
Nuremberg „	Nurimber.

Before the vowels *e*, *i*, and *y*, the letter *g* has the soft sound of the letters *zh*, namely:—

Congé Konh-zhay *Holiday.* | Gigot Zhee-go *Leg of Mutton.*

G final, before a word beginning with a vowel, or an *h* mute, takes the sound of the English *k*, and is connected with the following word in pronunciation, as if it belonged to that word, namely:—

Rang honorable as if printed Rahn konorabl.

G final, before a word commencing with a consonant or an aspirated *h*, is silent in French words, namely:—

Rang noble is pronounced Rahn nobl'.

Double *g* has the sound of only a single *g*, except before the vowels *e* and *i*, in which case the first *g* is hard, like *g* in the English word *go*, and the second *g* has a soft sound represented by the two letters *zh*, namely :—

Suggérer is pronounced Sug zhay-reh.

H, h.—This letter is used in the French language in two ways, usually styled *mute* and *aspirate*. Examples :

Habit is pronounced Abee.

In this word there is no sound whatever of the *h*.

Héros is pronounced Eh-ro.

J, j.—This letter has the sound of the two English letters *zh*, or of *s* in the English word *pleasure* :

Jamais Zha-may Ever. | Joujou Zhoo-zhoo A toy.

K, k.—This letter has the sound of the English *k* in all situations.

L, l.—This letter has the sound of the English *l* in nearly all situations, except when used with the vowel *i* as a liquid. In a few words, *l* final is silent.

M, m.—When *initial*, the letter *m* has only the sound of the English *m*. It is used in nasal combinations like the following, viz. :—*am, em, im, om, um*.

N, n.—When *initial*, the letter *n* has only the sound of English *n*. It is used in nasal combinations, namely :—

an, en, in, on, un,

After *m* and *n* in the end of words, final consonants are usually silent, viz. :—

Prends as if printed Pren, and pronounced Prahñ.

When *n* is final before another word beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, it requires, besides being pronounced with a nasal sound, that another *n* should be added in pronunciation to the beginning of the next word, namely :—

Mon ami as if printed Mon-namee.

P, p.—When *initial*, and in the body of words, *p* is usually sounded; and then it has the sound of *p* in English. When final, it is generally silent. *P* followed by *h* is sounded like *f*.

Q, q.—*Q* is pronounced like the English *k*; it is generally followed by *u*, which is then almost always silent.

R, r.—The sound of this letter is that of the English *r*. It is never sounded in the French words *messieurs* and *monseigneur*.

It is often dropped, or nearly so, in the last syllable before a word beginning with a consonant, in familiar conversation; but *never* in dignified speaking or reading, or before a vowel.

S, s.—*S* has two distinct sounds, which are determined by its position, viz. :—the sharp, hissing sound of *s* in the English words *dissever* and *kiss*, and the soft sound of *s* in the English word *nose*, equivalent to the English letter *z*. It has the *sharp* and *hissing* sound whenever it is *initial*.

It has the *soft sound* when it occurs between two vowels, viz. :—

Choisir Sh'wah zeer *To choose* ; Maison May-zonh *A house*.

There are, however, a few exceptions to the above rule. *S* final, before another word commencing with a vowel or *h* mute, has the sound of the English *z*, and is connected with the following word in pronunciation, as if it were its first letter, namely :—

Après avoir diné as if printed Apray zavoir diné.

—**T, t.**—*T*, when *initial*, or in the *body of a word*, is usually pronounced like English *t*. However, before *ia*, *ien*, *ion*, and in Latin words before *in*, it has the sound of English *s* in the word *see*, namely :—

Partial	Par-see-al	<i>Biassed.</i>
Gratien	Gra-see-anh	<i>Gratianus.</i>
Caution	Ko-seonh	<i>Caution.</i>
Curtius	Cur-see-us	<i>Curtius.</i>

T followed by *h* is sounded as *t* alone in English.

T final is usually silent.

V, v.—In all situations, *v* has the sound of English *v*.

W, w.—*W* is not properly a French letter. It is not found in the French alphabet, though it is used in foreign words, names of persons, places, and things ; after *a*, *e*, *o*, *w* is sounded as *au*, *eu*, *ou*, which see.

X, x.—This letter has different sounds in the French language, as in English. It has five different sounds, namely :—

1. Like the English letter *k*, in the following word :—

Excès	Ek-sai	<i>Excess.</i>
-------	--------	----------------

2. Like the English letters *ks*, in the following word :—

Exprimer	Eks-pree-meh	<i>To press out.</i>
----------	--------------	----------------------

Ex, before a consonant, has the sound of *eks*, as in the foregoing examples.

3. Like the English letters *gz*, when initial, and when before a vowel :—

Xerxès	Gzersess	Xerxes		Exacte	Eg-zakt	<i>Correct.</i>
--------	----------	--------	--	--------	---------	-----------------

4. Like English *ss*, in the following words, when alone, or when preceding a word beginning with a vowel or *h* mute :—

Dix	Deess	Ten		Six	Seess	<i>Six.</i>
-----	-------	-----	--	-----	-------	-------------

5. Like English *z*, in the following words :—

Dix-huit,	Deez-weet,	<i>Eighteen</i>		Dix-neuf,	Deez-nuff,	<i>Nineteen.</i>
-----------	------------	-----------------	--	-----------	------------	------------------

X final is silent in many words, except proper names.

X final, when carried to the next word in pronunciation, has the sound of English *z*, namely :—

Aux hommes as if printed Au zommes.

Z, z.—*Z* is usually sounded like English *z*.

Z final, before a word commencing with a consonant, is silent.

Z final, before a word commencing with a vowel or *h* mute, is carried to the next word in pronunciation, as if it were its first letter, namely :—*Essayez-en*, as if printed *Essaych-zen*.

In words of Italian origin *zz* is sounded like *dz*.

COMPOUND VOWELS.

There are *eighteen compound vowels*, whose different sounds we now proceed to illustrate, viz. :—*ai, ay, ei, ey, er, ez, ed, et, es ; au, eau ; eu, œu ; oi, oy, ôé, oe ; ou*.

AI, *ay, ei, ey, er, ez, ed, et, es*.—Name, *ay* ; sound, like the letters *ay* in the English word *day* : *Aimer, Ay-may, To love ; Neige, Nayzh, Snow*, etc.

AU, *eau*.—Name, *o* ; sound like the letter *o* in the English word *no* : *Aussi, O-see, Also ; Bateau, Bato, Boat*.

EU, *œu*.—Name, *uh* ; sound, like *e* in *her*, except in the verb *avoir*, in which it has the sound of French *u* : *Demeure, Dumur, Residence ; Cœur, Cur, Heart ; eu, j'eus, qu'il eût, etc., Had, I had, That he might have, etc.*

OI, *oy, ôé, oe*.—Name, *oah*, or *vah* ; sound, like the letters *oah* of the proper name *Noah* : *Ardoise, Slate ; Loyal, Honest ; Poêle, Stove ; Moelle, Marrow*, etc.

OU.—Name, *oo* ; sound, like the letters *oo* in the English word *moon* : *Poudre, Poodr, Powder*.

DIPHTHONGS.

There are six *diphthongs*, namely :—*ia, ié, io, ua, ué, ui*.

IA.—Name, *ia* ; sound, like the letter *i* in the English word *fig*, and *a* in the word *fat*, pronounced as one syllable. The sounds of both, however, must be distinctly heard without any hiatus between them : *Fiacre, Fee-akr, Cab*.

IE.—Name, *ee-eh* ; sound, *ee-eh* : *Amitié, Pitié, Lié, Friendship, Pity, Bound*.

IO.—Name, *co* ; sound, like the letters *io* in the last syllable of the Latin word *eur-cu-lío*.

Violon

Veolouh

Violin.

UA.—Name, *uah*. Sound : this diphthong has the combined sound of the French *u*, together with that of *a* in the English word *fat*, unless the latter be under a circumflex accent ; in which last case the *a* has the sound of *a* in the English word *mark* : *Aiguade, Watering-place ; Guano, Gua-no, Guano*.

UE.—Name, *u-eh*. Sound : this diphthong has the sound of French *u* followed by *é*, as in *tué, killed, hué, hooting*, etc.

UI.—Name, *u-ee*. Sound : this diphthong has the combined sound of the French *u*, together with that of French *i*, which latter is like the letters *ee* in the English word *bee*.

Conduite Kouh-d'weet *Conduct*. | Puissance P'wee-sahns *Power*.

The *eight diphthongal combinations of three successive vowels*, in the same word, are thus divided, to show their pronunciation :—

iai	i-ai	ea.	oué	ou-é	oo-eh.
iau	i-au	eo.	oui	ou-i	ooe or wee.
ieu	i-eu	eh.	uai	u-ai	uay.
oua	ou-a	ooah or wah.	ueu	u-eu	uuh.

Diphthongs of *four successive vowels* in the same word are thus divided for pronunciation :—

ouai	ou-ai	oo-ay.
oueu	ou-eu	oo-uh.
ouée	ou-ée	oo-eh.

NASAL VOWEL SOUNDS.

The sound of *am* and *an*, *em* and *en*, is represented by the letters *anh*, and is like the sound of the letters *an* in the English words *anchor* and *can-ker*, with an effort to speak through the nose, as it is termed.

The sound of *im*, *in*, *ein*, *aim*, *ain*, *ym*, *yn*, is like that of *an* in the English word *anger*.

The sound of *om* and *on* is represented by the letters *onh*, and is like the sound of the letters *on* in the English word *conquer*, uttered with an effort to speak through the nose.

The sound of *eun*, *um*, and *un* is represented by the letters *unh*, and is like the sound of the letters *un* in the English word *hun-ger*, uttered with an effort to speak through the nose.

Concerning these nasals, three general rules are to be well remembered, viz. :—

Rule 1.—The *m* or *n* must not be uttered.

Rule 2.—Single *m*'s and *n*'s followed by *vowels* are not nasals.

Rule 3.—When the *m* and *n* are doubled, the nasality is destroyed.

Illustrations of these nasal sounds, commencing with examples in which the sounds *am* and *an* are found :—

AM.	Ambassade	ahn-bass-ad	<i>Embassy.</i>
AN.	Cantique	Kahn-teek.	<i>Song.</i>
EM.	Membrane	Mahn-bran	<i>Membrane</i>
EN.	Moment	Mo-mahn	<i>Moment.</i>

In the following word *en* is a nasal, viz. :—

Ennuyer	Ahn-nuee-yeh	<i>To annoy</i>
---------	--------------	-----------------

In the word *ennuyer*, in its derivatives, and in a very few others, *en* is nasal.

IM.	Imbécile	Anh-bay-seel	<i>Foolish.</i>
IN.	Médecin	Mayd'-sanh	<i>Physician.</i>
EIN.	Sein	Sanh	<i>Breast.</i>
AIM.	Faim	Fanh	<i>Hunger.</i>
AIN.	Pain	Panh	<i>Bread.</i>
YM.	Symtôme	Sanhptom	<i>Symptom.</i>
YN.	Lynx	Lanhx	<i>Lynx.</i>
OM.	Bombe	Bonhb	<i>Shell.</i>
ON.	Maison	May-zonh	<i>House.</i>
UM.	Humblement	Unh-bl'-mahn	<i>Humbly.</i>
UN.	Aucun	O-kunh	<i>Any.</i>

The following are exceptions to the above illustrated pronunciations, viz. :—*Lambago*, *Punch*, *de Profundis*, in which *um* and *un* are sounded like *on*.

NASAL DIPHTHONGAL SOUNDS.

There are eight nasal diphthongal combinations, and they are thus divided and pronounced, viz. :—

ian	divided into	i-an	and pronounced	eahn.
ien	„	i-en	„	eanh.
ion	„	i-on	„	conh.
uan	„	u-an	„	uahn.
uin	„	u-in	„	uanh.
ouan	„	ou-an	„	ooahn.
oin	„	ou-in	„	oo-anh.
ouin	„	ou-in	„	oo-anh.

LIQUIDS.

L and **LL**.—Whenever *l* and *ll* are preceded by *ai*, *ei*, *oui*, and sometimes by *i* only, they receive a sound very different from that which they generally have. In the former case they become *liquid*, and are so called from their peculiar sound, which is the same as is given to the letters *lli* in the correct pronunciation of the English words *collier*, *billiard*, *brilliant*, and *William*.

In French words containing liquid sounds, the following general rules should be observed, namely :—

Rule 1.—Pronounce the letter *a* before *il* and *ill* as *a* in the English word *ah* : *baillcur*, *lessor*.

Rule 2.—Pronounce the letter *e* before *il* and *ill* as *ay* in the English word *day*, namely :—

Parcil Paraylh *Similar*. | Boutelle Boutaylh *Bottle*.

GN.—This liquid is the sound of the letters *gn* in the English words *bagnio*, *mignonette*, and *vignette*.

Dignité Dee-gnee-teh *Dignity*.

The exceptions to this method of pronouncing the letters *gn* occur only in words in which they belong to different syllables, as in : *Stagnation*, *Stag-nah-seonh*, *Stagnation*, etc., and in those in which *gn* is initial : *gnome*, *g-nom*, etc.

SECTION II.

1. In French the article [§ 14 (3)] has, in the singular, a distinct form for each gender. Ex. :

Le fils, *the son*. La fille, *the daughter, the girl*.
Le frère, *the brother*. La sœur, *the sister*.

2. Before a word commencing with a vowel or an *h* mute, the final *e* or *a* of the article is cut off and replaced by an apostrophe, leaving the article the same for both genders [§ 14 (7)]. Ex. :

L'aïeul, *the grandfather*. L'aïeule, *the grandmother*.
L'hôte, *the landlord*. L'hôtesse, *the landlady*.

3. There are in French only two genders, the masculine

and the feminine [§ 4]. Every noun, whether denoting an animate or inanimate object, belongs to one of these two genders.

MASC.	L'homme, <i>the man.</i>	Le lion, <i>the lion.</i>
	Le livre, <i>the book.</i>	Le papier, <i>the paper.</i>
	L'arbre, <i>the tree.</i>	Le bois, <i>the wood.</i>
FEM.	La femme, <i>the woman.</i>	La lionne, <i>the lioness.</i>
	La table, <i>the table.</i>	La feuille, <i>the leaf.</i>
	La plume, <i>the pen.</i>	La porte, <i>the door.</i>

4. AVOIR, TO HAVE, IN THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE

<i>Affirmatively.</i>		<i>Interrogatively.</i>	
J'ai,	<i>I have.</i>	Ai-je ?	<i>Have I ?</i>
Tu as [§ 33(1)(2)]	<i>Thou hast.</i>	As-tu ?	<i>Hast thou ?</i>
Il a,	<i>He has.</i>	A-t-il ?	<i>Has he ?</i>
Elle a,	<i>She has.</i>	A-t-elle ?	<i>Has she ?</i>
Nous avons,	<i>We have.</i>	Avons-nous ?	<i>Have we ?</i>
Vous avez,	<i>You have.</i>	Avez-vous ?	<i>Have you ?</i>
Ils ont, m.	<i>They have.</i>	Ont-ils ? m.	<i>Have they ?</i>
Elles ont, f.	<i>They have.</i>	Ont-elles ? f.	<i>Have they ?</i>

5. The *e* of the pronoun *je* is elided when that pronoun comes before a vowel or an *h* mute [§ 143].

6. In interrogative sentences, when the third person singular of a verb ends with a vowel, and is immediately followed by one of the pronouns *il*, *elle*, or *on*, a *t*, called *euphonic*, must be placed between the verb and the pronoun, and joined by two hyphens, as:—

A-t-il ? *Has he ?* A-t-elle ? *Has she ?* Danse-t-on ? *Are they dancing ?*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Le père a la viande, vous avez le café, et j'ai l'eau.	<i>The father has the meat, you have the coffee, and I have the water.</i>
L'homme a le pain, l'enfant a le sel, et nous avons le poivre.	<i>The man has the bread, the child has the salt, and we have the pepper.</i>

EXERCISE 1.

Avoine, f. <i>oats.</i>	Madame, <i>Madam.</i>	Qui, <i>who.</i>
Blé, m. <i>wheat.</i>	Mademoiselle, <i>Miss.</i>	Sel, m. <i>salt.</i>
Boucher, m. <i>butcher.</i>	Meunier, m. <i>mill.</i>	Seulement, <i>only.</i>
Boulangier, m. <i>baker.</i>	Monsieur, <i>Mr., Sir.</i>	Table, f. <i>table.</i>
Cheval, m. <i>horse.</i>	Non, <i>no.</i>	Thé, m. <i>tea.</i>
Et, <i>and.</i>	Oui, <i>yes.</i>	Viande, f. <i>meat.</i>
Farine, f. <i>flour.</i>	Pain, m. <i>bread.</i>	Vin, m. <i>wine.</i>
Frère, m. <i>brother.</i>	Plume, f. <i>pen.</i>	Vinaigre, m. <i>vinegar.</i>
Livre, m. <i>book.</i>	Fille, <i>daughter, girl.</i>	

TO BE TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH.

1. Qui a le pain ? 2. Le boulanger a le pain. 3. A-t-il la farine ? 4. Oui, Monsieur, il a la farine. 5. Avons-nous la viande ? 6. Oui, Monsieur, vous avez la viande et le pain. 7. Le meunier a la farine. 8. Le boulanger a la farine et le blé. 9. Avons-nous le livre et la plume ? 10. Oui, Mademoiselle, vous avez le livre et la plume. 11. Le boucher a la viande. 12. Le meunier a la viande et j'ai le café. 13. Avez-

vous l'eau et le sel? 14. Oui, Monsieur, nous avons l'eau, le sel, et l'avoine. 15. Avons-nous le thé? 16. Non, Monsieur, la fille a le thé, le vinaigre, et le sel. 17. Ai-je le vin? 18. Non, Madame, vous avez seulement le vinaigre et la viande. 19. Avez-vous la table? 20. Oui, Madame, j'ai la table.

EXERCISE 2.

TO BE TRANSLATED INTO FRENCH.

1. Have you the wheat? 2. Yes, Sir, I have the wheat. 3. Who has the meat? 4. The butcher has the meat and the salt. 5. Has he the oats? 6. No, Madam, the horse has the oats. 7. Have we the wheat? 8. You have the wheat and the flour. 9. Who has the salt? 10. I have the salt and the meat. 11. Have we the vinegar, the tea, and the coffee? 12. No, Sir, the brother has the vinegar. 13. Who has the horse? 14. The baker has the horse. 15. Have we the book and the pen? 16. No, Miss, the girl has the pen, and the miller has the book. 17. Have you the table, Sir? 18. No, Sir, I have only the book. 19. Who has the table? 20. We have the table, the pen, and the book.

SECTION III.

1. The article *le*, with the preposition *de* preceding, must be contracted into *du*, when it comes before a word in the *masculine* singular, commencing with a consonant or an *h* aspirated [§ 14 (8) (9)].

Du frère, *of the brother.*

Du château, *of the castle.*

Du héros, *of the hero.*

Du chemin, *of the way.*

2. Before *feminine* words, and before *masculine* words commencing with a vowel, or an *h* mute, the article is not blended with the preposition.

De la dame, *f. of the lady.*

De l'amie, *f. of the female friend.*

De l'argent, *m. of the money.*

De l'honneur, *m. of the honour.*

3. In French, the name of the possessor follows the name of the object possessed [§ 76 (10)].

La maison du médecin.

The physician's house.

L'arbre du jardin.

The tree of the garden.

La lettre de la sœur.

The sister's letter.

4. The name of the material of which an object is composed follows always the name of the object; the two words being connected by the preposition *de* [§ 76 (11)].

L'habit de drap.

The cloth coat.

La robe de soie.

The silk dress.

La montre d'or.

The gold watch.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Le tailleur a l'habit de drap du médecin.

The tailor has the physician's cloth coat.

Vous avez la lettre de la sœur du boulanger.

You have the baker's sister's letter (the letter of the sister of the baker).

A-t-il le livre de la dame?

Has he the lady's book?

EXERCISE 3.

Argent, m., <i>silver money.</i>	Couteau, m. <i>knife.</i>	Or, m. <i>gold.</i>
Bas, m. <i>stocking.</i>	Cuir, m. <i>leather.</i>	Portecrayon, m. <i>pencil-case.</i>
Bois, m. <i>wood.</i>	Dame, f. <i>lady.</i>	Robe, f. <i>dress.</i>
Chapeau, m. <i>hat.</i>	Drap, m. <i>cloth.</i>	Satin, m. <i>satin.</i>
Charpentier, m. <i>carpenter.</i>	Foin, m. <i>hay.</i>	Sœur, f. <i>sister.</i>
Cordonnier, m. <i>shoemaker.</i>	Habit, m. <i>coat.</i>	Soie, f. <i>silk.</i>
Coton, m. <i>cotton.</i>	Laine, f. <i>wool.</i>	Soulier, m. <i>shoe.</i>
	Médecin, m. <i>physician.</i>	Table, f. <i>table.</i>
	Montre, f. <i>watch.</i>	Tailleur, m. <i>tailor.</i>

TO BE TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH.

1. Avez-vous la montre d'or? 2. Oui, Madame, j'ai la montre d'or et le chapeau de soie. 3. Monsieur, avez-vous le livre du tailleur? 4. Non, Monsieur, j'ai le livre du médecin. 5. Ont-ils le pain du boulanger? 6. Ils ont le pain du boulanger et la farine du manier. 7. Avez-vous le portecrayon d'argent? 8. Oui, Monsieur, nous avons le portecrayon d'argent. 9. Avons-nous l'avoine du cheval? 10. Vous avez l'avoine et le foin du cheval. 11. Qui a l'habit de drap du charpentier? 12. Le cordonnier a le chapeau de soie du tailleur. 13. Le tailleur a le soulier de cuir du cordonnier. 14. Avez-vous la table de bois? 15. Oui, Monsieur, j'ai la table de bois du charpentier. 16. Ont-ils le couteau d'argent? 17. Ils ont le couteau d'argent. 18. Le frère du médecin a la montre d'argent. 19. La sœur du cordonnier a la robe de soie. 20. A-t-elle le soulier de cuir? 21. Non, Madame, elle a le soulier de satin. 22. Avons-nous le bas de laine? 23. Non, Monsieur, vous avez le bas de soie du tailleur. 24. Qui a le bas de coton? 25. Le médecin a le bas de coton. 26. La dame a le soulier de satin de la sœur du boulanger.

EXERCISE 4.

TO BE TRANSLATED INTO FRENCH.

1. Have you the tailor's book? 2. No, Sir, I have the physician's watch. 3. Who has the gold watch? 4. The lady has the gold watch and the silver pencil-case. 5. Have you the tailor's shoe? 6. I have the tailor's cloth shoe. 7. Have we the wooden table? 8. Yes, Sir, you have the wooden table. 9. Have they the silver knife? 10. They have the silver knife. 11. The lady has the silver knife and the gold pencil-case. 12. Has she the satin dress? 13. The physician's sister has the satin dress. 14. Who has the wood? 15. The carpenter's brother has the wood. 16. Have you the woollen stocking? 17. No, Sir, I have the cotton stocking. 18. Who has the baker's bread? 19. We have the baker's bread and the miller's flour. 20. Have we the horse's hay? 21. You have the horse's oats. 22. Have we the tailor's silk hat? 23. Yes, Sir, you have the tailor's silk hat and the shoemaker's leather

shoe. 24. Have you the cloth shoe of the physician's sister?
25. No, Madam, I have the lady's silk dress.

SECTION IV.

1. The article, contracted with the proposition *de*, according to Rules 1 and 2 of Section III., is placed in French before words used in a partitive sense. Such words may generally be known in English when *some* or *any* is or may be prefixed to them [§ 14 (11), § 78 (1)].

Du pain.	<i>Bread, or some bread.</i>
De la viande.	<i>Meat, or some meat.</i>
De l'argent.	<i>Money, or some money.</i>

2. The French numeral adjective *un*, m., *une*, f., answers to the English indefinite article, *a* or *an* [§ 14 (4) (10)].

Un homme.	<i>A man.</i>
Une femme.	<i>A woman.</i>

3. The *e* of the proposition *de* is elided before *un* and *une* [§ 143], and replaced by an apostrophe.

D'un livre, m.	<i>Of or from a book.</i>
D'une maison, f.	<i>Of or from a house.</i>

4. When the nominative or subject of an interrogative sentence is not *ce*, *on*, or a personal pronoun, it should be placed before the verb; and immediately after the verb in simple tenses, and after the auxiliary in compound tenses, a pronoun must be placed agreeing with the nominative in gender, number and person [§ 76 (4) (5)].

Le médecin a-t-il de l'argent?	<i>Has the physician money?</i>
Le boucher a-t-il de la viande?	<i>Has the butcher meat?</i>
Mes frères sont arrivés; les vôtres sont-ils partis?	<i>My brothers have arrived; are yours gone?</i>
Cela est-il vrai?	<i>Is that true?</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous du pain?	<i>Have you bread?</i>
Vous avez du pain, du beurre, et du fromage.	<i>You have bread, butter, and cheese.</i>
Votre frère a-t-il une livre de beurre?	<i>Has your brother a pound of butter?</i>
Cela appartient-il à votre frère?	<i>Does that belong to your brother?</i>
La leur est-elle ici?	<i>Is theirs here?</i>
La sœur du médecin a-t-elle du papier et de l'encre?	<i>Has the physician's sister paper and ink?</i>

5. It will be seen, by some of the above examples, that the article must be repeated before every noun used in a partitive sense.

EXERCISE 5.

Ararjou, m. <i>mahogany.</i>	Beurre, m. <i>butter.</i>	Café, m. <i>coffee.</i>
Acier, m. <i>steel.</i>	Bière, f. <i>beer.</i>	Cuiller, f. <i>spoon.</i>
Aujourd'hui, <i>to-day.</i>	Bœuf, m. <i>beef.</i>	Dé, m. <i>thimble.</i>

Encre, f. <i>ink</i> .	Libraire, m. <i>bookseller</i> .	Plume, f. <i>pen</i> .
Épicier, m. <i>grocer</i> .	Livre, m. <i>book</i> .	Sucre, m. <i>sugar</i> .
Fils, m. <i>son</i> .	Livre, f. <i>pound</i> .	Vin, m. <i>wine</i> .
Fourchette, f. <i>fork</i> .	Morceau, m. <i>piece</i> .	Votre, <i>your</i> .
Fromage, m. <i>cheese</i> .	Papier, m. <i>paper</i> .	Thé, m. <i>tea</i> .
Gant, m. <i>glove</i> .		

1. Avez-vous de la viande? 2. Oui, Monsieur, j'ai une livre de viande. 3. Votre fils a-t-il un morceau de pain? 4. Oui, Madame, il a un morceau de pain. 5. Le libraire a-t-il un livre? 6. Il a de l'encre et du papier. 7. Votre sœur a-t-elle une montre d'or? 8. Elle a une montre d'or et un dé d'argent. 9. Le boulanger a-t-il du vin ou de la bière? 10. Le boulanger a du thé et du café. 11. Votre frère a-t-il du fromage? 12. Il a du fromage et du beurre. 13. La dame a-t-elle une cuiller d'argent? 14. La dame a une cuiller et une fourchette d'argent. 15. Le boucher a-t-il de la viande aujourd'hui? 16. Oui, Monsieur, il a un morceau de bœuf. 17. Le charpentier a-t-il une table? 18. Oui, Monsieur, il a une table d'acajou. 19. Avez-vous le livre du médecin? 20. Non, Madame, mais j'ai le livre de votre sœur. 21. Qui a du café et du sucre? 22. L'épicier a du café et du sucre. 23. La sœur du libraire a-t-elle un gant? 24. Non, Monsieur, mais elle a un livre. 25. A-t-elle une plume d'acier? 26. Non, Monsieur, elle a une plume d'or. 27. Vous avez le porte-crayon du médecin.

EXERCISE 6.

1. Have you any tea? 2. Yes, Madam, I have a pound of tea. 3. Who has bread? 4. The baker has bread, butter, and cheese. 5. Has the tailor cloth? 6. The tailor has a piece of cloth. 7. Has the physician gold? 8. Yes, Sir, the physician has gold and silver. 9. Has the lady a silver watch? 10. Yes, Miss, the lady has a silver watch and a gold pen. 11. Has your sister silk? 12. Yes, Sir, she has silk and cotton. 13. Have you a knife? 14. Yes, Sir, I have a steel knife and a silver fork. 15. Have you meat to-day, Sir? 16. Yes, Sir, I have a piece of beef. 17. Has your carpenter a mahogany table? 18. Yes, Sir, he has a mahogany table. 19. Has your sister a glove? 20. Yes, Sir, my sister has a silk glove. 21. Has the bookseller's son a gold pencil-case? 22. Yes, Sir, he has a gold pencil-case and a steel pen. 23. Who has your sister's watch? 24. Your brother has the gold watch and the silk hat. 25. We have gold, silver and steel (see Rule 5).

SECTION V.

1 To render a sentence negative, **ne** is placed before the verb, and **pas** after it.

Je n'ai pas le cheval,
Vous n'avez pas la maison

I have not the horse.
You have not the house.

2. When the verb is in a compound tense [§ 46 (7)] the first negative **ne** is placed before the auxiliary, and the second between the auxiliary and the participle.

Je n'ai pas eu le cheval. *I have not had the horse.*
 Vous n'avez pas eu la maison. *You have not had the house.*

3. It will be seen in the above examples that the **e** of **ne** is elided, when the verb begins with a vowel [§ 143].

4. When the words **ni**, *neither*; **rien**, *nothing*; **jamais**, *never*; **personne**, *no one, nobody*; occur, the word **ne** only is used, and those words take the place of **pas** [§ 42 (6)].

Je n'ai ni le livre ni le papier. *I have neither the book nor the paper.*
 Avez-vous quelque chose? *Have you anything?*
 Nous n'avons rien. *We have nothing, or not anything.*
 Personne n'a le livre. *No one has the book.*
 Vous n'avez jamais le couteau. *You never have the knife.*

5. A noun used in a partitive sense (Sect. 4, Rule 1), and being the object of a verb, conjugated negatively, should not be preceded by the article, but by the preposition **de** only [§ 78 (7)].

Nous n'avons pas d'argent. *We have no money.*
 Vous n'avez pas de viande. *You have no meat.*

6. **Quelqu'un** *some one, any one*; [§ 42 (9)] **quelque chose**, *something, anything*; should only be used in an affirmative or interrogative sentence, or in a sentence which is negative and interrogative at the same time.

Avons-nous vu quelqu'un? *Have we seen any one?*
 Avez-vous quelque chose? *Have you anything?*
 N'avons-nous pas quelque chose? *Have we not something?*

7. In a negative sentence, **ne—personne** signifies *nobody, not anybody*; and **ne—rien** *nothing, not anything*.

Je n'ai entendu personne. *I have heard no one, not anyone.*
 Vous n'avez rien. *You have nothing, or not anything.*

8. AVOIR, TO HAVE, IN THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE.

Negatively.

Negatively and Interrogatively.

Je n'ai pas,	<i>I have not.</i>	N'ai-je pas?	<i>Have I not?</i>
Tu n'as pas,	<i>Thou hast not.</i>	N'as-tu pas?	<i>Hast thou not?</i>
Il n'a pas,	<i>He has not.</i>	N'a-t-il pas?	<i>Has he not?</i>
Elle n'a pas,	<i>She has not.</i>	N'a-t-elle pas?	<i>Has she not?</i>
Nous n'avons pas,	<i>We have not.</i>	N'avons-nous pas?	<i>Have we not?</i>
Vous n'avez pas,	<i>You have not.</i>	N'avez-vous pas?	<i>Have you not?</i>
Ils n'ont pas,	<i>They m. have not.</i>	N'ont-ils pas?	<i>Have they m. not?</i>
Elles n'ont pas,	<i>They f. have not.</i>	N'ont-elles pas?	<i>Have they f. not?</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Le tailleur a-t-il le bouton?	<i>Has the tailor the button?</i>
Le tailleur n'a pas le bouton.	<i>The tailor has not the button.</i>
Il n'a pas eu le drap.	<i>He has not had the cloth.</i>
Il n'a eu ni le drap ni le cuir.	<i>He has had neither the cloth nor the leather.</i>

Ai-je de la viande ?	<i>Have I meat ?</i>
Vous n'avez pas de viande (R. 5).	<i>You have no meat.</i>
Avons-nous quelque chose ?	<i>Have we anything ?</i>
Nous n'avons rien.	<i>We have nothing, or not anything.</i>
Nous n'avons jamais de café (R. 5).	<i>We never have coffee.</i>

EXERCISE 7.

Ami, m. <i>friend.</i>	Deux, <i>two.</i>	Ni, conj. <i>neither, nor.</i>
Angleterre, f. <i>Eng-land.</i>	Drap, m. <i>cloth.</i>	Personne, m. <i>nobody.</i>
Aussi, <i>also.</i>	Du tout, adv. <i>at all.</i>	Quelque chose, m. <i>some-thing, anything.</i>
Autre, <i>other.</i>	France, f. <i>France.</i>	Quelqu'un, m. <i>some one, anyone.</i>
Chapelier, m. <i>hatter.</i>	Histoire, f. <i>history.</i>	Soie, f. <i>silk.</i>
Chien, m. <i>dog.</i>	Libraire, m. <i>bookseller.</i>	Velours, m. <i>velvet.</i>
Coton, m. <i>cotton.</i>	Marchand, m. <i>mer-chant.</i>	Voisin, m. <i>neighbour.</i>
Cousin, m. <i>cousin.</i>	Mon, m. <i>my.</i>	

1. Le chapelier a-t-il de la soie ? 2. Le chapelier n'a pas de soie, mais il a du velours. 3. A-t-il du velours de coton ? 4. Non, Monsieur, il n'a pas de velours de coton, il a du velours de soie. 5. Avez-vous de la viande ? 6. Oui, Monsieur, j'ai de la viande. 7. Le médecin n'a pas d'argent. 8. Qui a de l'argent ? 9. Le marchand n'a pas d'argent, mais il a du drap, du velours, et de la soie. 10. Avez-vous quelque chose ? 11. Non, Monsieur, je n'ai rien du tout. 12. Le tailleur a-t-il deux boutons d'argent ? 13. Non, Monsieur, il a deux boutons de soie. 14. Qui a votre chien ? 15. Le voisin a le chien de mon cousin. 16. N'a-t-il pas aussi votre cheval ? 17. Non, Monsieur, il a le cheval de votre ami. 18. Avez-vous l'histoire de France ? 19. Non, Madame, je n'ai ni l'histoire de France ni l'histoire d'Angleterre. 20. N'avez-vous ni le livre ni le papier ? 21. Non, Mademoiselle, je n'ai ni l'un ni l'autre. 22. Qui a du papier ? 23. Le libraire n'a pas de papier. 24. Quelqu'un a-t-il un livre ? 25. Personne n'a de livre.

EXERCISE 8.

1. Has the baker velvet ? 2. No, Sir, the baker has no velvet. 3. Who has silk velvet ? 4. The hatter has silk velvet and a silk hat. 5. Have you two silver buttons ? 6. No, Sir, I have a cloth coat, a silk hat, and a velvet shoe. 7. Has your neighbour a wooden table ? 8. Yes, Sir, he has a mahogany table. 9. Has your cousin a history of England ? 10. No, Sir, he has a history of France. 11. I have neither the cloth nor the velvet. 12. We have neither the meat nor the coffee. 13. Has any one a book ? 14. Your cousin has a book, a velvet coat, and a silk hat. 15. Have you the physician's book ? 16. Yes, Madam, I have the physician's book and the lady's gold pen. 17. Has the merchant cloth ? 18. The merchant has no cloth, but he has money. 19. Who has your neighbour's dog ? 20. Nobody has my neighbour's dog. 21. Has any one my book ? 22. No one has your book. 23. Has your cousin's brother anything ? 24. No, Sir, he has nothing. 25. Who has your friend's book ? 26. Your brother

has my cousin's book. 27. Has he the tailor's coat? 28. He has not the tailor's coat. 29. We have neither the cloth nor the silk.

SECTION VI.

1. The verb **avoir** is used idiomatically in French, with the words **quelque chose**, **chaud**, **froid**, **faim**, **honte**, **peur**, **raison**, **tort**, **soif**, **sommeil**.

J'ai quelque chose,	<i>Something is the matter with me.</i>
Il a chaud,	<i>He is warm.</i>
Elle a faim,	<i>She is hungry.</i>
Nous avons honte,	<i>We are ashamed.</i>
Vous avez peur,	<i>You are afraid.</i>
Ils ont tort,	<i>They are wrong.</i>
Avez-vous raison?	<i>Are you right?</i>
J'ai sommeil,	<i>I am sleepy.</i>

2. A noun, whether taken in a general or in a particular sense, is, in French, commonly preceded by the article **le** in its different forms [§ 77 (1) (2)].

Le pain est nécessaire.	<i>Bread is necessary.</i>
Il a le pain.	<i>He has the bread.</i>

3. A noun, preceded by the article **le**, retains that article after **ni**, *nor*, *neither*; but a noun taken in a partitive sense (Sect. 4, 1), takes after **ni** neither article nor preposition.

Je n'ai vu ni l'arbre ni le jardin, *I have seen neither the tree nor the garden.*

Nous n'avons vu ni arbre ni jardin, *We have seen neither tree nor garden.*

4. A noun, taken in a partitive sense, and preceded by an adjective, takes merely the preposition **de** [§ 78 (3)].

5. The following adjectives are generally placed before the noun:—

Beau, handsome.	Cher, dear.	Jeune, young.	Meilleur, better.
Bon, good.	Grand, great, large.	Joli, pretty.	Petit, small.
Brave, worthy.	Gros, large.	Mauvais, bad.	Vieux, old.
	Vilain, ugly.		

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous quelque chose?	<i>Is anything the matter with you?</i>
Je n'ai rien (<i>literally, I have nothing</i>).	<i>Nothing is the matter with me.</i>
Votre frère a-t-il chaud?	<i>Is your brother warm?</i>
Il n'a ni froid ni chaud.	<i>He is neither cold nor warm.</i>
Votre sœur a-t-elle faim ou soif?	<i>Is your sister hungry or thirsty?</i>
Elle n'a pas faim, mais elle a honte.	<i>She is not hungry, but ashamed.</i>
Votre ami a-t-il sommeil?	<i>Is your friend sleepy?</i>
Mon ami n'a ni sommeil ni peur.	<i>My friend is neither sleepy nor afraid.</i>
Avez-vous raison ou tort?	<i>Are you right or wrong?</i>
Avez-vous du lait ou du vin?	<i>Have you milk or wine?</i>
Je n'ai ni lait ni vin [R. 3].	<i>I have neither milk nor wine.</i>
Avez-vous le lait ou le vin?	<i>Have you the milk or the wine?</i>
Je n'ai ni le lait ni le vin [R. 3].	<i>I have neither the milk nor the wine.</i>
Avez-vous de beau drap et de bon café?	<i>Have you handsome cloth and good coffee?</i>

EXERCISE 9.

Au contraire, <i>on the contrary.</i>	Froid, <i>m. cold.</i>	Peur, <i>f. fear, afraid.</i>
Bouton, <i>m. button.</i>	Gros, <i>large.</i>	Quel, <i>what, which.</i>
Capitaine, <i>captain.</i>	Honte, <i>f. shame,</i>	Raison, <i>f. reason,</i>
Cousin, <i>m. cousin.</i>	<i>ashamed.</i>	<i>right.</i>
	Mais, <i>but.</i>	Rien, <i>nothing.</i>
Chaud, <i>m. heat, warm.</i>	Marteau, <i>m. hammer.</i>	Tort, <i>m. wrong.</i>
Faim, <i>f. hunger, hungry.</i>	Menuisier, <i>m. joiner.</i>	Sel, <i>m. salt.</i>
Ferblantier, <i>m. tinman.</i>	Poivre, <i>m. pepper.</i>	Sommeil, <i>m. sleep,</i>
Fusil, <i>m. gun.</i>	Petit, <i>small, little.</i>	<i>sleepy.</i>

1. Qui a sommeil? 2. Mon frère a faim, mais il n'a pas sommeil. 3. Avez-vous raison ou tort? 4. J'ai raison, je n'ai pas tort. 5. Avez-vous le bon fusil de mon frère? 6. Je n'ai pas le fusil. 7. Avez-vous froid aujourd'hui? 8. Je n'ai pas froid, au contraire, j'ai chaud. 9. Avez-vous de bon pain? 10. Je n'ai pas de pain. 11. N'avez-vous pas faim? 12. Je n'ai ni faim ni soif. 13. Avez-vous honte? 14. Je n'ai ni honte ni peur. 15. Avons-nous du poivre ou du sel? 16. Vous n'avez ni poivre ni sel. 17. Quel livre avez-vous? 18. J'ai le livre de mon cousin. 19. Avez-vous le marteau de fer ou le marteau d'argent? 20. Je n'ai ni le marteau de fer ni le marteau d'argent, j'ai le marteau de bois du ferblantier. 21. Avez-vous quelque chose? 22. Je n'ai rien. 23. Avez-vous le gros livre du libraire? 24. Je n'ai ni le gros livre du libraire, ni le petit livre du menuisier, j'ai le bon livre du capitaine.

EXERCISE 10.

1. Are you sleepy, Sir? 2. No, Sir, I am not sleepy, but I am hungry. 3. Have you pepper or salt? 4. I have neither pepper nor salt; I have cheese. 5. Is your brother thirsty or hungry? 6. My brother is neither thirsty nor hungry. 7. Is your sister right or wrong? 8. She is not wrong, she is right. 9. Is the good joiner afraid? 10. He is not afraid, but ashamed. 11. Have you milk or cheese? 12. I have neither milk nor cheese; I have butter. 13. Have you the fine cloth or the good tea? 14. I have neither the fine cloth nor the good tea. 15. Is anything the matter with you, my good friend? 16. Nothing is the matter with me, my good Sir. 17. Have you no bread? 18. Yes, Madam, I have good bread, good butter, and good cheese. 19. Is the carpenter sleepy? 20. The carpenter is not sleepy, but the tinman is hungry. 21. Have you the tinman's wooden hammer? 22. I have not his wooden hammer. 23. Which hammer have you? 24. I have the steel hammer. 25. Have you a good cloth coat? 26. No, Sir, but I have a silk dress. 27. Has the tailor the pretty gold button? 28. Yes, Sir, he has the pretty gold button. 29. Who has my brother's gold watch? 30. Some one has the gold watch.

SECTION VII.

1. The pronouns *le, him, it; la, her, it*, are, in French, placed

* To be translated by *si*, which is used instead of *oui*, when an affirmative answer is given to a negative question or statement.

before the verb.* These pronouns assume the gender of the nouns which they represent.

Voyez-vous le couteau ?	<i>Do you see the knife ?</i>
Je le vois.	<i>I see it.</i>
Voyons-nous la fourchette ?	<i>Do we see the fork ?</i>
Nous la voyons.	<i>We see it.</i>

2. The vowel of the pronouns **le** and **la** is elided before a verb commencing with a vowel or an *h* mute [§ 143].

Avez-vous le bâton ?	<i>Have you the stick ?</i>
Je l'ai.	<i>I have it.</i>
Avous-nous la canne ?	<i>Have we the cane ?</i>
Nous l'avons.	<i>We have it.</i>

3. The possessive adjectives **mon**, *m.* **ma**, *f.* **my** ; **ton**, *m.* **ta**, *f.* **thy** ; **son**, *m.* **sa**, *f.* **his**, *her*, agree in gender with the object possessed, that is with the noun following them [§ 22 (1) (2)].

Mon pupitre, <i>m.</i>	<i>My desk.</i>
Avez-vous ma lettre ? <i>f.</i>	<i>Have you my letter ?</i>
Il a son fusil, <i>m.</i>	<i>He has his gun.</i>
Il a sa cravate, <i>f.</i>	<i>He has his cravat.</i>

4. Before a feminine noun in the singular, commencing with a vowel or an *h* mute, the masculine form, **mon**, **ton**, **son** is used [§ 22 (3)].

J'ai mon épée, <i>f.</i>	<i>I have my sword.</i>
C'est son habitude, <i>f.</i>	<i>It is his or her habit.</i>
A-t-il ton amitié ?	<i>Has he thy friendship ?</i>

5. The adjectives **notre**, *our* ; **votre**, *your* ; **leur**, *their*, are used without variation before a noun of either gender, in the singular [§ 22 (1)].

Notre argent, <i>m.</i>	<i>Our money.</i>
Votre canne, <i>f.</i>	<i>Your cane.</i>
Leur terre, <i>f.</i>	<i>Their land.</i>

6. The possessive pronouns **le mien**, *m.* **la mienne**, *f.* **mine** ; **le tien**, *m.* **la tienne**, *f.* **thine** ; **le sien**, *m.* **la sienne**, *f.* **his** or **hers**, can never be prefixed to nouns. The article preceding these pronouns, and forming an inseparable part of them, takes the gender of the object possessed : **mien**, **tien**, **sien**, vary for the feminine : **nôtre** and **vôtre** used as pronouns have the circumflex accent. **Leur** preceded by **le** or **la** is also used as possessive pronoun.

J'ai votre livre et le mien.	<i>I have your book and mine.</i>
Elle a sa robe et la mienne.	<i>She has her dress and mine.</i>
Vous avez votre plume et la nôtre.	<i>You have your pen and ours.</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Votre ami a-t-il le mouton ?	<i>Has your friend the sheep or mutton ?</i>
Il l'a, elle l'a.	<i>He has it, she has it.</i>
Il ne l'a pas.	<i>He has it not.</i>
N'avez-vous pas l'encrier d'argent ?	<i>Have you not the silver inkstand ?</i>
Nous ne l'avons pas.	<i>We have it not.</i>

* Except in the second person singular, and in the first and second persons plural of the imperative, when used affirmatively.

Avez-vous votre fusil ou le mien?	<i>Have you your gun or mine?</i>
Je n'ai ni le vôtre ni le mien.	<i>I have neither yours nor mine.</i>
Son épouse a-t-elle sa robe ou la vôtre?	<i>Has his wife her dress or yours?</i>
Elle n'a ni la sienne ni la vôtre.	<i>She has neither hers nor yours.</i>
Ne l'avez-vous pas?	<i>Have you it not?</i>
Votre frère ne l'a-t-il pas?	<i>Has not your brother it?</i>

EXERCISE 11.

Assiette, f. <i>plate.</i>	Crayon, m. <i>pencil.</i>	Parent, m. <i>relation.</i>
Biscuit, m. <i>biscuit.</i>	Cuisinier, m. <i>cook.</i>	Plat, m. <i>dish.</i>
Bœuf, m. <i>beef.</i>	Fourchette, f. <i>fork.</i>	Poisson, m. <i>fish.</i>
Boucher, m. <i>butcher.</i>	Matelot, m. <i>sailor.</i>	Porcelaine, f. <i>china.</i>
Commode, f. <i>chest of drawers.</i>	Mouton, m. <i>mutton, sheep.</i>	Sofa, m. <i>sofa.</i>
Conteau, m. <i>knife.</i>	Miroir, m. <i>looking-glass.</i>	Tout, <i>all.</i>
		Veau, m. <i>veal, calf.</i>

1. Avez-vous la fourchette d'argent? 2. Oui, Monsieur, je l'ai. 3. Le cuisinier a-t-il le bœuf? 4. Non, Monsieur, il ne l'a pas. 5. Quel mouton avez-vous? 6. J'ai le bon mouton et le bon veau du boucher. 7. Votre parent a-t-il la commode? 8. Non, Monsieur, il ne l'a pas. 9. A-t-il mon poisson? 10. Qui a tout le biscuit du boulanger? 11. Le matelot n'a ni son pain ni son biscuit. 12. A-t-il son couteau et sa fourchette? 13. Il n'a ni son couteau ni sa fourchette, il a son assiette [R. 4]. 14. Quel plat a-t-il? 15. Il a le joli plat de porcelaine. 16. Avez-vous le mien ou le sien? 17. Je n'ai ni le vôtre ni le sien, j'ai le nôtre. 18. Avez-vous peur, Monsieur? 19. Non, Madame, je n'ai pas peur, j'ai faim. 20. Quelqu'un a-t-il ma montre d'or? 21. Non, Monsieur, personne ne l'a. 22. Qu'avez-vous, Monsieur? 23. Je n'ai rien. 24. Avez-vous le sofa d'acajou de mon menuisier? 25. Non, Monsieur, je ne l'ai pas. 26. J'ai son joli miroir et son bon crayon.

EXERCISE 12.

1. Have you the silver pencil case? 2. No, Sir, I have it not. 3. Have you my brother's plate? 4. Yes, Madam, I have it. 5. Has the butcher the good biscuit? 6. He has it not; he has the good beef, the good mutton, and the good veal. 7. Have you my knife and my fork? * 8. I have neither your knife nor your fork. 9. Who has the good sailor's biscuit? 10. The baker has it, and I have mine. 11. Have you mine also? 12. I have neither yours nor his. 13. Are you hungry? 14. I am not hungry, I am thirsty and sleepy. 15. Are you not ashamed? 16. No, Sir, I am not ashamed, but I am cold. 17. Is your relation right or wrong? 18. My relation is right, Sir. 19. Has he my china dish or my silver knife? 20. He has neither your china dish nor your silver knife; he has your china plate. 21. Has any one my silver pencil case? 22. No one has it, but your brother has your cloth coat. 23. Have you mine or his? 24. I have yours. 25. Has the baker the mahogany chest of drawers? 26. He has it not, he has the

* The possessive adjective must, in French, be repeated before every noun [§ 21 (4)].

mahogany sofa. 27. Has the tinman my plate? 28. He has not your plate, he has mine. 29. Which sofa have you? 30. I have my mother's sofa. 31. I have neither his nor yours, I have mine.

SECTION VIII.

1. The demonstrative adjective *ce*, m. *cette*, f. *this* or *that*, is always placed before a noun, or before an adjective followed by its noun; it agrees in gender with this noun [§ 21 (1)].

Avez-vous ce parapluie? m. *Have you this (or that) umbrella?*
N'avez-vous pas cette bouteille? f. *Have you not this (or that) bottle?*

2. Before a word masculine singular, commencing with a vowel, or an *h* mute, *cet* takes the place of *ce* [§ 21 (1)].

N'avez-vous pas cet argent? *Have you not this (or that) money?*
Vous avez eu cet honneur. *You have had this (or that) honour.*

3. When it is deemed necessary to express in French the difference existing in English between the words *this* and *that*, the adverbs *ci* and *là* may be placed after the nouns [§ 21 (2)].

Je n'ai pas ce parasol-ci, j'ai ce *I have not this parasol, I have that*
parasol-là. *parasol.*

4. The demonstrative pronouns, *celui*, m. *celle*, f. *this* or *that*, are used to represent nouns, but are never joined with them like adjectives [§ 37, § 38 (1)].

J'ai mon parapluie et celui de *I have my umbrella and your*
votre frère. *brother's, i.e., that of your*
brother.

Vous avez ma robe et celle de *You have my dress and my sister's*
ma sœur. *i.e., that of my sister.*

5. The pronouns *celui*, *celle*, with the addition of the words *ci* and *là*, are used in the sense of *this one*, *that one*, *the latter*, *the former* [§ 38 (4)]. They agree in gender with the word which they represent.

Vous avez celui-ci, mais vous *You have this one (the latter), but*
n'avez pas celui-là. *you have not that one (the*
former).

6. The pronouns *ceci* and *cela* are used absolutely, that is, without a noun, in pointing out objects; they have no plural.

Nous n'avons pas ceci, nous *We have not this, we have that*
avons cela. *This or that.*
Ceci ou cela.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous le livre de cet homme?	<i>Have you that man's book?</i>
Je n'ai pas son livre, j'ai le mien.	<i>I have not his book, I have mine.</i>
Le cuisinier a-t-il ce parapluie?	<i>Has the cook that umbrella?</i>
Il n'a pas ce parapluie-ci, il a ce	<i>He has not this umbrella, he has</i>
parapluie-là (R. 3).	<i>that umbrella.</i>
Avez-vous celui de votre frère?	<i>Have you your brother's? i.e.,</i>
	<i>that of your brother.</i>
Je n'ai pas celui de mon frère,	<i>I have not my brother's, I have</i>
j'ai celui de ma sœur (R. 4).	<i>my sister's; i.e., that of my</i>
	<i>brother, that of my sister.</i>

Avez-vous celui-ci ou celui-là ?
Je n'ai ni celui-ci ni celui-là.

*Have you this one or that one ?
I have neither the latter nor the
former.*

Quelle robe avez-vous ? f.
J'ai celle-ci.

*Which dress have you ?
I have this (one).*

Avez-vous ceci ou cela (R. 6) ?

Have you this or that ?

EXERCISE 13.

Ardoise, f. *slate*.

Lettre, f. *letter*.

Encrier, m. *inkstand*.

Balai, m. *broom*.

Malle, f. *trunk*.

Étranger, m. *stranger*,

Bois, m. *wood*.

Parasol, m. *parasol*.

foreigner.

Bouteille, f. *bottle*.

Poulet, m. *chicken*.

Lait, m. *milk*.

Dame, f. *lady*.

Plomb, m. *lead*.

Parapluie, m. *umbrella*.

Fromage, m. *cheese*.

Plus, *no longer*.

Volaille, f. *poultry*.

Jardinier, m. *gar-*
dener.

Salière, f. *salt stand*.

1. Votre frère a-t-il son encrier d'argent ? 2. Il ne l'a plus, il a un encrier de plomb. 3. Avons-nous la lettre de l'étranger ? 4. Oui, Monsieur, nous avons celle de l'étranger [R. 4]. 5. Votre sœur n'a pas son ardoise, mais elle a son chapeau de satin. 6. Le menuisier a-t-il votre bois ou le sien ? 7. Il n'a ni le mien ni le sien, il a celui du jardinier. 8. Avez-vous mon bon parapluie de soie ? 9. J'ai votre parapluie de soie et votre parasol de satin. 10. Avez-vous ma bouteille ? 11. Je n'ai pas votre bouteille, j'ai la malle de votre sœur. 12. Le domestique a-t-il cette salière ? 13. Il n'a pas cette salière-ci, il a celle-là. 14. Avez-vous le bon ou le mauvais poulet ? 15. Je n'ai ni celui-ci ni celui-là. 16. Quel poulet avez-vous ? 17. J'ai celui du cuisinier. 18. Le boulanger a-t-il de la volaille ? [Sect. 4, R. 1.] 19. Le boulanger n'a pas de volaille, il a du lait (Sect. 5, R. 5). 20. Avez-vous votre fromage ou le mien ? 21. Je n'ai ni le vôtre ni le mien, j'ai celui du matelot. 22. Quelqu'un a-t-il faim ? 23. Personne n'a faim. 24. Avez-vous quelque chose ? 25. Non, Monsieur, je n'ai rien.

EXERCISE 14.

1. Has your brother that lady's umbrella ? 2. My brother has that lady's umbrella. 3. Have you this parasol or that one ? 4. I have neither this (one) nor that (one). 5. Have you the stranger's gold watch ? 6. No, Sir, I have the baker's. 7. Who has my slate ? 8. I have your slate and your brother's. 9. Has the cook a silver salt stand ? 10. The cook has a silver salt stand, and a silver dish. 11. Has the cook this poultry or that ? 12. He has neither this nor that. 13. Has he this bread or that ? 14. He has neither this nor that, he has the baker's good bread. 15. Have you my cotton parasol ? 16. I have not your cotton parasol, I have your silk parasol. 17. Has the gardener a leather trunk ? 18. The gardener has a leather trunk. 19. Who has my good cheese ? 20. Nobody has your cheese, but some one has your brother's. 21. Have you mine or his ? 22. I have neither yours nor his, I have the stranger's. 23. Has the cook this bottle or that broom ? 24. He has this bottle. 25. Have you a lead inkstand ? 26.

No, Sir, I have a china inkstand. 27. Has the stranger poultry? 28. The stranger has no poultry, but he has money. 29. Your brother is hungry and thirsty, afraid and sleepy. 30. Is any one ashamed? 31. No, Sir, nobody is ashamed. 32. Is your brother right or wrong? 33. My brother is right, and yours is wrong. 34. Your sister has neither her satin hat nor her velvet hat.

SECTION IX.

PLURAL OF NOUNS (§ 9).

1. The plural of French nouns is generally formed, as in English, by the addition of *s* to the singular.

Un homme, une femme.	<i>A man, a woman.</i>
Deux hommes, deux femmes.	<i>Two men, two women.</i>

The form *le* of the article becomes plural by the addition of *s*, and may be placed before plural nouns of either gender.

Les hommes, les femmes.	<i>The men, the women.</i>
-------------------------	----------------------------

2. 1st EXCEPTION TO RULE 1. Nouns ending in *s*, *x*, *z*, remain unchanged for the plural.

Le bas, les bas.	<i>The stocking, the stockings.</i>
La voix, les voix.	<i>The voice, the voices.</i>
Le nez, les nez.	<i>The nose, the noses.</i>

3. 2nd EXCEPTION. Nouns ending with *au*, *eu*, and *œu*, take *x* for the plural.

Le bateau, les bateaux.	<i>The boat, the boats.</i>
Le lieu, les lieux.	<i>The place, the places.</i>
Le vœu, les vœux.	<i>The vow, the vows.</i>

4. 3rd EXCEPTION. The following nouns ending in *ou*, take *x* for the plural: *bijou*, *jewel*; *caillou*, *pebble*; *chou*, *cabbage*; *genou*, *knee*; *hibou*, *owl*; *joujou*, *plaything*; *pou*, *louse*.

Les bijoux, les cailloux, les choux.	<i>The jewels, the pebbles, the cabbages.</i>
--------------------------------------	---

Les hiboux, les genoux, les joujoux.	<i>The owls, the knees, the playthings.</i>
--------------------------------------	---

5. 4th EXCEPTION. The following nouns ending in *ail* change that termination into *aux* for the plural: *bail*, *lease*; *corail*, *coral*; *émail*, *enamel*; *soupirail*, *air-hole*; *sous-bail*, *under-lease*; *travail*, *labour*.

Les baux, les coraux, les émaux.	<i>The leases, the corals, the enamels.</i>
Les soupiraux, les travaux, les sous-baux.	<i>The air-holes, the labours, the under-leases.</i>

6. 5th EXCEPTION. Nouns ending in *al* form their plural in *aux*.

Le cheval, les chevaux.	<i>The horse, the horses.</i>
Le général, les généraux.	<i>The general, the generals.</i>

Bal, *ball*; *carnaval*, *carnival*; *chacal*, *jackal*; *régat*, *treat*; form their plural by the addition of an *s*.

7. 6th EXCEPTION. *Ciel*, *heaven*; *œil*, *eye*; and *aïeul*, *ancestor*, form their plural irregularly.

Les cieux, les yeux, les aïeux. *The heavens, the eyes, the ancestors.*

For further rules see § 9, § 10, and § 11, of the Second Part.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Les Anglais ont-ils les chevaux du général?	<i>Have the English the general's horses?</i>
Les généraux n'ont pas les bijoux.	<i>The generals have not the jewels.</i>
Les enfants ont-ils les cailloux?	<i>Have the children the pebbles?</i>
Les yeux de l'enfant.	<i>The child's eyes.</i>
Les tableaux de cette église.	<i>The pictures of that church.</i>
Avez-vous des oiseaux?	<i>Have you any birds?</i>
Avez-vous les encriers d'argent de ma sœur?	<i>Have you my sister's silver ink-stands?</i>
J'ai les bijoux d'argent et d'or de l'étranger.	<i>I have the gold and silver jewels of the foreigner.</i>
Les rois n'ont-ils pas les palais de marbre?	<i>Have not the kings the marble palaces?</i>

EXERCISE 15.

Baril, m. <i>barrel</i> .	Gilet, m. <i>waistcoat</i> .	Manvais, e. <i>bad</i> .
Bas, m. <i>stocking</i> .	Grand, adj. <i>large</i> .	Meunier, m. <i>miller</i> .
Chocolat, m. <i>chocolate</i> .	<i>great</i> .	Morceau, m. <i>piece</i> .
Bijou, m. <i>jewel</i> .	Jardin, m. <i>garden</i> .	Oiseau, m. <i>bird</i> .
Chou, m. <i>cabbage</i> .	Joujou, m. <i>plaything</i> .	Petit, adj. <i>small</i> .
Dans, <i>in</i> .	Légume, m. <i>vegetable</i> .	Paire, f. <i>pair</i> .
Enfant, m. <i>child</i> .	Marchand, m. <i>merchant</i> .	Poivre, m. <i>pepper</i> .
Fer, m. <i>iron</i> .	Maréchal, m. <i>blacksmith</i> .	Que, qu'est-ce que, <i>what</i> .
Fils, m. <i>son</i> .		Rien, <i>nothing</i> .
Général, m. <i>general</i> .		

1. Avez-vous les marteaux du charpentier? 2. Nous avons les marteaux du maréchal. 3. Les maréchaux ont-ils deux marteaux de bois? 4. Ils ont deux marteaux de fer. 5. Les généraux ont-ils vos chevaux? 6. Non, ils ont les leurs. 7. Ma mère a les bijoux d'or et d'argent de sa sœur. 8. Les enfants ont-ils leurs joujoux et leurs oiseaux? Ils n'ont pas leurs oiseaux, mais ils ont leurs joujoux. 9. Le maréchal a-t-il une paire de bas de laine? 10. Le maréchal a deux paires de bas de laine. 11. Monsieur, n'avez-vous pas froid? 12. Non, Monsieur, j'ai chaud. 13. Avez-vous du café ou du chocolat? 14. Je n'ai ni café ni chocolat. 15. N'avez-vous pas les choux de mon grand jardin? 16. J'ai les légumes de votre petit jardin. 17. Qu'a donc votre fils? 18. Mon fils n'a rien. 19. Avez-vous deux morceaux de pain? 20. Le meunier a un morceau de pain et deux barils de farine. 21. L'épicier a-t-il du café, du thé, du chocolat, et du poivre? 22. Il a du thé et du café, et le chocolat et le poivre de votre marchand. 23. Qui a de l'argent? 24. Je n'ai pas d'argent, mais j'ai du papier. 25. Avez-vous de bon papier? 26. J'ai de mauvais papier.

EXERCISE 16.

1. Have you my brother's horses? 2. I have not your brother's horses, I have your cousin's hats. 3. Have the blacksmiths good iron? 4. The blacksmith has two pieces of iron. 5. Have you two pairs of stockings? 6. I have one pair of stockings and two pairs of gloves. 7. Has your sister the gold jewels? 8. My sister has the gold jewels and the paper playthings. 9. Have you the cabbages in your garden? 10. We have two cabbages in our garden. 11. Have you the silk hats? 12. The generals have the silk hats. 13. Have you coffee or sugar? 14. We have neither coffee nor sugar. 15. Are your brothers ashamed? 16. My brothers are neither ashamed nor afraid. 17. Who has two barrels of flour? 18. The miller has two barrels of flour. 19. Have the birds bread? 20. The birds have no bread. 21. Has the merchant tea, chocolate, sugar, and pepper? 22. He has sugar and pepper, but he has neither tea nor chocolate. 23. What has your sister? 24. She has nothing. 25. What is the matter with your brother? 26. Nothing is the matter with him? 27. Is he not cold? 28. He is not cold, he is warm. 29. Is he wrong? 30. He is not wrong, he is right. 31. Have you two cloth coats? 32. I have only one cloth coat, but I have two satin waistcoats. 33. Who has my brother's letter? 34. Your sister has it. 35. Your sister has it not.

SECTION X.

1. The plural form of the pronoun *le, him* or *it*; *la, her* or *it*, is *les, them*, for both genders. Its place is also before the verb:

Vous ne avez. Les avez-vous? *You have them. Have you them?*
 Nous ne les avons pas. *We have them not.*

2. The plural of the article, preceded by the preposition *de, of* or *from*, is *des* for both genders.

Des livres, des plumes. *Of or from the books, of the pens.*
 Des frères, des sœurs. *Of or from the brothers, of the sisters.*

3. The same form of the article is placed before plural nouns used in a partitive sense [Sect. 4. R. 1].

J'ai des habits. *I have clothes.*
 Vous avez des maisons. *You have houses.*

4. Rule 5 of Sect. 5, and Rule 4 of Sect. 6, apply also to plural nouns used partitively.

Nous n'avons pas de livres. *We have no books.*
 Vous avez de bons crayons. *You have good pencils.*

5. The plural form of the possessive adjectives, *mon, ton, son, notre, votre, leur*, is *mes, my*; *tes, thy*; *ses, his, her, its*; *nos, our*; *vos, your*; *leurs, their*, for both genders.

Mes frères, mes sœurs.
Nos livres, nos plumes.

*My brothers, my sisters.
Our books, our pens.*

6. The possessive pronouns, **le mien, la mienne**, &c. [Sect. 7, R. 6], form their plural as follows :—

<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Les miens, Les miennes, <i>mine</i> .		Les tiens, Les tiennes, <i>thine</i> .	
Les siens, Les siennes, <i>his or hers</i> .		Les nôtres, Les nôtres, <i>ours</i> .	
Les vôtres, Les vôtres, <i>yours</i> .		Les leurs, Les leurs, <i>theirs</i> .	
Vos maisons et les miennes.		<i>Your houses and mine.</i>	
Vos champs et les siens.		<i>Your fields and his.</i>	
Les siens, les vôtres, et les nôtres.		<i>His, yours, and ours.</i>	

7. The demonstrative adjectives **ce, cet, cette**, have **ces** for their plural.

Ces hommes, ces femmes. *These men, these women.*

8. The demonstrative pronoun, **celui**, m. *this*, or *that*, makes **ceux** in the plural. The feminine form, **celle**, merely takes **s** in the plural.

Mes chandeliers (m.) et ceux de vos frères.	<i>My candlesticks and those of your brothers.</i>
Vos chandelles (f.) et celles de nos voisins.	<i>Your candles and those of our neighbours.</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Votre frère a-t-il mes chevaux ?	<i>Has your brother my horses ?</i>
Il n'a ni les vôtres ni les siens.	<i>He has neither yours nor his.</i>
A-t-il ceux de nos voisins ?	<i>Has he those of our neighbours ?</i>
Il ne les a pas.	<i>He has them not.</i>
Ma sœur a-t-elle vos plumes ou celles de ma cousine ?	<i>Has my sister your pens or my cousins' ? f. (or those of my cousin).</i>
Elle n'a ni les miennes ni celles de ma cousine, elle a les siennes.	<i>She has neither mine nor my cousin's, she has her own.</i>
Avons-nous des marteaux ?	<i>Have we hammers ?</i>
Vous n'avez pas de marteaux.	<i>You have no hammers.</i>
Vous avez de jolis crayons.	<i>You have pretty pencils.</i>
Avez-vous les habits des enfants ?	<i>Have you the children's clothes ?</i>
Je n'ai pas les habits des enfants.	<i>I have not the children's clothes.</i>
Vous avez les chapeaux des dames.	<i>You have the ladies' hats.</i>
Avez-vous ceux-ci ou ceux-là ?	<i>Have you these or those ?</i>

EXERCISE 17.

Acajou, m. <i>mahogany</i> .	Cousine, f. <i>cousin</i> .	Laine, f. <i>wool</i> .
Aubergiste, m. <i>inn-keeper</i> .	Crin, m. <i>horse-hair</i> .	Marbre, m. <i>marble</i> .
Blanc, he, <i>white</i> .	Ébéniste, m. <i>cabinet-maker</i> .	Matelas, m. <i>mattress</i> .
Chaise, f. <i>chair</i> .	Ferblanc, m. <i>tin</i> .	Meilleure, adj. f. <i>better</i> .
Chandelier, m. <i>candlestick</i> .	Ferblantier, m. <i>tin-man</i> .	Ouvrier, m. <i>workman</i> .
Chandelle, f. <i>candle</i> .	Fusil, m. <i>musket</i> .	Voyageur, m. <i>traveler</i> .

1. Avez-vous les marteaux des maréchaux? 2. Oui, Monsieur, je les ai. 3. Ne les avez-vous pas? 4. Non, Monsieur, nous ne les avons pas. 5. L'ouvrier les a. 6. L'aubergiste a-t-il vos chevaux? 7. L'aubergiste n'a ni mes chevaux ni les vôtres, il a les siens. 8. Le médecin a-t-il des livres? 9. Oui, Monsieur, il a de bons livres. 10. N'avez-vous pas mes meilleures plumes? 11. Si, Monsieur, j'ai vos meilleures plumes, les miennes, et celles de votre cousine. 12. Le voyageur a-t-il de bons fusils? 13. Il n'a pas de bons fusils, il a des fusils de fer. 14. Le matelot n'a-t-il pas mes matelas de crin? 15. Il ne les a pas. 16. Qu'a-t-il? 17. Il a les matelas de laine de l'ébéniste. 18. L'ébéniste a-t-il des tables d'acajou? 19. Oui, Madame, il a des tables d'acajou et des tables de marbre blanc. 20. Avez-vous mes chaises ou les vôtres? 21. Je n'ai ni les vôtres ni les miennes, j'ai celles de l'ébéniste. 22. N'avez-vous pas sommeil? 23. Non, Monsieur, je n'ai ni sommeil ni faim. 24. Le ferblantier a-t-il vos chandeliers de fer? 25. Non, Monsieur, il a ceux du maréchal.

EXERCISE 18.

1. Have you my tables or yours? 2. I have neither yours nor mine, I have the innkeeper's. 3. Have you them? 4. No, Sir, I have them not. 5. Has your sister my horses? 6. Yes, Sir, she has your two horses, and your brother's. 7. Are you right or wrong? 8. I am right, I am not wrong. 9. Has the tinman my silver candlesticks or yours? 10. He has neither your silver candlesticks nor mine. 11. What has he? 12. He has the cabinet-maker's wooden tables. 13. Has he your mahogany chairs? 14. No, Sir, he has my white marble tables. 15. Have you these tables or those? 16. I have neither these nor those; I have the cabinet-maker's. 17. Have you good pencil cases? 18. No, Sir, but I have good pencils. 19. Has the traveller iron guns? 20. Yes, Sir, he has mine, yours, and his. 21. Has he not your brother's? 22. He has not my brother's. 23. Has the workman my iron hammers? 24. Yes, Sir, he has them. 25. Has my brother your pens or my cousin's? 26. He has mine and yours. 27. Have you the children's clothes? 28. Yes, Madam, I have them. 29. Have you your sister's hat? 30. I have my cousin's, f. 31. Is anything the matter with your brother? 32. He is cold and hungry. 33. Have you horses? 34. Yes, Sir, I have two horses. 35. I have two horse-hair mattresses and one wool mattress.

SECTION XI.

AGREEMENT OF ADJECTIVES—FEMININE OF ADJECTIVES.

1. The adjective in French, whatever may be its place,* agrees in gender and number with the noun which it qualifies [§ 15 (1) (2)].

* For the place of adjectives see Sect. 13, and Rule 5, Sect. 6.

2. Adjectives ending with *e* mute, i.e., not accented, retain that termination without any change for the feminine.

Un garçon aimable.	<i>An amiable boy.</i>
Une fille aimable.	<i>An amiable girl.</i>

3. Adjectives not ending in *e* mute, take *e* for the feminine.

Un garçon diligent.	<i>A diligent boy.</i>
Une fille diligente.	<i>A diligent girl.</i>

4. EXCEPTIONS. Adjectives ending in *el*, *eil*, *en*, *et*, *on*, *as*, and *os*, double the last consonant and take *e* for the feminine.

<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Essentiel,	essentielle.	essential.	Sujet, sujette.
Vermeil,	vermeille.	vermilion.	subject.
Ancien,	ancienne.	ancient.	Bon, bonne.
Chrétien,	chrétienne.	christian.	good.
			Bas, basse.
			low.
			Gros, grosse.
			stout, big.

5. Adjectives ending in *f* change the *f* into *ve*; those ending in *x* change that letter into *se* for the feminine.

Un habit neuf.	Une robe neuve
<i>A new coat.</i>	<i>A new dress.</i>
Un homme heureux	Une femme heureuse.
<i>A happy man.</i>	<i>A happy woman.</i>

6. The adjectives, *beau*, handsome; *fou*, foolish; *mou*, soft; *nouveau*, new; *vieux*, old; become *bel*, *fol*, *mol*, *nouvel*, and *vieil*, before a noun masculine commencing with a vowel or an *h* mute; the last consonant of the latter form is doubled, and *e* added for the feminine, Ex.: *belle*, *folle*, *nouvelle*, *vieille*.

7. Additional rules and exceptions will be found, § 17 of the Second Part.

8. CONJUGATION OF THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF ÊTRE, TO BE.

<i>Affirmatively.</i>		<i>Interrogatively.</i>	
Je suis,	<i>I am.</i>	Suis-je ?	<i>Am I ?</i>
Tu es,	<i>Thou art.</i>	Es-tu ?	<i>Art thou ?</i>
Il est,	<i>He is.</i>	Est-il ?	<i>Is he ?</i>
Elle est,	<i>She is.</i>	Est-elle ?	<i>Is she ?</i>
Nous sommes,	<i>We are.</i>	Sommes-nous ?	<i>Are we ?</i>
Vous êtes,	<i>You are.</i>	Êtes-vous ?	<i>Are you ?</i>
Ils sont, m.	<i>They are.</i>	Sont-ils ?	<i>Are they ?</i>
Elles sont, f.	<i>They are.</i>	Sont-elles ?	<i>Are they ?</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous un garçon diligent et une fille diligente ?	<i>Have you a diligent boy and a diligent girl ?</i>
Mon garçon est diligent, mais ma fille est paresseuse [R. 5].	<i>My boy is diligent, but my daughter is idle.</i>
Cette coutume est-elle ancienne ?	<i>Is this custom ancient ?</i>
Cette coutume n'est pas ancienne, elle est nouvelle [R. 6].	<i>This custom is not ancient, it is new.</i>

Votre plume <i>f.</i> est-elle bonne ou mauvaise ?	<i>Is your pen good or bad ?</i>
Ma sœur est très vive [R. 5].	<i>My sister is very lively.</i>
Votre maison est-elle meilleure que la mienne ?	<i>Is your house better than mine ?</i>
La maison de ma sœur n'est pas si bonne que la vôtre.	<i>My sister's house is not so good as yours.</i>

EXERCISE 19.

Beau, bel, belle, <i>handsome.</i>	Fille, <i>f.</i> daughter.	Parasol, <i>m.</i> parasol.
Bon, <i>m.</i> good.	Habit, <i>m.</i> coat.	Petit, -e, <i>small.</i>
Content, -e, <i>pleased.</i>	Heureux, -se, <i>happy.</i>	Paresseux, -se, <i>idle.</i>
Cravate, <i>f.</i> cravat.	Ici, <i>here.</i>	Porcelaine, <i>f.</i> china.
Dame, <i>f.</i> lady.	Meilleur, -e, <i>better.</i>	Que, <i>than.</i>
Encrier, <i>m.</i> inkstand.	Neuf, -ve, <i>new.</i>	Vieux, vieille, <i>old.</i>
Excellent, -e, <i>excellent.</i>	Parapluie, <i>m.</i> umbrella.	Vif, vive, <i>quick, lively.</i>

1. Cette dame est-elle contente ? 2. Non, Monsieur, cette dame n'est pas contente. 3. Votre fille est-elle vive ? 4. Mon fils est très vif, mais ma fille est paresseuse. 5. N'a-t-il pas tort ? 6. Elle n'a pas raison. 7. Votre cousine est-elle heureuse ? 8. Oui, Madame, elle est bonne, belle, et heureuse. 9. A-t-elle des amis ? 10. Oui, Monsieur, elle a des parents et des amis. 11. A-t-elle une robe neuve et de vieux souliers ? 12. Elle a de vieux souliers et une vieille robe. 13. Votre frère n'a-t-il pas un bel habit [R. 6] ? 14. Il a un bel habit et une bonne cravate. 15. Avez-vous de bonne viande, Monsieur ? 16. J'ai de la viande excellente. 17. Cette viande-ci est-elle meilleure que celle-là ? 18. Celle-ci est meilleure que celle-là. 19. Votre ami a-t-il le bel encrier de porcelaine ? 20. Son encrier est beau, mais il n'est pas de porcelaine. 21. Quelqu'un a-t-il faim ? 22. Personne n'a faim. 23. Les généraux sont-ils ici ? 24. Les généraux et les maréchaux sont ici. 25. J'ai vos parasols et vos parapluies, et ceux de vos enfants.

EXERCISE 20.

1. Is your little sister pleased ? 2. Yes, Madam, she is pleased. 3. Is that little girl handsome ? 4. That little girl is not handsome, but she is good. 5. Have you good cloth and good silk ? 6. My cloth and * silk are here. 7. Is your sister happy ? 8. My sister is good and happy. 9. Has that physician's sister friends ? 10. No, Madam, she has no friends. 11. Is your meat good ? 12. My meat is good, but my cheese is better. 13. Has the bookseller a handsome china inkstand ? 14. He has a fine silver inkstand, and a pair of leather shoes. 15. Have you my silk parasols ? 16. I have your cotton umbrellas. 17. Is your brother's coat handsome ? 18. My brother has a handsome coat and an old silk cravat. 19. Have

* The article, the possessive and the demonstrative adjectives, are repeated before every noun. *Mon frère et ma sœur, my brother and sister.*

you relations and friends? 20. I have no relations, but I have friends. 21. Is that handsome lady wrong? 22. That handsome lady is not wrong. 23. Have you handsome china? 24. Our china is handsome and good. 25. It is better than yours. 26. Is not that little girl hungry? 27. That handsome little girl is neither hungry nor thirsty. 28. What is the matter with her? 29. She has neither relations nor friends. 30. Is this gold watch good? 31. This one is good but that one is better. 32. Have you it? 33. I have it, but I have not your sister's. 34. I have neither yours nor mine, I have your mother's.

SECTION XII.

AGREEMENT OF ADJECTIVES—PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES.

1. An adjective qualifying a plural noun, or two or more singular nouns of the same gender, assumes the gender of the noun or nouns, and is put in the plural.

L'arbre et son fruit sont beaux.	<i>The tree and its fruit are fine.</i>
La plante et sa fleur sont belles.	<i>The plant and its flower are fine.</i>
Vos jardins sont très beaux.	<i>Your gardens are very fine.</i>

2. An adjective qualifying two or more nouns of different genders is put in the plural masculine [§ 19 (4)].

Mon frère et ma sœur sont contents.	<i>My brother and sister are pleased.</i>
Le canif et la plume sont bons.	<i>The penknife and pen are good.</i>

3. The plural of the feminine of adjectives is *invariably* formed by the addition of an *s*.

Vous avez de jolies maisons.	<i>You have pretty houses.</i>
Ces demoiselles sont attentives.	<i>Those young ladies are attentive.</i>

4. The plural of the masculine of adjectives is *generally* formed by the addition of an *s*.

Ces écoliers sont attentifs.	<i>Those scholars are attentive.</i>
Vos bois sont magnifiques.	<i>Your woods are magnificent.</i>

5. The terminations *s* and *x* are not changed for the plural masculine.

Nos fruits sont mauvais.	<i>Our fruits are bad.</i>
Vos oiseaux sont hideux.	<i>Your birds are hideous.</i>

6. To the termination *eau*, *x* is added for the plural masculine.

Vos champs sont très beaux.	<i>Your fields are very fine.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------------------

7. The termination *al* is generally changed into *aux* for the plural masculine [§ 18 (3)].

Les hommes sont égaux.	<i>Men are equal.</i>
------------------------	-----------------------

8. For more explicit rules and for exceptions, see § 18, Second Part.

9. PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF ÊTRE, TO BE.

<i>Negatively.</i>		<i>Negatively and Interrogatively.</i>	
Je ne suis pas,	<i>I am not.</i>	Ne suis-je pas?	<i>Am I not?</i>
Tu n'es pas,	<i>Thou art not.</i>	N'es-tu pas?	<i>Art thou not?</i>
Il n'est pas,	<i>He is not.</i>	N'est-il pas?	<i>Is he not?</i>
Elle n'est pas,	<i>She is not.</i>	N'est-elle pas?	<i>Is she not?</i>
Nous ne sommes pas,	<i>We are not.</i>	Ne sommes-nous pas?	<i>Are we not?</i>
Vous n'êtes pas,	<i>You are not.</i>	N'êtes-vous pas?	<i>Are you not?</i>
Ils ne sont pas, m.	<i>They are not.</i>	Ne sont-ils pas? m.	<i>Are they not?</i>
Elles ne sont pas, f.	<i>They are not.</i>	Ne sont-elles pas? f.	<i>Are they not?</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous des écoliers attentifs?	<i>Have you attentive scholars?</i>
Mes écoliers et mes écolières sont très attentifs et très studieux.	<i>My scholars (male and female) are very attentive and very studious.</i>
Ces demoiselles sont-elles studieuses?	<i>Are those young ladies studious?</i>
Elles ne sont pas très studieuses.	<i>They are not very studious.</i>
Ces règles sont-elles générales?	<i>Are those rules general?</i>
Ces principes sont généraux.	<i>Those principles are general.</i>
Leurs habillements sont superbes.	<i>Their clothes are superb.</i>
Avez-vous peur de ces chevaux rétifs?	<i>Are you afraid of those restive horses?</i>
Vos montres d'or sont excellentes.	<i>Your gold watches are excellent.</i>
Les miennes sont-elles meilleures que les vôtres?	<i>Are mine better than yours?</i>
Les vôtres sont meilleures que les miennes.	<i>Yours are better than mine.</i>

EXERCISE 21.

Agréable, agreeable.	Laine, f. wool, woollen.	Rétif, -ve, restive.
Ainé, -e, elder.	Maroquin, m. morocco.	Souvent, often.
Allemande, f. Ger- man.	Mauvais, -e, bad.	Travail, m. labour.
Indulgent, -e, indul- gent.	Maie, f. mule.	Très, very.
Jamais, never.	Oisif, -ve, idle.	Utile, useful.
	Pantoufles, f. slippers.	Velours, m. velvet.
	Personne, m. nobody.	Vif, -ve, quick, lively.

1. Les chevaux de notre ami sont-ils rétifs? 2. Ses chevaux ne sont pas rétifs, mais ses mules sont très rétives. 3. Les chevaux et les mules de votre frère sont excellents. 4. Vos sœurs sont-elles très vives? 5. Mes frères et mes sœurs sont très vifs. 6. Sont-ils souvent oisifs? 7. Non, Monsieur, mes sœurs ne sont jamais oisives. 8. Avez-vous peur de votre frère? 9. Non, Monsieur, je n'ai peur de personne. 10. Ne sommes-nous pas indulgents? 11. Vous êtes indulgents, et vous avez raison. 12. Ai-je vos livres? 13. Vous ne les avez pas, vous avez ceux de mon frère ainé. 14. Ne les avez-vous pas? 15. Je ne les ai pas. 16. Avez-vous une bonne paire de bas de laine? 17. J'ai une belle paire de bas de soie. 18. Avez-vous les bonnes maisons ou les mauvaises? 19. Je n'ai ni les bonnes ni les mauvaises, j'ai celles de ma cousine. 20.

Le travail est-il agréable? 21. Le travail est utile et agréable. 22. Avez-vous mes beaux souliers de maroquin? 23. Je n'ai pas vos beaux souliers de maroquin, j'ai vos belles pantoufles de velours. 24. Avez-vous les pantoufles de votre sœur, ou les miennes? 25. Je n'ai ni les vôtres ni celles de votre sœur, j'ai celles de l'Allemande.

EXERCISE 22

1. Are your brothers and sisters very (*bien*) quick? 2. My brothers are quick, but my sisters are not quick. 3. Have you not two restive horses? 4. No, but I have a restive mule. 5. Have you not two good pairs of silk gloves? 6. I have a good pair of cotton gloves, and two pairs of silk gloves. 7. Are you not afraid of your friends? 8. No, Sir, I am never afraid of my friends. 9. I am afraid of nobody. 10. Are you right or wrong? 11. I am right. 12. Have you my beautiful leather slippers, or my old satin slippers? 13. I have your old leather shoes and your velvet slippers. 14. Are those ladies pleased? 15. Those ladies are pleased, and they are right. 16. Has the German lady your father's shoes or mine? 17. She has neither his nor yours, she has my sister's. 18. Has your elder brother good houses or bad? 19. His houses are better than yours and than mine.* 20. Are his houses old? 21. His houses are old, but they are good. 22. Have you them? 23. No, Sir, I have them not, I have no houses. 24. Have you my brother's or my sister's? 25. Your sister has hers and my mother's. 26. Are your scholars attentive? 27. My scholars are very attentive and very studious? 28. Are those German ladies studious? 29. They are very studious and very attentive. 30. Are you often wrong? 31. Yes, Sir, I am often wrong. 32. Is labour agreeable? 33. Yes, Sir, labour is agreeable and useful. 34. We have them, and you have them not.

SECTION XIII.

PLACE OF THE ADJECTIVES.—RELATIVE PRONOUN EN.

1. The adjective in French follows the noun much more frequently than it precedes it [§ 84 (1)].

Vous avez des amis fidèles. You have faithful friends.
Ma sœur a des livres instructifs. My sister has instructive books.

2. Those adjectives which generally precede the nouns have been mentioned [Sect. 6, R. 5], and will be found [§ 84 (11)].

Nous avons de belles maisons. We have beautiful houses.
Votre jolie petite fille est studieuse. Your pretty little girl is studious.

* *Que* meaning *which*, and *que* conjunction, are never understood in French, they must be repeated before every noun, pronoun, and verb [Sect 17, R. 1].

3. The adjectives which are placed after nouns are :—1st, All participles,* present and past, used adjectively.

Nous avons une histoire intéressante. *We have an interesting history.*

Vous avez des enfants polis. *You have polite children.*

4. 2nd: All such as express form, colour, taste; such as relate to the physical condition of bodies; such as denote the matter of which an object is composed; as also such as refer to nationality, or to any defects of the body [§ 84 (2) (3) (4) (5) (6) (7)].

Nos parents ont des chapeaux noirs. *Our relations have black hats.*

Vous avez des pommes douces. *You have sweet apples.*

Voilà de la cire molle. *There is soft wax.*

Cette dame espagnole a un enfant boiteux. *That Spanish lady has a lame child.*

5. 3rd: Almost all adjectives ending in al, able, ible, ique, and if.

Ces hommes libéraux sont aimés. *Those liberal men are loved.*

Voilà un esprit raisonnable. *That is a reasonable mind.*

Voilà un esclave fugitif. *That is a fugitive slave.*

6. Some adjectives have a different meaning according to their position before or after the noun [§ 84 (14)].

Un brave homme, *a worthy man.* Un homme brave, *a brave man.*

7. **En** is used for the English words *some* or *any*, expressed or understood, but not followed by a noun; **en** has also the sense of *it, of them, thereof*, generally understood in English sentences, particularly in answers to questions [§ 40 (17), § 101, § 107 (2)].

Avez-vous des souliers de cuir? *Have you leather shoes?*

J'en ai. *I have some, I have (of them).*

Votre fils en a-t-il? *Has your son any?*

8. An adjective used substantively, and having a partitive signification (in a sentence containing the pronoun **en**), must be preceded by the preposition **de** in the same manner as if the noun were expressed [see R. 4, Sect. 6].

Avez-vous de bonnes plumes? *Have you good pens?*

Non, mais j'en ai de mauvaises. *No, but I have bad ones.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous de beaux jardins? *Have you fine gardens?*

Oui, j'en ai de beaux [R. 7]. *Yes, I have fine ones.*

Votre frère n'a-t-il pas des souliers noirs? *Has not your brother black shoes?*

Il n'en a pas, mais ma sœur en a. *He has none, but my sister has some.*

N'a-t-elle pas aussi une robe blanche? *Has she not also a white dress?*

* Some present participles may, when used adjectively, be placed before the noun they qualify. The past participle, **Prétendu**, when used adjectively, always precedes its noun.

Oui, elle en a une.	<i>Yes, she has one.</i>
Non, elle n'en a pas.	<i>No, she has none.</i>
Qui en a une?	<i>Who has one?</i>
Qui n'en a pas?	<i>Who has none?</i>
Le boucher n'a-t-il pas de la viande fraîche?	<i>Has not the butcher fresh meat?</i>
Il en a ; il n'en a pas.	<i>He has some ; he has none.</i>
Il en a beaucoup.	<i>He has much (of it).</i>
Il n'en a guère.	<i>He has but little (of it).</i>
Il en a deux livres.	<i>He has two pounds (of it).</i>

EXERCISE 23.

Américain, -e, <i>American.</i>	Bijou, m. <i>jewel.</i>	Laine, f. <i>wool.</i>
Amusant, -e, <i>amusing.</i>	Blanc, -he, <i>white.</i>	Mademoiselle, f. <i>Miss.</i>
Anglais, -e, <i>English.</i>	Brave, <i>brave, worthy.</i>	Monsieur, m. <i>Sir,</i>
Arabe, <i>Arabian.</i>	Châle, m. <i>shawl.</i>	<i>Mr., gentleman.</i>
Aubergiste, m. <i>inn-keeper.</i>	Couteau, m. <i>knife.</i>	Parent, m. <i>relation.</i>
Beaucoup, <i>much, many.</i>	Français, -e, <i>French.</i>	Soldat, m. <i>soldier.</i>
Belge, <i>Belgian.</i>	Guère, <i>little, but little.</i>	Terre, f. <i>land.</i>
	Guitare, f. <i>guitar.</i>	

1. Avez-vous une bonne guitare ? 2. Oui, Monsieur, j'ai une guitare excellente. 3. Avez-vous de bons habits ? 4. Oui, Madame, j'ai de bons habits noirs et de belles robes blanches. 5. Votre mère n'a-t-elle pas un châle de soie ? 6. Oui, Mademoiselle, elle en a un de soie et un de laine. 7. L'aubergiste a-t-il de bons chevaux anglais ? 8. L'aubergiste a des chevaux anglais, français, et arabes. 9. Il en a de superbes. 10. L'ami de votre frère a-t-il des bijoux d'or ? 11. Oui, Monsieur, il en a. 12. A-t-il aussi des bijoux d'argent ? 13. Il en a aussi. 14. En a-t-il beaucoup ? 15. Non, Monsieur, il n'en a guère. 16. Votre ami a-t-il des parents ? 17. Oui, Monsieur, il en a. 18. Ce monsieur a-t-il une bonne plume d'acier ou une belle plume d'or ? 19. Il en a une d'acier et nous en avons une d'or. 20. Le général n'a-t-il pas de bons soldats ? 21. Il en a de très braves. 22. Les Américains n'ont-ils pas de bonne terre ? 23. Ils en ont d'excellente. 24. Le marchand a-t-il des couteaux anglais ou français ? 25. Les couteaux du marchand ne sont ni anglais ni français, ils sont belges.

EXERCISE 24.

1. Has your brother Arabian horses ? 2. Yes, Sir, he has some. 3. Has he handsome ones ? 4. Yes, Sir, he has handsome ones. 5. Are the good Americans wrong ? 6. No, Miss, they are not wrong, they are right. 7. Have you a French shawl ? 8. Yes, Sir, I have one, I have a handsome French shawl. 9. Has your innkeeper your silver knife or mine ? 10. He has neither yours nor mine, he has his sister's handsome steel knife. 11. Has the Belgian a good guitar ? 12. He has an excellent French guitar. 13. He has an excellent one. 14. Has the gentleman amusing books ? 15. Yes, Sir, he has two. 16. Has the general French or Arabian horses ? 17. He

has neither French nor Arabian horses, he has English horses. 18. Who has Arabian horses? 19. The Arabian has some. 20. Has the Englishman any? 21. The Englishman has some. 22. Has your friend's sister a good steel pen? 23. My friend's sister has one, but my relations have none. 24. Are you not wrong, Sir? 25. Yes, Madam, I am wrong. 26. Are those knives English? 27. No, Sir, they are Belgian. 28. Have you relations? 29. I have two, and they are here (*ici*). 30. Has the English butcher meat? 31. Yes, Sir, he has much. 32. Has he much money? 33. He has but little. 34. Has the Belgian general brave soldiers? 35. Yes, Sir, he has good ones.

SECTION XIV.

PLAN OF THE EXERCISES IN COMPOSING FRENCH.

Hitherto the student has been occupied exclusively in acquiring facts, forms, and principles, and in *translating*, by the aid of these, French into English, and again English into French. Following still the plan of the work, let him now undertake the higher business of endeavouring to *compose* in French. With this intent, let him take some of the words given for this purpose in the following lists, and seek to incorporate them in sentences entirely his own. The words taken from the lists are to be used merely as things suggestive of thought. The *form* which, in any given case, the sentence may assume, should be determined by the models found in the Sections preceding; for, every sentence which the pupil has once mastered in the regular course of the Sections, is or should be to him a *model* on which he may at pleasure build other constructions of his own. Indeed, this constructing sentences according to models, that is, shaping one's thoughts according to the forms and idioms peculiar to a foreign tongue, is the true and only secret of *speaking and writing* that language well. The pupil, therefore, as he passes along in the ordinary course of the Sections, should frequently be found applying his knowledge in the way of actually composing independent sentences. In this way he will soon acquire a facility and accuracy in the language, which is hardly otherwise attainable at all.

LIST OF WORDS FOR EXERCISES IN COMPOSING.

The words in the following lists are given as *suggestive* of thought. In conducting the exercise a particular word is selected, as **Relieur** (Bookbinder), and the student is required to compose a French sentence containing this term. He is duly notified, that he is at liberty to take *any* thought suggested by the word, and to produce a sentence of *any* form found in any of the Sections; regard being had all along to all the Rules, Notes, Exceptions, &c., that may bear upon the case. Thus, adopting as a model the sentence, **Votre marchand**

est bien obligeant (Sect. 15, Examples), or, **Le Danois a-t-il quelques pommes?** (Sect. 16, R. 6), &c. &c., let him endeavour to produce others of the like kind.

A little practice will render the exercise both easy and interesting. It will soon come to be easy to incorporate not only *one*, but *two*, *three*, or more of the words taken from the lists.

I.—PROFESSIONS ET MÉTIERS (*Professions and Trades*).

Acteur, m. <i>actor</i>	Imprimeur, m. <i>printer</i>
Apothicaire, m. <i>apothecary</i>	Joaillier, m. <i>jeweller</i>
Artiste, m. <i>artist</i>	Maçon, m. <i>mason, bricklayer</i>
Aumônier, m. <i>chaplain</i>	Maître d'école, m. <i>schoolmaster</i>
Auteur, m. <i>author</i>	Manouvrier, m. <i>day-labourer</i>
Barbier, m. <i>barber</i>	Marchand de chevaux, m. <i>equi-</i>
Bijoutier, m. <i>jeweller</i>	gnon, m. <i>horse-dealer</i>
Blanchisseuse, f. <i>washerwoman</i>	Maréchal, m. <i>blacksmith</i>
Boucher, m. <i>butcher</i>	Maréchal ferrant, m. <i>farrier,</i>
Brasseur, m. <i>brewer</i>	<i>shoeing-smith</i>
Brodeuse, f. <i>embroiderer</i>	Moissonneur, m. <i>reaper</i>
Charbonnier, m. <i>coal-man</i>	Musicien, m. <i>musician</i>
Charlatan, m. <i>quack</i>	Naturaliste, m. <i>naturalist</i>
Charretier, m. <i>carman</i>	Orateur, m. <i>orator</i>
Chaudronnier, m. <i>coppersmith</i>	Orfèvre, m. <i>gold and silversmith</i>
Chirurgien, m. <i>surgeon</i>	Pape, m. <i>pope</i>
Cordier, m. <i>rope-maker</i>	Pâtre, m. <i>shepherd, herdsman</i>
Corroyeur, m. <i>currier</i>	Perruquier, m. <i>hairdresser</i>
Coutelier, m. <i>cutler</i>	Philosophe, m. <i>philosopher</i>
Couturière, f. <i>seamstress</i>	Poissonnier, m. <i>Poissonnière, f.</i>
Couvreur, m. <i>slater, tiler</i>	<i>fishmonger</i>
Curé, m. <i>vicar</i>	Prédicateur, m. <i>preacher</i>
Dentiste, m. <i>dentist</i>	Prêtre, m. <i>priest</i>
Drapier, m. <i>draper</i>	Raffineur de sucre, de sel, <i>refiner</i>
Écclésiastique, m. <i>clergyman</i>	<i>of sugar, of salt</i>
Épicier, m. <i>grocer</i>	Ramoneur de cheminées, m.
Évêque, m. <i>bishop</i>	<i>chimney-sweeper</i>
Faucheur, m. <i>mower</i>	Relieur, m. <i>bookbinder</i>
Fripier, m. <i>fripperer</i>	Savetier, m. <i>cobbler</i>
Fruitière, f. <i>fruit-woman, i.e.,</i>	Sculpteur, m. <i>sculptor</i>
<i>greengrocer</i>	Sellier, m. <i>saddler</i>
Gantier, m. <i>glover</i>	Serrurier, m. <i>locksmith</i>
Graveur, m. <i>engraver</i>	Tapissier, m. <i>upholsterer</i>
Horloger, m. <i>clock and watch-</i>	Tenturier, m. <i>dyer</i>
<i>maker</i>	Tisserand, m. <i>weaver</i>
Instituteur, m. <i>Institutrice, f.</i>	Tonnelier, m. <i>cooper</i>
<i>schoolmaster, mistress</i>	Vitrier, m. <i>glazier</i>

II.—L'HOMME (*Man*).

Ancêtres, m. p. <i>ancestors</i>	Belle-fille, f. <i>daughter-in-law,</i>
Arrière-petit-fils, m. <i>great grand-</i>	<i>step-daughter</i>
<i>son</i>	Belle-mère, f. <i>mother-in-law,</i>
Beau-fils, m. <i>son-in-law, step-son</i>	<i>step-mother</i>
Beau-frère, m. <i>brother-in-law</i>	Belle-sœur, f. <i>sister-in-law</i>
Beau-père, m. <i>father-in-law, step-</i>	Bisaïeul, m. <i>great grandfather</i>
<i>father</i>	Bru, f. <i>daughter-in-law</i>

Descendants, m. pl. <i>descendants</i>	Jeunesse, f. <i>youth</i>
Enfance, f. <i>childhood</i>	Jumelle, f. <i>twin</i>
Époux, m. }	Mari, m. <i>husband</i>
Épouse, f. } <i>consort</i>	Marraine, f. <i>godmother</i>
Famille, f. <i>family</i>	Naissance, f. <i>birth</i>
Femme, f. <i>woman, wife</i>	Nourrice, f. <i>nurse</i>
Fiançailles, f. p. <i>betrothing</i>	Nouveau marié, m. <i>bridegroom</i>
Fiancé, m., fiancée, f. <i>betrothed</i>	Nouvelle mariée, f. <i>bride</i>
Futur, m. <i>bridegroom</i>	Orphelin, m., orpheline, f. <i>orphan</i>
Future, f. <i>bride</i>	Parrain, m. <i>godfather</i>
Gendre, m. <i>son-in-law</i>	Petit-fils, <i>grandson</i>
Grand-père, m. <i>grandfather</i>	Petite-fille, <i>grand-daughter</i>
Grand-mère, f. <i>grandmother</i>	Veuf, m. <i>widower</i>
Jeune homme, m. <i>young man</i>	Veuve, f. <i>widow</i>
Jeune fille, f. <i>young woman, girl</i>	Vieillesse, f. <i>old age</i>

III.—LE CORPS HUMAIN (*The Human Body*).

Artère, f. <i>artery</i>	Membre, m. <i>limb</i>
Barbe, f. <i>beard</i>	Menton, m. <i>chin</i>
Bouche, f. <i>mouth</i>	Moelle, f. <i>marrow</i>
Bras, m. <i>arm</i>	Moustache, f. <i>mustache, mus-</i>
Cerveau, f. <i>brain</i>	<i>tachio</i>
Chair, f. <i>flesh</i>	Muscle, m. <i>muscle</i>
Cils, m. p. <i>eyelashes</i>	Nerf, m. <i>nerve</i>
Cœur, m. <i>heart</i>	Nez, m. <i>nose</i>
Corps, m. <i>body</i>	Ongle, m. <i>nail</i>
Côte, f. <i>rib</i>	Orteil, m. <i>toe</i>
Côté, m. <i>side</i>	Os, m. <i>bone</i>
Cou, m. <i>neck</i>	Palais, m. <i>palate</i>
Coude, m. <i>elbow</i>	Paupière, f. <i>eyelid</i>
Crâne, m. <i>skull</i>	Peau, f. <i>skin</i>
Cuisse, f. <i>thigh</i>	Pouce, m. <i>thumb</i>
Doigt, m. <i>finger</i>	Poumon, m. <i>lung</i>
Dos, m. <i>back</i>	Prunelle, f. <i>pupil of the eye</i>
Épaule, f. <i>shoulder</i>	Rate, f. <i>spleen</i>
Épine du dos, f. <i>spine</i>	Reins, m. p. <i>loins</i>
Favoris, m. p. <i>whiskers</i>	Sang, m. <i>blood</i>
Foie, m. <i>liver</i>	Sein, m. <i>bosom</i>
Front, m. <i>forehead</i>	Sourcils, m. p. <i>eyebrows</i>
Gencives, f. p. <i>gums</i>	Squelette, m. <i>skeleton</i>
Genou, m. <i>knee</i>	Talon, m. <i>heel</i>
Gorge, f. <i>throat</i>	Teint, m. <i>complexion</i>
Hanche, f. <i>hip</i>	Tempes, f. p. <i>temples</i>
Jambe, f. <i>leg</i>	Trait, m. <i>feature</i>
Joue, f. <i>cheek</i>	Veine, f. <i>vein</i>
Langue, f. <i>tongue</i>	Visage, m. <i>face</i>
Lèvre, f. <i>lip</i>	

IV.—MALADIES, INFIRMITÉS, &c. (*Maladies, Infirmities, &c.*).

Attaque, f. <i>attack, fit</i>	Chancre, m. <i>cancer</i>
Baume, m. <i>balsam</i>	Cicatrice, f. <i>scar</i>
Bégaïement, m. <i>stammering</i>	Colique, f. <i>colic</i>
Blessure, f. <i>wound</i>	Contusion, f. <i>bruise</i>
Cécité, f. <i>blindness</i>	Crampes, f. <i>cramp</i>

Dislocation, f. <i>dislocation</i>	Louche, adj. <i>squinting</i>
Émétique, m. <i>emetic</i>	Malaise, m. <i>indisposition</i>
Enflure, f. <i>swelling</i>	Mutisme, m. <i>dumbness</i>
Enrouement, m. <i>hoarseness</i>	Onguent, m., pommade, f. <i>salve</i>
Entorse, f. <i>sprain</i>	Ordonnance, f. <i>prescription</i>
Épilepsie, f. <i>epilepsy</i>	Petite vérole, f. <i>small-pox</i>
Évanouissement, m. <i>fainting</i>	Pulmonie, f. <i>consumption</i>
Fièvre, f. <i>fever</i>	Remède, m. <i>remedy</i>
Fièvre nerveuse, f. <i>nervous fever</i>	Rhume, m. <i>cold</i>
Fièvre scarlatine, f. <i>scarlet fever</i>	Rongeole, f. <i>measles</i>
Guérison, f. <i>cure</i>	Surdité, f. <i>deafness</i>
Goutte, f. <i>gout</i>	Toux, f. <i>cough</i>
Hydropisie, f. <i>dropsy</i>	Ulcère, m. <i>ulcer</i>
Indisposition, f. <i>indisposition</i>	Vertige, m. <i>dizziness</i>

V.—HABILLEMENTS (*Articles of Dress*).

Agrafe, f. <i>clasp</i>	Étui, m. <i>needle-case</i>
Aiguille, f. <i>needle</i>	Éventail, m. <i>fan</i>
Bague, f. <i>ring</i>	Flacon, m. <i>smelling-bottle</i>
Bas, m. <i>stocking</i>	Fourrure, f. <i>fur</i>
Basin, m. <i>dumity</i>	Frac, m. <i>dress-coat</i>
Batiste, f. <i>cambrie</i>	Frange, f. <i>fringe</i>
Bijouterie, f. <i>jewelry</i>	Garniture, f. <i>trimming</i>
Bonnet, m. <i>cap</i>	Gilet, m. <i>vest, waistcoat</i>
Boucle, f. <i>buckle</i>	Grenat, m. <i>garnet</i>
Boucle, f. <i>lock of hair, curl</i>	Guêtres, f.p. <i>gaiters</i>
Boucles d'oreilles, f.p. <i>ear-rings</i>	Habit, m. <i>coat</i>
Bourse, f. <i>purse</i>	Ivoire, m. <i>ivory</i>
Bracelet, m. <i>bracelet</i>	Linge, m. <i>linen</i>
Bretelles, f.p. <i>braces, suspenders</i>	Lunettes, f.p. <i>spectacles</i>
Brosse, f. <i>brush</i>	Manche, f. <i>sleeve</i>
Brosse à dents, f. <i>tooth-brush</i>	Mousseline, f. <i>muslin</i>
Caleçon, m.s. <i>drawers</i>	Pantalon, m. s. <i>trousers</i>
Ceinture, f. <i>sash, belt, band</i>	Parapluie, m. <i>umbrella</i>
Chaussons, m.p. <i>socks</i>	Parasol, m. <i>parasol</i>
Cirage, m. <i>blacking</i>	Peigne, m. <i>comb</i>
Ciseaux, m.p. <i>scissors</i>	Pendants d'oreilles, m.p. <i>ear-pendants</i>
Coiffure, f. <i>head-dress</i>	Perle, f. <i>pearl</i>
Collet, m. <i>collar</i>	Poche, f. <i>pocket</i>
Collier, m. <i>necklace</i>	Pommade, f. <i>pomatum</i>
Coton, m. <i>cotton</i>	Redingote, f. <i>frock-coat</i>
Cravate, f. <i>cravat</i>	Robe, f. <i>dress, robe</i>
Crêpe, m. <i>crape</i>	Robe de chambre, f. <i>dressing-gown</i>
Diamant, m. <i>diamond</i>	Satin, m. <i>satın</i>
Dentelle, f. <i>lace</i>	Soie, f. <i>silk</i>
Doublure, f. <i>lining</i>	Tablier, m. <i>apron</i>
Écrin, m. <i>casket, jewel-box</i>	Taffetas, m. <i>taffeta, sarcenet</i>
Épée, f. <i>sword</i>	Velours, m. <i>velvet</i>
Éperons, m.p. <i>spurs</i>	Veste, f. <i>jackct</i>
Épingle, f. <i>pin</i>	Voile, m. <i>veil</i>
Épingle à cheveux, f. <i>hair-pin</i>	

VI.—LA VILLE, LA MAISON, &c. (*Town, House, &c.*).

Antichambre, f. <i>ante-chamber</i>	Arsenal, m. <i>arsenal</i>
Ardoise, f. <i>slate</i>	Banc, m. <i>bench, seat</i>

Barrière, <i>f. gate</i>	Meuble, <i>m. piece of furniture</i>
Bibliothèque, <i>f. library</i>	Meubles, <i>m.p. furniture</i>
Bourg, <i>m. borough, market-town</i>	Monnaie, <i>f. mint</i>
Bourse, <i>f. exchange</i>	Mortier, <i>m. mortar</i>
Brique, <i>f. brick</i>	Mur, <i>m.</i> } wall
Capitale, <i>f. capital city, metro-</i> <i>polis</i>	Muraille, <i>f.</i> }
Carillon, <i>m. chime of bells</i>	Palais, <i>m. palace</i>
Caserne, <i>f. barrack</i>	Paroisse, <i>f. parish</i>
Cave, <i>f. cellar</i>	Pavé, <i>m. pavement</i>
Chambre, <i>f. chamber, room</i>	Pépinière, <i>f. nursery of trees</i>
Chambre à coucher, <i>f. bedroom</i>	Persienne, <i>f. blind, open shutters</i>
Chapelle, <i>f. chapel</i>	Plafond, <i>m. ceiling</i> ∟
Château, <i>m. country house, villa</i>	Planche, <i>f. board</i>
Chaumière, <i>f. hut, cottage</i>	Plancher, <i>m. floor</i> ∟
Chaux, <i>f. lime</i>	Poêle, <i>m. stove</i>
Cheminée, <i>f. chimney</i>	Pompe, <i>f. pump</i>
Cimetière, <i>m. cemetery, church-</i> <i>yard</i>	Pont, <i>m. bridge</i>
Cloche, <i>f. bell (large), church</i> <i>bell, &c.</i>	Porte, <i>f. door, gate</i> —
Clocher, <i>m. church steeple</i>	Poste, <i>f. post, post-office</i>
Clochette, <i>f. small bell</i>	Poutre, <i>f. beam</i>
Cloître, <i>m. cloister</i>	Prairie, <i>f.</i> } meadow
Cour, <i>f. yard, court</i>	Pré, <i>m.</i> }
Couvent, <i>m. convent</i>	Prison, <i>f. prison</i>
Cuisine, <i>f. kitchen</i>	Puits, <i>m. well</i>
Douane, <i>f. custom-house</i>	Quartier, <i>m. quarter</i>
Écurie, <i>f. stable</i>	Rampe (d'escalier), <i>balustrade of</i> <i>a staircase.</i>
Environs, <i>m.p. environs, neigh-</i> <i>bourhood</i>	Rez-de-chaussée, <i>m. ground</i> <i>floor</i>
Escalier, <i>m. stairs</i>	Sacristie, <i>f. vestry</i>
Étage, <i>m. story, floor</i>	Salle, <i>f. parlour, sitting-room</i>
Faubourg, <i>m. suburb</i>	Salon, <i>m. drawing-room, hall</i>
Ferme, <i>f. farm</i>	Serre, <i>f. conservatory</i>
Fontaine, <i>f. fountain, well</i>	Serre chaude, <i>f. hot-house</i>
Four, <i>m. oven</i>	Serrure, <i>f. lock</i> ∟
Gouttière, <i>f. gutter</i>	Sonnette, <i>f. bell</i>
Grand chemin, <i>m.</i> } highway	Théâtre, <i>m. theatre</i>
Grand route, <i>f.</i> }	Toit, <i>m. roof</i>
Grange, <i>f. barn.</i>	Tour, <i>f. tower</i>
Grenier, <i>m. garret</i>	Tuile, <i>f. tile</i>
Haie, <i>f. hedge.</i>	Verger, <i>m. orchard</i>
Hameau, <i>m. hamlet</i>	Verrou, <i>m. bolt</i> ∟
Hôpital, <i>m. hospital</i>	Vestibule, <i>m. hall, entry</i>
Hôtel de ville, <i>town-house, city-</i> <i>house, guildhall, city-hall, town-</i> <i>hall</i>	Vigne, <i>f., vignoble, m. vine-</i> <i>yard</i>
	Village, <i>m. village</i> ∟
	Volet, <i>m. window-shutter</i>
	Voûte, <i>f. vault</i>

VII.—MEUBLES (*Furniture*).

Allumette, <i>f. match</i>	Bassinoire, <i>f. warming-pan</i>
Allumette chimique, <i>f. friction-</i> <i>match</i>	Berceau, <i>m. cradle</i>
Amadou, <i>m. tinder</i>	Boîte à amadou, <i>f. tinder-box</i>
Armoire, <i>f. cupboard</i>	Bougie, <i>f. taper</i>
Baril, <i>m. cask, barrel</i>	Bouilloire, <i>f. kettle</i>
Bassin, <i>m. bowl, wash-bowl</i>	Briquet, <i>m. fire-steel</i>
	Cadre, <i>m. frame</i>

Candélabre, m. <i>chandelier</i>	Nappe, f. <i>tablecloth</i>
Casseroles, f. <i>saucepan</i>	Oreiller, m. <i>pillow</i>
Cassette, f. <i>box, casket</i>	Panier, m. <i>basket</i>
Chandelle, f. <i>candle</i>	Paravent, m. <i>screen</i>
Charbon de bois, m. <i>charcoal</i>	Peinture, f. <i>painting, picture</i>
Charbon de terre, <i>coal</i>	Pelle, f. <i>shovel</i>
Chaudière, f. <i>boiler</i>	Pierre à fusil, f. <i>flint</i>
Coffre, m. <i>chest</i>	Pincettes, f.p. <i>tongs</i>
Commode, f. <i>chest of drawers</i>	Poêle, m. <i>stove</i>
Corbeille, f. <i>basket</i>	Poêle, f. <i>frying-pan</i>
Crible, m. <i>sieve</i>	Poivrière, f. <i>pepper-box</i>
Cruche, f. <i>pitcher</i>	Pot, m. <i>kettle</i>
Cuvier, m. <i>tub</i>	Pupitre, m. <i>desk</i>
Drap, m. <i>sheet</i>	Salière, f. <i>salt-cellar</i>
Ecumoire, f. <i>skimmer</i>	Savon, m. <i>soap</i>
Entonnoir, m. <i>funnel</i>	Seau, m. <i>pail</i>
Essuie-main, m. <i>towel</i>	Serviette, f. <i>napkin</i>
Fer à repasser, m. <i>flat iron</i>	Sofa, m. <i>sofa</i>
Fourgon, m. <i>poker</i>	Soufflet, m. <i>bellows</i>
Foyer, m. <i>hearth</i>	Soupière, f. <i>soup-tureen</i>
Lampe, f. <i>lamp</i>	Sucrier, m. <i>sugar-basin</i>
Lanterne, f. <i>lantern</i>	Tableau, m. <i>picture</i>
Lit, m. <i>bed</i>	Tablette, f. <i>shelf</i>
Lit de plume, m. <i>feather-bed</i>	Tapis, m. <i>carpet</i>
Lumière, f. <i>light</i>	Tire-bouchon, m. <i>cork-screw</i>
Lustre, m. <i>sconce, lustre</i>	Tiroir, m. <i>drawer</i>
Marchepied, m. <i>footstool, foot-board</i>	Traversin, m. <i>bolster</i>
Mortier, m. <i>mortar</i>	Ustensiles de cuisine, m.p. <i>kitchen utensils</i>
Mouchettes, f.p. <i>snuffers</i>	Verre, m. <i>glass</i>
Moutardier, m. <i>mustard-pot</i>	

VIII.—PLATS, &c. (*Dishes, &c.*).

Boeuf, m. <i>beef</i>	Rafraichissements, m.p. <i>refreshments</i>
Bouilli, m. <i>boiled beef, boiled meat</i>	Rôti, m. <i>roast meat</i>
Bouillon, m. <i>broth</i>	Sancisse, f. <i>sausage</i>
Confitures, f.p. <i>preserves</i>	Soupe, f. <i>soup</i>
Côtelette, f. <i>cutlet</i>	Soupe maigre, f. <i>vegetable soup</i>
Gigot de mouton, m. <i>leg of mutton</i>	Tarte, f. <i>tart</i>
Jambon, m. <i>ham</i>	Veau, m. <i>veal</i>
Mouton, m. <i>mutton</i>	Vermicelle, m. <i>vermicelli</i>
Œuf, m. <i>egg</i>	Volaille, f. <i>fowl</i>
Omelette, f. <i>omelet</i>	
Porc, m. <i>pork</i>	

IX.—LÉGUMES, GRAIN, &c. (*Vegetables, Grain, &c.*).

Ail, m., p. <i>aulx or ails, garlic</i>	Cresson, m. <i>cress</i>
Asperge, f. <i>asparagus</i>	Épinards, m.p. <i>spinach</i>
Avoine, f. <i>oats</i>	Fève, f. <i>bean</i>
Betterave, f. <i>beet</i>	Grain, m. <i>kernel</i>
Blé, m. <i>wheat</i>	Herbe, f. <i>herb</i>
Carotte, f. <i>carrot</i>	Lentille, f. <i>lentil</i>
Céleri, m. <i>celery</i>	Maïs, m. <i>maize</i>
Champignon, m. <i>mushroom</i>	Millet, m. <i>millet</i>
Chou, m. <i>cabbage</i>	Navet, m. <i>turnip</i>
Chou-fleur, m. <i>cauliflower</i>	Oignon, m. <i>onion</i>
Concombre, m. <i>cucumber</i>	Orge, f. <i>barley</i>

Oseille, *f. sorrel*
 Panais, *m. parsnip*
 Persil, *m. parsley*
 Plante, *f. plant*
 Pois, *m. pea*
 Racine, *f. root*
 Radis, *m. radish*

Rave, *f. radish (long)*
 Riz, *m. rice*
 Sauge, *f. sage*
 Seigle, *m. rye*
 Thym, *m. thyme*
 Truffe, *f. truffle*

X.—ARBRES FRUITIERS, FRUITS (*Fruit-trees, Fruits*).

Abricot, *m. apricot*
 Abricotier, *m. apricot-tree*
 Amande, *f. almond*
 Amandier, *m. almond-tree*
 Ananas, *m. pine-apple*
 Aveline, *f. filbert*
 Châtaigne, *f. chestnut*
 Citron, *m. citron, lemon*
 Coing, *m. quince*
 Datte, *f. date*
 Figue, *f. fig*
 Fraïse, *f. strawberry*
 Framboise, *f. raspberry*
 Groseille, *f. gooseberry, currant*
 Melon, *m. melon*

Mûre, *f. mulberry*
 Nefle, *f. medlar*
 Noisette, *f. hazel-nut*
 Noix, *f. nut*
 Orange, *f. orange*
 Pêche, *f. peach*
 Poire, *f. pear*
 Poirier, *m. pear-tree*
 Pomme, *f. apple*
 Pommier, *m. apple-tree*
 Prune, *f. plum*
 Prunier, *m. plum-tree*
 Raisin, *m. grape*
 Vigne, *f. vine*

XI.—ARBRES FORESTIERS (*Forest-trees*).

Bouleau, *m. birch*
 Chêne, *m. oak*
 Écorce, *f. bark*
 Erable, *m. maple*
 Frêne, *m. ash*
 Hêtre, *m. beech*
 Mélèse, *m. larch*
 Orme, *m. elm*

Peuplier, *m. poplar*
 Rameau, *m. bough*
 Sapin, *m. fir*
 Saule, *m. willow*
 Tilleul, *m. linden-tree*
 Tremble, *m. aspen*
 Tronc, *m. trunk*

XII.—FLEURS, &c. (*Flowers, &c.*).

Auricule, *f. arricula*
 Chardon, *m. thistle*
 Chèvrefeuille, *m. honeysuckle*
 Giroflée, *f. gillyflower, wall-flower*
 Jasmin, *m. jessamin*
 Lis, *m. lily*
 Marguerite, *f. daisy*
 Mauvaise herbe, *f. weed*
 Myrte, *m. myrtle*
 Œillet, *m. pink*

Ortie, *f. nettle*
 Pavot, *m. poppy*
 Pensée, *f. pansy, heart's-ease*
 Pied-d'alouette, *m. larkspur*
 Primevère, *f. cowslip, primrose*
 Rose, *f. rose*
 Tournesol, *m. sunflower*
 Tulipe, *f. tulip*
 Violette, *f. violet*

XIII.—OISEAUX (*Birds*).

Aigle, *m. eagle*
 Aile, *f. wing*
 Alouette, *f. lark*
 Autour, *m. hawk*
 Antruche, *f. ostrich*
 Bec, *m. beak*
 Bécasse, *f. woodcock*
 Bécassine, *f. snipe*

Bergeronnette, *f. wagtail*
 Caille, *f. quail*
 Canard, *m. duck*
 Canari, *m. canary-bird*
 Chardonneret, *m. goldfinch*
 Chauve-souris, *f. bat*
 Cigogne, *f. stork*
 Colombe, *f. dove*

Corbeau, m. <i>raven</i>	Paon, m. <i>peacock</i>
Corneille, f. <i>crow</i>	Passereau, m. <i>sparrow</i>
Coucou, m. <i>cuckoo</i>	Perdrix, f. <i>partridge</i>
Cygne, m. <i>swan</i>	Perroquet, m. <i>parrot</i>
Dindon, m. <i>turkey</i>	Pie, f. <i>maggie</i>
Faisan, m. <i>pheasant</i>	Pigeon, m. <i>pigeon</i>
Geai, m. <i>jay</i>	Poule, f. <i>hen</i>
Grive, f. <i>thrush</i>	Poulet, m. <i>chicken</i>
Héron, m. <i>heron</i>	Roitelet, m. <i>wren</i>
Hirondelle, f. <i>swallow</i>	Rossignol, m. <i>nightingale</i>
Linotte, f. <i>linnet</i>	Rouge-gorge, m. <i>redbreast</i>
Merle, m. <i>blackbird</i>	Serin, m. <i>canary-bird</i>
Oie, f. <i>goose</i>	Tourterelle, f. <i>turtle-dove</i>
Oiseau de proie, m. <i>bird of prey</i>	Vautour, m. <i>vulture</i>

XIV.—QUADRUPÈDES (*Quadrupeds*).

Agneau, m. <i>lamb</i>	Lièvre, m. <i>hare</i>
Blaireau, m. <i>badger</i>	Lion, m. <i>lion</i>
Castor, m. <i>beaver</i>	Loup, m. <i>wolf</i>
Cerf, m. <i>stag</i>	Mule, f. <i>mule</i>
Chamois, m. <i>chamois, wild goat</i>	Ours, m. <i>bear</i>
Chèvre, f. <i>goat</i>	Poulain, m. <i>colt</i>
Chevreuril, m. <i>roebuck</i>	Pourceau, m. <i>hog, swine</i>
Écureuil, m. <i>squirrel</i>	Renard, m. <i>fox</i>
Furet, m. <i>ferret</i>	Singe, m. <i>monkey</i>
Hérisson, m. <i>hedgchog</i>	Taupo, f. <i>mole</i>
Lapin, m. <i>rabbit</i>	Tigre, m. <i>tiger</i>

XV.—POISSONS (*Fishes*).

Anguille, f. <i>eel</i>	Merlan, m. <i>whiting</i>
Baleine, f. <i>whale</i>	Morue, f. <i>codfish</i>
Brochet, m. <i>pike</i>	Perche, f. <i>perch</i>
Carpe, f. <i>carp</i>	Requin, m. <i>shark</i>
Crevette, f. <i>shrimp</i>	Saumon, m. <i>salmon</i>
Ecrevisse, f. <i>crayfish</i>	Sole, f. <i>sole</i>
Esturgeon, m. <i>sturgeon</i>	Tanche, f. <i>tench</i>
Hareng, m. <i>herring</i>	Tortue, f. <i>turtle</i>
Hareng saur, m. <i>red herring</i>	Truite, f. <i>trout</i>
Homard, m. <i>lobster</i>	Turbot, m. <i>turbot</i>

XVI.—INSECTES, &c. (*Insects, &c.*).

Abeille, f. <i>bee</i>	Lézard, m. <i>lizard</i>
Araignée, f. <i>spider</i>	Limaçon, m. <i>snail</i>
Chenille, f. <i>caterpillar</i>	Mouche, f. <i>fly</i>
Cigale, f. <i>grasshopper</i>	Papillon, m. <i>butterfly</i>
Couleuvre, f. <i>adder</i>	Puce, f. <i>flea</i>
Cousin, m. <i>gnat</i>	Punaise, f. <i>bug</i>
Crapaud, m. <i>toad</i>	Sangsue, f. <i>leech</i>
Escarbot, m. <i>beetle</i>	Sauterelle, f. <i>locust</i>
Fourmi, f. <i>ant</i>	Serpent, m. <i>serpent</i>
Grenouille, f. <i>frog</i>	Teigne, f. <i>moth</i>
Grillon, m. <i>cricket</i>	Ver, m. <i>worm</i>
Guêpe, f. <i>wasp</i>	Vipère, f. <i>viper</i>

XVII.—OUTILS (*Tools*).

Alène, f. *awl*
 Balance, f. *scale*
 Bêche, f. *spade*
 Brosse, f. *brush*
 Brouette, f. *wheel-barrow*
 Cachet, m. *seal*
 Carabine, f. *rifle*
 Charrue, f. *plough*
 Chevalet, m. *casel*
 Cire, f. *wax*
 Cognée, f. *hatchet*
 Colle, f. *glue*
 Compas, m. *compasses*
 Échafaudage, m. *scaffold*
 Echelle, f. *ladder*
 Enclume, f. *anvil*
 Etan, m. *vice*
 Faucille, f. *sickle*
 Faux, f. *scythe*
 Fléau, m. *flail*
 Fusil, m. *gun*

Hache, f. *axe*
 Hameçon, m. *fish-hook*
 Herse, f. *harrow*
 Houe, f. *hoe*
 Ligne, f. *line*
 Lime, f. *file*
 Meule, f. *grindstone*
 Pain à cacheter, m. *wafer*
 Pelle, f. *shovel*
 Pince, f. *crowbar*
 Pinceau, m. *brush, pencil*
 Poulie, f. *pulley*
 Rabot, m. *plane*
 Rouleau, m. *roller*
 Sablière, f. *sand-box*
 Scie, f. *saw*
 Serrure, f. *lock*
 Tenailles, f. p. *pincers*
 Truelle, f. *trowel*
 Vis, f. *screw*

SECTION XV.

1. Adjectives and adverbs are always compared in French, as they often are in English, by means of adverbs.

Plus beau, plus souvent.

Handsome, oftener.

2. The comparative of equality is expressed by :

Aussi—que, } before an adjective, an adverb, or a pre-
 As, or as much—as, } noun.

Aussi aimé que son frère.

As much loved as his brother.

Autant de—que de, }
 As much, or as many—as, } before a substantive.

Autant de crayons que de plumes. *As many pencils as pens.*

Autant de science que de modestie. *As much science as modesty.*

3. The comparative of superiority is expressed by :

Plus—que, }
 More—than, } before an adjective, an adverb, or a pronoun.

Il est plus docile que son frère. *He is more docile than his brother.*

Plus de—que de, }
 More—than, } before a noun.

Plus de bonté que de jugement. *More goodness than judgment.*

4. The comparative of inferiority is expressed by:

Pas si ; pas aussi ; moins—que, } before an adjective, an ad-
Not so ; not so ; less—than, } verb, or a personal pronoun.

Vous n'êtes pas si grand que votre sœur. *You are not so tall as your sister.*

Il est moins poli que son cousin. *He is less polite than his cousin.*

Pas tant de ; pas autant de ; moins de—que de, } before a sub-
Not so much or so many ; less ; fewer—than, } stantive, a de-
} monstrative,
} or possessive
} pronoun.

Il n'a pas tant de courage que de patience. *He has not so much courage as patience.*

Il a moins d'argent que de viande. *He has less money than meat.*

5. **Tout autant—que** is used for *quite as many—as ; as much, just as much, or as many.*

J'en ai tout autant que vous. *I have quite as many as you.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous autant de livres anglais que de livres italiens ? *Have you as many English books as Italian books ?*

J'en ai tout autant. *I have just as many.*

J'ai autant de ceux-ci que de ceux-là. *I have as many of these as of those.*

Il est aussi heureux que vous. *He is as happy as you.*

Avez-vous plus d'assiettes que de plats ? *Have you more plates than dishes ?*

J'ai plus de ceux-ci que de celles-là. *I have more of these than of those.*

Est-il plus complaisant que ses frères ? *Is he more obliging than his brothers ?*

Le Français a-t-il moins de légumes que de fruits ? *Has the Frenchman fewer vegetables than fruits ?*

Il a moins de livres que de manuscrits. *He has fewer books than manuscripts.*

Il n'a pas autant de ceux-ci que de ceux-là ? *He has not so many of these as of those ?*

En a-t-il moins que votre frère ? *Has he less (of them) than your brother ?*

Il en a tout autant. *He has quite as many.*

EXERCISE 25.

Bleu, -e, <i>blue.</i>	Fer, m. <i>iron.</i>	Manuscrit, m. <i>manu-</i>
Courage, m. <i>courage.</i>	Fromage, m. <i>cheese.</i>	script.
Davantage, <i>more.</i>	Hollandais, m. <i>Dutch-</i>	Maréchal, m. <i>black</i>
Drap, m. <i>cloth.</i>	man.	smith.
Ennemi, m. <i>enemy.</i>	Italien, -ne, <i>Italian.</i>	Modestie, f. <i>modesty.</i>
Espagnol, -e, <i>Span-</i>	Jardin, m. <i>garden.</i>	Soie, f. <i>silk</i>
iard.	Manteau, m. <i>cloak.</i>	Très, <i>very.</i>
Estampe, f. <i>engraving.</i>		Verre, m. <i>glass.</i>

1. Êtes-vous aussi content que mon frère? 2. Je suis aussi content que votre frère. 3. Votre père a-t-il autant de courage que de modestie? 4. Il a moins de modestie que de courage. 5. Le libraire a-t-il autant de manuscrits que d'estampes? 6. Il a plus de celles-ci que de ceux-là. 7. A-t-il autant d'amis que d'ennemis? 8. Il a plus de ceux-ci que de ceux-là. 9. A-t-il autant de pain que de fromage? 10. Il a tout autant de celui-ci que de celui-là. 11. Le maréchal a-t-il plus de chevaux que votre frère? 12. Il en a plus que mon père et plus que mon frère. 13. N'avez-vous pas froid? 14. Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas froid, j'ai très chaud. 15. Avez-vous deux manteaux de drap? 16. J'en ai un de drap et un de velours bleu. 17. N'avez-vous pas plus de verres que d'assiettes? 18. Nous en avons davantage.* 19. Le maréchal a-t-il plus de fer que d'acier? 20. Il n'a pas autant de celui-ci que de celui-là. 21. Il a moins de celui-ci que de celui-là. 22. Les Hollandais ont-ils de beaux jardins? 23. Leurs jardins sont très beaux. 24. Les jardins des Italiens sont plus beaux que ceux des Espagnols.

EXERCISE 26.

1. Are you more attentive than your sister? 2. I am not so attentive as your brother. 3. Have you more courage than my brother? 4. I have quite as much. 5. Has the blacksmith as much money as iron? 6. He has more of the latter than of the former [Sect. 8, R. 5]. 7. Has he more modesty than the Spaniard? 8. He has more. 9. He has more than your friend's sister. 10. Are you not cold, Sir? 11. No, Sir, but I am afraid and sleepy. 12. Has the Dutchman more cheese than the Italian? 13. He has more cheese and more money. 14. Have you as much English silk as Italian silk? 15. I have more of this than of that. 16. Who has more friends than the Spaniard? 17. Your friend has more. 18. Has the Spaniard as much of your money as of his? 19. He has less of mine than of his. 20. Have we more silk cloaks than cloth cloaks? 21. We have more of these than of those. 22. Have you good cloaks? 23. Yes, Sir, I have good cloaks, good hats, and good leather shoes. 24. Have you more plates than dishes? 25. I have not more plates than dishes; but I have more glasses than plates. 26. Are you not very cold? 27. No, Sir, I am neither cold nor warm. 28. Has your carpenter wood? 29. Yes, Sir, he has wood, money, cheese, and meat. 30. Who has more money than the carpenter? 31. The Dutchman has more. 32. Who has more engravings than books? 33. The bookseller has more of these than of those. 34. Are you as attentive as your friend? 35. I am more attentive than my friend.

* **Davantage** means more. It is not generally placed before a noun; it may be used instead of **plus** at the end of a sentence.

SECTION XVI.

COMPARISON—ENCORE, &c.

1. The superlative absolute is formed by placing **très, fort, or bien, very**, before the adjective [§ 15, 12].

Ces chandeliers sont très utiles. *These candlesticks are very useful.*
Notre tailleur est bien obligeant. *Our tailor is very obliging.*

2. The superlative relative is formed by adding the article **le, la, les**, to a comparative [§ 15, 10].

Votre neveu est le plus savant. *Your nephew is the most learned of all.*

3. **Encore** is used in French in the sense of *more, some more, any more, still*—used affirmatively and interrogatively, but not negatively.

Avez-vous encore du café?	<i>Have you any more coffee?</i>
J'ai encore du café.	<i>I have more (or some more) coffee.</i>
J'en ai encore.	<i>I have some more, or some left.</i>

4. **Ne—plus** is used in the sense of *not any more*, and *no more, or none left*.

Je n'ai plus de livres.	<i>I have no more books.</i>
Je n'ai plus de chocolat.	<i>I have no chocolate left.</i>

5. **Ne—guère** means *but little, but few*.

Je n'ai guère d'amis.	<i>I have but few friends.</i>
Je n'en ai guère.	<i>I have but few—but little.</i>

6. The pronouns **moi, toi, lui, eux**, are used instead of the nominative pronouns **je, tu, il, ils**, after **que** following a comparative, and when the verb is understood.

Vous êtes plus heureux que moi.	<i>You are happier than I.</i>
Vous avez plus de mérite que lui.	<i>You have more merit than he.</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Votre marchand est bien obligeant.	<i>Your merchant is very obliging.</i>
Voilà le meilleur de ces garçons.	<i>That is the best of those boys.</i>
Nous avons encore des amis.	<i>We have some more (or still) friends.</i>
Vous avez encore du crédit.	<i>You have still (or yet) credit.</i>
Avez-vous encore une piastre?	<i>Have you a dollar left?</i>
Le maçon a-t-il encore des briques?	<i>Has the mason more bricks?</i>
Il n'en a plus.	<i>He has no more—he has none left.</i>
Il n'a plus de briques.	<i>He has no more bricks.</i>
Il n'en a guère.	<i>He has but few.</i>
Il n'en a plus guère.	<i>He has but few left.</i>
Je n'ai guère de livres.	<i>I have but few books.</i>

Avez-vous plus de courage que lui?	<i>Have you more courage than he?</i>
Il a moins de courage que moi.	<i>He has less courage than I.</i>
Combien de piastres avez-vous encore?	<i>How many dollars have you still, or have you left?</i>

EXERCISE 27.

Beaucoup, <i>much</i> .	Nevu, m. <i>nephew</i> .	Savant, -e, <i>learned</i> .
Boyer, <i>Boyer</i> .	Nièce, f. <i>niece</i> .	Sœur, f. <i>sister</i> .
Correct, -e, <i>correct</i> .	Nouvelles, f. p. <i>news</i> .	Tante, f. <i>aunt</i> .
Crédit, m. <i>credit</i> .	Quel, <i>which, which one</i> .	Tous, <i>all</i> .
Dictionnaire, m. <i>dic-</i>	Salade, f. <i>salad</i> .	Ville, f. <i>town, city</i> .
<i>tionary</i> .		

1. Votre dictionnaire est-il très correct? 2. Il est plus correct que celui de Boyer. 3. Votre dictionnaire est le plus correct de tous. 4. Quel est le plus beau de ces jardins? 5. Celui-ci est le plus beau de tous les jardins de la ville. 6. Avez-vous encore de l'argent? 7. Je n'ai plus d'argent, mais j'ai encore du crédit. 8. Avons-nous encore de la salade? 9. Nous n'en avons plus. 10. Nous n'avons plus de viande. 11. Qui en a encore? 12. Mes frères et mes sœurs en ont encore. 13. En avez-vous encore beaucoup? 14. Je n'en ai plus guère. 15. Votre tante a-t-elle plus de robes que votre nièce? 16. Elle n'en a pas beaucoup. 17. Votre neveu est-il plus savant que votre nièce? 18. Il n'est pas aussi savant qu'elle. 19. Elle est plus savante que lui. 20. Avez-vous encore froid? 21. Je n'ai plus froid, j'ai bien chaud. 22. N'avez-vous plus de nouvelles? 23. Je n'en ai plus. 24. En avez-vous beaucoup? 25. Je n'en ai guère.

EXERCISE 28.

1. Has your brother a very good dictionary? 2. His dictionary is not very correct. 3. Has your father more courage than he? 4. He has much more courage than your nephew. 5. Have your brothers credit? 6. They have but little credit, but they have money. 7. Is your aunt obliging? 8. My aunt is very obliging. 9. Have you still books, pens, and paper? 10. I have no more books, but I have still good pens and excellent English paper. 11. Who has still paper? 12. I have no more, but my brother has some more. 13. Have you any news, Sir? 14. No, Madam, I have none to-day. 15. Have you as much wood as my brother's son? 16. I have more than you or he? 17. Are you still wrong? 18. No, Sir, I am no longer (*plus*) wrong, I am right. 19. Are your sisters still hungry? 20. They are neither hungry nor thirsty, but they are still sleepy. 21. Is your niece as learned as he? 22. She is more learned than he and (*que*) his aunt. 23. Have you no news, Sir? 24. No, Madam, I have no more news. 25. Who has news? 26. I have no more. 27. Have you them all? 28. Yes, Sir, I have them all. 29. Has your aunt much of it left? 30. She has but little more of it. 31. Has your brother any more English horses? 32. He has no more. 33. He has two

more. 34. Have you a handsome French shawl left? 35. I have no more French shawls, but I have an English one.

SECTION XVII.

1. The adverbs of quantity, **combien**, *how much, how many*; **trop**, *too much, too many*; **beaucoup**, *much, many*; **assez**, *enough*; **peu**, *little, few*; **guère**, *but little, few*; and the word **pas**, meaning *no*, when coming before a noun or an adjective, are followed by the preposition **de**.

Combien de fleurs avez-vous?	<i>How many flowers have you?</i>
J'ai beaucoup de fleurs.	<i>I have many flowers.</i>
Vous avez trop de loisir.	<i>You have too much leisure.</i>
Votre sœur a assez de temps.	<i>Your sister has time enough.</i>
Il n'a pas d'amis.	<i>He has no friends.</i>
Je n'ai jamais vu de lion.	<i>I have never seen any lion.</i>

2. The adverb **bien**, used in the sense of **beaucoup** (*much, many*), is followed by the preposition **de**, joined to or blended with the article **le, la, les** [Sect. 4].

Vous avez bien de la complaisance.	<i>You have much kindness.</i>
Elle a bien des amis.	<i>She has many friends.</i>

3. **Quelque chose**, *something, anything* [Sect. 5, 6], and **rien**, *nothing, not anything*, take **de** before an adjective.

Votre ami a quelque chose d'agréable.	<i>Your friend has something pleasant.</i>
Avez-vous quelque chose de bon?	<i>Have you anything good?</i>
Je n'ai rien de bon.	<i>I have nothing (not anything) good.</i>

4. **Quel**, *m.*, **quelle**, *f.*, **quels**, *m. p.*, **quelles**, *f. p.*, are used interrogatively for *which* or *what* before a noun.

Quelle serviette avez-vous?	<i>What or which napkin have you?</i>
Quelles bourses votre ami a-t-il?	<i>What purses has your friend?</i>

5. **Que** is used for *what* before a verb.

Qu'avez-vous?	<i>What is the matter with you?</i>
---------------	-------------------------------------

6. **Lequel**, *m.*, **laquelle**, *f.*, **lesquels**, *m. p.*, **lesquelles**, *f. p.*, are used absolutely for the word *which*, not followed by a noun, and equivalent to *which one, which ones*.

Lequel votre fils a-t-il?	<i>Which (one) has your son?</i>
Lesquelles avons-nous?	<i>Which (ones) have we?</i>

7. **Quelques** is used before a plural noun for *a few, some*; **quelques-uns**, *m.*, **quelques-unes**, *f.*, are used absolutely, with the same meaning. **Plusieurs** means *several*, and is invariable.

Le Danois a-t-il quelques pommes?	<i>Has the Dane a few apples?</i>
Il en a quelques-unes.	<i>He has a few.</i>
Il en a plusieurs.	<i>He has several.</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Combien de poires avez-vous ?	<i>How many pears have you ?</i>
Nous avons beaucoup de poires.	<i>We have many pears.</i>
Nous en avons beaucoup.	<i>We have many (of them).</i>
Nous avons assez de cerises.	<i>We have cherries enough.</i>
Nous n'en avons pas assez.	<i>We have not enough (of them).</i>
Vous n'avez guère de pêches.	<i>You have but few peaches.</i>
Votre jardinier a bien des pêches.	<i>Your gardener has many peaches.</i>
N'avez-vous pas de pêches ?	<i>Have you no peaches ?</i>
J'ai beaucoup de pêches et d'abricots.	<i>I have many peaches and apricots.</i>
Le boucher a-t-il quelque chose de bon ?	<i>Has the butcher anything good ?</i>
Il a quelque chose de bon et de mauvais.	<i>He has something good and bad.</i>
Il n'a rien de bon.	<i>He has not anything (nothing) good.</i>
Quelles poires <i>f.</i> avez-vous ?	<i>What or which pears have you ?</i>
Nous avons celles de votre sœur.	<i>We have your sister's.</i>
Quel habit <i>m.</i> avez-vous ?	<i>Which or what coat have you ?</i>
Nous avons celui du tailleur.	<i>We have the tailor's.</i>
Qu'avez-vous de bon ?	<i>What have you good ?</i>
Lequel avez-vous ?	<i>Which (one) have you ?</i>
Lesquels votre frère a-t-il ?	<i>Which (ones) has your brother ?</i>

EXERCISE 29.

Abricot, <i>m.</i> <i>apricot.</i>	Fleur, <i>f.</i> <i>flower.</i>	Pomme, <i>f.</i> <i>apple.</i>
Ananas, <i>m.</i> <i>pine-apple.</i>	Jardin, <i>m.</i> <i>garden.</i>	Pomme de terre, <i>f.</i> <i>potato.</i>
Beurre, <i>m.</i> <i>butter.</i>	Légume, <i>m.</i> <i>vegetable.</i>	
Cerise, <i>f.</i> <i>cherry.</i>	Magasin, <i>m.</i> <i>warehouse.</i>	Prune, <i>f.</i> <i>plum.</i>
Épicier, <i>m.</i> <i>grocer.</i>	Oncle, <i>m.</i> <i>uncle.</i>	Sucre, <i>m.</i> <i>sugar.</i>
Étranger, <i>m.</i> <i>-ère, f.</i>	Poire, <i>f.</i> <i>pear.</i>	Thé, <i>m.</i> <i>tea.</i>
<i>foreign.</i>	Poivre, <i>m.</i> <i>pepper.</i>	

1. Combien de pommes de terre votre frère a-t-il ? 2. Il n'en a pas beaucoup. 3. L'épicier a-t-il beaucoup de sucre dans son magasin ? 4. Il n'en a guère, mais il a beaucoup de beurre et de poivre. 5. Votre jardinier a-t-il beaucoup de cerises ? 6. Il a plus de cerises que de prunes. 7. Les prunes sont-elles meilleures que les cerises ? 8. Les cerises sont meilleures que les prunes. 9. Avez-vous quelques poires mûres ? 10. Nous en avons quelques-unes, nous avons aussi beaucoup d'ananas et d'abricots. 11. Votre oncle a-t-il quelque chose de bon dans son jardin ? 12. Il a quelque chose de bon et de beau. 13. Il a de beaux légumes et de belles fleurs. 14. Avez-vous des fleurs étrangères ? 15. J'en ai quelques-unes. 16. Lesquelles avez-vous ? 17. J'ai celles de votre frère et celles de votre jardinier. 18. N'avez-vous pas aussi les miennes ? 19. Non, Monsieur, je ne les ai pas. 20. Qui en a beaucoup ? 21. Personne n'en a beaucoup. 22. J'en ai quelques-unes. 23. Avez-vous assez de thé ? 24. J'en ai assez. 25. J'en ai plus que lui.

EXERCISE 30.

1. Has your gardener many vegetables? 2. Yes, Sir, he has many. 3. How many gardens has he? 4. He has several gardens and several houses. 5. Have you many books? 6. I have but few, but my friend has many. 7. What coat has your brother? 8. He has a good cloth coat. 9. Has your uncle many peaches? 10. He has but few peaches, but he has many cherries. 11. How many plums has the tailor? 12. The tailor has no plums, he has cloth and silk. 13. What silk has your friend the merchant? 14. He has a great deal (*beaucoup*) of silk, and a great deal of money. 15. Has the gardener anything good in (*dans*) his garden? 16. He has many pine-apples. 17. Has he more vegetables than fruit? 18. He has more of this than of those. 19. Has your uncle many pears and cherries? 20. He has a few, and he has many apples and plums. 21. Have you a few? 22. I have still many, but my brother has no more. 23. Which peaches has he? 24. He has large (*grosses*) peaches. 25. Which (ones) have you? 26. I have the best peaches. 27. Has the merchant anything good in his warehouse? 28. He has nothing good in his warehouse, but he has something good in his garden. 29. How many potatoes has the foreigner? 30. He has not many. 31. Has he good vegetables? 32. He has good vegetables. 33. Is he right or wrong? 34. He is right, but you are wrong. 35. He has neither this book nor that, he has the bookseller's.

SECTION XVIII.

1. The relative pronoun **que**, *whom*, *which*, *that*, and the conjunction **que**, *that*, are never omitted in French, and must be repeated before every verb depending on them. [§ 106.]

Les crayons que j'ai sont meilleurs que ceux que vous avez. *The pencils (which) I have are better than those (which) you have.*

2. **Ne**, before the verb, and **que** after it, are used in the sense of *only*, *but*.

Je n'ai qu'un ami. *I have but one friend.*

3. **L'un et l'autre** means *both*; **les uns et les autres**, *these and those, the latter and the former*.

Vous avez l'un et l'autre. *You have both.*

4. CARDINAL AND ORDINAL NUMBERS AS FAR AS TWENTY [§ 23 to 27.]

Cardinal.		Ordinal.	
Un, m. une, f.	One.	Premi-er, m. ère, f.	First.
Deux,	Two.	{ Second, m. e, f. }	{ Second.
Trois,	Three.	Deuxième,	
Quatre,	Four.	Troisième,	Third.
Cinq,	Five.	Quatrième,	Fourth.
Six,	Six.	Cinquième,	Fifth.
		Sixième,	Sixth.

	<i>Cardinal.</i>		<i>Ordinal.</i>
Sept,	<i>Seven.</i>	Septième,	<i>Seventh.</i>
Huit,	<i>Eight.</i>	Huitième,	<i>Eighth.</i>
Neuf,	<i>Nine.</i>	Neuvième,	<i>Ninth.</i>
Dix,	<i>Ten.</i>	Dixième,	<i>Tenth.</i>
Onze,	<i>Eleven.</i>	Onzième,	<i>Eleventh.</i>
Douze,	<i>Twelve.</i>	Douzième,	<i>Twelfth.</i>
Treize,	<i>Thirteen.</i>	Treizième,	<i>Thirteenth.</i>
Quatorze,	<i>Fourteen.</i>	Quatorzième,	<i>Fourteenth.</i>
Quinze,	<i>Fifteen.</i>	Quinzième,	<i>Fifteenth.</i>
Seize,	<i>Sixteen.</i>	Seizième,	<i>Sixteenth.</i>
Dix-sept,	<i>Seventeen.</i>	Dix-septième,	<i>Seventeenth.</i>
Dix-huit,	<i>Eighteen.</i>	Dix-huitième,	<i>Eighteenth.</i>
Dix-neuf,	<i>Nineteen.</i>	Dix-neuvième,	<i>Nineteenth.</i>
Vingt,	<i>Twenty.</i>	Vingtième,	<i>Twentieth.</i>

In French, *o* is *zéro*.

5. The cardinal numbers are used in French for the day of the month, except the *first*, for which the ordinal number *premier* is substituted :—

Le dix août, le cinq juillet. *The tenth of August, the fifth of July.*
 Le premier du mois prochain. *The first of next month.*

6. The verb **être**, *to be*, is used in mentioning [§ 27 (1)] the day of the month. The verb **avoir**, *to have*, is also, but more rarely, used :—

Quel jour du mois avons-nous ? *What day of the month have we ?*
 Nous avons le vingt. *We have the twentieth.*
 Quel jour est-ce aujourd'hui ? *What day is it to-day ?*
 C'est aujourd'hui le dix. *To-day is the tenth.*

7. Before the word *onze*, the article *le* or *la* is not elided [§ 143] :—

C'est aujourd'hui le onze décembre. *We have (it is) the eleventh of December.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

L'ouvrier a-t-il les mêmes outils que vous ?	<i>Has the workman the same tools as you ?</i>
Les maisons que j'ai sont-elles aussi belles que celles que vous avez ?	<i>Are the houses which I have as beautiful as those which you have ?</i>
Combien de francs avez-vous ?	<i>How many francs have you ?</i>
Je n'ai que dix francs, mais mon frère en a plus de vingt.	<i>I have only ten francs, but my brother has more than twenty (of them).</i>
Avons-nous le quinze du mois ?	<i>Have we the fifteenth day of the month ?</i>
Non, Monsieur, nous n'avons que le onze.	<i>No, Sir, we have only the eleventh.</i>
Lequel de ces deux volumes avez-vous ?	<i>Which of those two volumes have you ?</i>
J'ai l'un et l'autre.	<i>I have both.</i>
Avez-vous la première place ou la deuxième ?	<i>Have you the first or the second place ?</i>
J'ai la première et mon frère a la deuxième.	<i>I have the first, and my brother has the second.</i>

EXERCISE 31.

Aujourd'hui, <i>to-day</i> .	Février, m. <i>February</i> .	Œuvres, f. <i>works</i> .
Cannelle, f. <i>cinnamon</i> .	Franc, m. <i>franc</i> .	Outil, m. <i>tool</i> .
Centime, m. <i>centime</i>	Histoire, f. <i>history</i> .	Ouvrage, m. <i>work</i> .
—the 100th part of	Italien, m. <i>Italian</i> .	Place, f. <i>place</i> .
a franc.	Kilogramme, m. <i>kilo-</i>	Quart, m. <i>quarter</i> .
Combien, <i>how much</i> ,	gramme—about two	Septembre, m. <i>Sep-</i>
how many.	pounds.	tember.
Cravate, f. <i>cravat</i> .	Menuisier, m. <i>joiner</i> .	Volume, m. <i>volume</i> .
Demi, <i>half</i> .	Mousseline, f. <i>muslin</i> .	

1. Le cheval que vous avez est-il bon? 2. Il est meilleur que celui que vous avez et que celui de notre ami. 3. Combien d'enfants avez-vous? 4. Je n'en ai qu'un, mais l'Italien en a plus que moi. 5. Avons-nous le dix septembre? 6. Non, Monsieur, nous avons le neuf février. 7. Avez-vous ma cravate de soie ou ma cravate de mousseline? 8. J'ai l'une et l'autre. 9. Avez-vous huit kilogrammes de cannelle? 10. Non, Monsieur, je n'en ai qu'un demi-kilogramme. 11. Combien de francs avez-vous, Monsieur? 12. Je n'ai que cinquante centimes, mais mon ami a deux francs. 13. Votre sœur a-t-elle vingt-cinq centimes? 14. Oui, Monsieur, elle a vingt-cinq centimes. 15. N'est-ce pas aujourd'hui le premier août? 16. Non, Monsieur, c'est aujourd'hui le six septembre. 17. Est-ce aujourd'hui le dix? 18. Non, Monsieur, c'est le onze. 19. Votre frère a-t-il la première place? 20. Non, Monsieur, il a la dixième. 21. Votre menuisier a-t-il beaucoup d'outils? 22. Oui, Monsieur, il en a beaucoup. 23. Cet ouvrage a-t-il dix volumes? 24. Non, Monsieur, il n'en a que neuf? 25. J'ai le sixième volume des œuvres de Molière et le premier volume de l'histoire de France de Michelet.

EXERCISE 32.

1. Is that cinnamon good? 2. That cinnamon is better than yours and your brother's [R. 1]. 3. What day of the month is it to-day? 4. It is the sixth. 5. Has your father twenty francs? 6. No, Sir, he has only six francs fifty centimes. 7. How many volumes has your work? 8. It has many, it has fifteen. 9. Has the joiner read (*lu*) the second volume of Michelet's history of France. 10. Yes, Sir, he has read the second volume (of it). 11. Has your friend Molière's works? 12. He has only two volumes of them. 13. Have you my cloth coat or my velvet coat? 14. We have both. 15. We have this and that. 16. How much cinnamon have you? 17. We have two kilogrammes. 18. How many centimes has the merchant? 19. He has twenty-six. 20. Have you the third or the fourth place? 21. I have neither the third nor the fourth, I have the tenth. 22. Are you not ashamed to-day? 23. No, Sir, I am not ashamed, but I am afraid. 24. Have you twenty-five centimes? 25. No, Sir, but I have fifty centimes.

26. Have we the sixth of July? 27. No, Sir, we have the fourth of March. 28. Has your uncle six children? 29. No, Sir, he has only one. 30. Have you ten kilogrammes of meat? 31. I have only five kilogrammes. 32. Is the butcher's meat good? 33. It (*elle*) is not very good. 34. How many kilogrammes have you (of it)? 35. I have only two, but my brother has four.

SECTION XIX.

1. For the time of the day, the verb **être** is used impersonally in French, in the same manner as the verb *to be* is used in English for the same object. The word **heure**, sing., **heures**, plur., represents the English expressions, *o'clock*, or *time*, and must always be expressed.

Quelle heure est-il?	<i>What o'clock (time) is it?</i>
Il est une heure.	<i>It is one o'clock.</i>
Il est dix heures.	<i>It is ten, it is ten o'clock.</i>

2. **Midi** is used for *twelve o'clock* in the day, and **minuit**, for *midnight*, or *twelve at night*. *Douze heures* is never used except in the sense of *twelve hours*.

Est-il midi? Est-il minuit? *Is it noon? Is it midnight?*

3. **Un quart, et demi** [§ 83 (2)], answer to the English expressions, *a quarter, half past, after, &c.*

Il est neuf heures un quart.	<i>It is a quarter past nine.</i>
Il est midi et demi.	<i>It is half past twelve.</i>
Il est une heure et demie.	<i>It is half past one.</i>

4. **Moins un quart, moins vingt minutes**, answer to the English expressions, *a quarter to, twenty minutes to, &c.*

Il est dix heures moins un quart.	<i>It is a quarter to ten.</i>
Il est neuf heures moins dix minutes.	<i>It is ten minutes to nine.</i>

5. The word **demi**, preceding the word **heure**, does not vary, but is joined to it by a hyphen. Placed after it, it agrees with it in gender only [§ 83 (2)].

Une demi-heure.	<i>Half an hour.</i>
Une heure et demie.	<i>An hour and a half.</i>
Trois heures et demie.	<i>Three hours and a half.</i>

6. The verb **avoir** is used actively [§ 44 (2) (3)] in French in speaking of age, and the word **an**, *year*, is always expressed.

Quel âge avez-vous?	<i>How old are you? i.e., What age have you?</i>
J'ai plus de vingt ans.	<i>I am more than twenty.</i>

7. **Plus de, moins de**, are used for *more than, less than*, before a number:—

Avons-nous plus de dix mètres de cette toile de Hollande ? *Have we more than ten metres (yards) of this holland (Holland linen) ?*
 Vous en avez moins de six aunes. *You have less than six ells of it.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Il n'est pas encore deux heures. *It is not yet two o'clock.*
 Est-il une heure et demie ? *Is it half past one ?*
 Il est midi un quart ou midi et demi. *It is a quarter or half past twelve.*
 Il est huit heures moins un quart. *It is a quarter to eight.*
 Quel âge votre fils a-t-il ? *How old is your son ?*
 Il n'a que dix-huit ans. *He is only eighteen years old.*
 Votre beau-frère n'a-t-il pas plus de dix-neuf ans ? *Is not your brother-in-law more than nineteen years old ?*
 Ma belle-sœur n'a pas moins de dix-huit ans et demi. *My sister-in-law is not less than eighteen years and a half.*
 Est-il plus de dix heures à votre montre ? *Is it more than ten o'clock by your watch ?*
 Il n'est que neuf heures à ma pendule. *It is only nine by my clock.*
 Votre fils est-il plus âgé que le mien ? *Is your son older than mine ?*
 Il est plus jeune que le vôtre. *He is younger than yours.*

EXERCISE 33.

Âgé, -e, <i>old.</i>	Belle-sœur, f. <i>sister-</i>	Jeune, <i>young.</i>
Aune, f. <i>ell.</i>	<i>in-law.</i>	Jour, m. <i>day.</i>
Beau-frère, m. <i>bro-</i>	Cela, <i>that.</i>	Maintenant, <i>now.</i>
<i>ther-in-law.</i>	Cinquante, <i>fifty.</i>	Mars, m. <i>March.</i>
Beau-fils, m. <i>son-in-</i>	Cousin germain, m. <i>first cousin.</i>	Mètre, m. <i>metre — a</i>
<i>law.</i>		<i>French measure about</i>
Beau-père, m. <i>father-</i>	Enfant, m. <i>child.</i>	<i>three French feet.*</i>
<i>in-law.</i>	Février, m. <i>February.</i>	Mois, m. <i>month.</i>
Belle-mère, f. <i>mother-</i>	Pendule, f. <i>clock.</i>	Ruban, m. <i>ribbon.</i>
<i>in-law.</i>	Indienne, f. <i>printed</i>	Tard, <i>late.</i>
	<i>calico.</i>	

1. Votre beau-frère est-il plus âgé que le mien ? 2. Le vôtre est plus jeune que le mien. 3. Quel âge a votre belle-mère ? 4. Elle a près de cinquante ans. 5. Quelle heure est-il maintenant ? 6. Il est six heures passées. 7. Êtes-vous certain de cela ? 8. Oui, Monsieur, j'en suis certain. 9. Est-il plus de deux heures à votre montre ? 10. Il n'est que midi à ma montre. 11. Avez-vous plus de cinq ans, mon enfant ? 12. Je n'ai pas encore quatre ans. 13. Avez-vous plus de six mètres d'indienne ? 14. J'en ai moins de trois mètres. 15. Combien d'aunes de ruban votre beau-père a-t-il ? 16. Il n'a guère de ruban, il n'en a qu'une demi-aune. 17. Est-il midi moins un quart ? 18. Il est plus tard, Monsieur, il est

* The French *mètre* is exactly 39.371 inches English measure ; it is therefore longer than the English yard by about $3\frac{1}{2}$ inches, or more accurately $3\frac{1}{8}$ inches.

midi un quart. 19. Quel jour du mois avons-nous? 20. Nous avons le six octobre. 21. N'est-ce pas le huit février que . . .? 22. Non, Madame, c'est le huit mars. 23. Combien de jardins a votre cousin germain? 24. Il n'en a qu'un, mais il est très beau. 25. Il en a plus de dix.

EXERCISE 34.

1. How old is your brother-in-law? 2. He is fifty years old. 3. Is your sister-in-law older than mine? 4. No, Sir, my sister-in-law is younger than yours. 5. Is your son twenty-five years old? 6. No, Madam, he is only sixteen. 7. What day of the month have we to-day? 8. We have the eleventh. 9. Have you the twentieth volume of Chateaubriand's works? 10. No, Madam, we have the eleventh. 11. What o'clock is it, Sir? 12. It is only twelve o'clock. 13. Is it not later? 14. It is a quarter to one. 15. It is a quarter past five. 16. How many yards of this holland (*toile de Hollande*, f.) have you? 17. I have ten ells and a half. 18. I have six metres of it, and sixteen yards of Italian silk. 19. Is your mother-in-law younger than your father-in-law? 20. She is younger than he. 21. Are you twenty years old? 22. No, Sir, I am only nineteen and a half. 23. Are you sure (*sûr*) that it is ten o'clock? 24. Yes, Madam, I am sure of it. 25. Is it twenty minutes to ten? 26. No, Sir, it is a quarter to twelve (*midi*). 27. How many houses have you? 28. I have only one, but my sister-in-law has two. 29. Have you mine (f.) or yours? 30. I have neither yours nor mine, I have your son-in-law's. 31. Has your mother-in-law five yards of that printed calico? 32. She has only two yards of it. 33. What o'clock is it by (*à*) your watch? 34. It is half past four by my watch. 35. It is more than seven o'clock by mine (*à la mienne*).

SECTION XX.

THE FOUR CONJUGATIONS OF VERBS.

1. The four classes or conjugations, into which the French verbs are divided, are chiefly distinguished by the endings of the present of the infinitive [§ 45]. The first conjugation ends in **er**; as, **chanter**, *to sing*; **donner**, *to give*; **parler**, *to speak*; **chercher**, *to seek*.

The second conjugation ends in **ir**; as, **chérir**, *to cherish*; **punir**, *to punish*; **munir**, *to provide*; **finir**, *to finish*.

The termination of the infinitive of the regular verbs of the third conjugation, is **avoir**; as, **devoir**, *to owe*; **recevoir**, *to receive*; that of the irregular verbs is **oir**, as **valoir**, *to be worth*.

The fourth conjugation ends in **re**; as, **rendre**, *to render*; **fendre**, *to split*; **tendre**, *to stretch*; **vendre**, *to sell*.

2. A verb preceded by another verb (other than the auxili.

aries **avoir** and **être**, or by a preposition (other than **en**), is put in the present of the infinitive :—

Il va travailler ou lire. *He is going to work or to read.*

3. In French, verbs are often connected with others by prepositions not answering literally to those which accompany the same verbs in English. They also often come together without prepositions. The student will find in § 125, and following of the Second Part, lists of verbs, with the prepositions which they require after them.

4. The following idioms are followed by the preposition **de** when they come before a verb : (§ 128) **avoir besoin**, *to want* ; **avoir coutume**, *to be accustomed* ; **avoir dessein**, *to intend*, *to design* ; **avoir envie**, *to have a wish, a desire* ; **avoir honte**, *to be ashamed* ; **avoir intention**, or, *l'intention*, *to intend* ; **avoir le temps**, *to have time or leisure* ; **avoir le courage**, *to have courage* ; **avoir peur**, *to be afraid* ; **avoir raison**, *to be right* ; **avoir regret**, *to regret* ; **avoir tort**, *to be wrong* ; **avoir sujet**, *to have reason* ; **avoir soin**, *to take care*.

Cet enfant a besoin de manger. *That child wants to eat.*
Vous avez honte de courir. *You are ashamed of running.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous quelque chose à dire ?	<i>Have you anything to say ?</i>
Je n'ai rien à dire.	<i>I have nothing to say.</i>
Votre sœur n'a-t-elle rien à écrire ?	<i>Has your sister nothing to write ?</i>
Elle a deux lettres à écrire.	<i>She has two letters to write.</i>
A-t-elle le temps de les écrire ?	<i>Has she time to write them ?</i>
Elle n'a pas dessein de les écrire.	<i>She does not intend to write them.</i>
Elle n'a pas l'intention de les écrire.	<i>She does not intend to write them.</i>
Elle n'a pas envie de les écrire.	<i>She has no desire to write them.</i>
Avez-vous peur de danser ?	<i>Are you afraid to dance ?</i>
Je n'ai pas honte de danser.	<i>I am not ashamed to dance.</i>
Votre cousin a raison de sortir.	<i>Your cousin is right to go out.</i>
N'avez-vous pas soin d'écrire ?	<i>Do you not take care to write ?</i>
Avez-vous le courage d'aller à la guerre ?	<i>Have you the courage to go to the war ?</i>

EXERCISE 35.

Acheter, <i>to buy.</i>	Fatigué, -e, <i>tired, weary.</i>	Mars, m. <i>March.</i>
Champ, m. <i>field.</i>	Journal, m. <i>newspaper.</i>	Ne—rien, <i>nothing.</i>
Danser, <i>to dance.</i>	Juillet, m. <i>July.</i>	Page, f. <i>page.</i>
De bonne heure, <i>early.</i>	Juin, m. <i>June.</i>	Seize, <i>sixteen.</i>
Dormir, <i>to sleep.</i>	Lire, <i>to read.</i>	Travailler, <i>to work,</i>
Écrire, <i>to write.</i>	Marcher, <i>to walk.</i>	<i>labour.</i>
Faire, <i>to make.</i>		

1. Votre belle-mère a-t-elle quelque chose à faire ? 2. Elle n'a rien à faire. 3. A-t-elle deux pages à écrire ? 4. Non, Monsieur, elle n'en a qu'une. 5. Avez-vous l'intention de lire ce journal ? 6. Oui, Madame, j'ai l'intention de le lire. 7. Avez-vous raison d'acheter un habit de velours ? 8. J'ai

raison d'en acheter un. 9. Votre petite fille a-t-elle besoin de dormir? 10. Oui, Monsieur, elle a besoin de dormir, elle est fatiguée. 11. Avez-vous peur de tomber? 12. Je n'ai pas peur de tomber. 13. Le jardinier a-t-il le temps de travailler dans les champs? 14. Il n'a pas envie de travailler dans les champs. 15. Vos champs sont-ils aussi grands que les miens? 16. Ils sont plus grands que les vôtres. 17. Avez-vous honte de marcher? 18. Je n'ai pas honte de marcher, mais j'ai honte de danser. 19. Quel âge a votre fils? 20. Il a seize ans. 21. Avons-nous le deux mars ou le cinq juin? 22. Nous avons le vingt-huit juillet. 23. Est-il midi? 24. Non, Monsieur, il n'est pas encore midi, il n'est que onze heures et demie. 25. Il est encore de bonne heure.

EXERCISE 36.

1. What has your brother-in-law to do? 2. He has letters to write. 3. Does he want to work? 4. Yes, Sir, he wants to work. 5. Does he intend to read my book? 6. He does not intend to read your book, he has no time. 7. Is your sister ashamed to walk? 8. My sister is not ashamed to walk, but my brother is ashamed to dance. 9. Has your cousin anything to say? 10. My cousin has nothing to say, she is afraid to speak (*parler*). 11. Is it late? 12. No, Madam, it is not late, it is early. 13. Have you a wish to read my sister's letter (f.)? 14. Have you the courage to go to the war? 15. I have not the courage to go to the war. 16. Is your sister right to buy a silk dress (f.)? 17. Yes, Sir, she is right to buy one. 18. Does that child want to sleep? 19. No, Sir, that child does not want to sleep, he is not tired. 20. Has your brother's gardener a wish to work in my garden? 21. He has a wish to work in (*dans*) mine. 22. How old is that child? 23. That child is ten years old. 24. What is the day of the month? 25. It is the ninth of March. 26. Are you afraid to walk? 27. I am not afraid to walk, but I am tired. 28. Have you time to read my brother's book? 29. I have time to read his book. 30. Has the joiner a wish to speak? 31. He has a wish to work and to read. 32. Is your son afraid of falling? 33. He is not afraid of falling, but he is afraid of working. 34. What o'clock is it? 35. It is twelve (noon).

SECTION XXI.

1. The expressions *avoir besoin*, *to want*; *avoir soin*, *to take care*; *avoir honte*, *to be ashamed*; *avoir peur*, *to be afraid*, require also the preposition *de* before a noun. Those idioms mean literally, *to have need*, *to have care*, &c. :—

Avez-vous besoin de votre frère?	<i>Do you want your brother?</i>
J'ai soin de mes effets.	<i>I take care of my things.</i>
Il a honte de sa conduite.	<i>He is ashamed of his conduct.</i>
Elle a peur du chien.	<i>She is afraid of the dog.</i>

2. As these expressions require the preposition **de** before their object, they will, of course, require the same preposition before the pronoun representing that object :—

J'ai besoin de vous.	<i>I want you.</i>
J'ai soin de lui.	<i>I take care of him.</i>
De qui avez-vous besoin ?	<i>Whom do you want ?</i>
De quoi a-t-elle besoin ?	<i>What does she want ?</i>

3. When the object is not a person, and has been mentioned before, the pronoun **en** takes the place of the preposition **de**, and that of the pronoun representing the object :—

Avez-vous besoin de votre cheval ?	<i>Do you want your horse ?</i>
J'en ai besoin.	<i>I want it.</i>

4. The expressions **être fâché**, *to be sorry* ; **être étonné**, *to be astonished* ; **être content**, *to be satisfied*, require the preposition **de** before a noun or pronoun [§ 86] :—

Je suis fâché de son malheur.	<i>I am sorry for his misfortune.</i>
Je suis étonné de sa conduite.	<i>I am astonished at his conduct.</i>
Je suis content de lui.	<i>I am pleased with him.</i>

5. **Être fâché**, in the sense of *to be angry*, requires the preposition **contre** before a noun or pronoun referring to a person.

Vous êtes fâché contre moi.	<i>You are angry with me.</i>
-----------------------------	-------------------------------

6. For rules on the government of adjectives, see § 87, and following sections.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous besoin d'argent ?	<i>Do you want money ?</i>
J'ai besoin d'argent.	<i>I want money.</i>
Je n'en ai pas besoin [R. 3].	<i>I do not want any.</i>
En avez-vous besoin ?	<i>Do you want any ?</i>
J'en ai besoin, et mon frère en a besoin aussi.	<i>I want some, and my brother wants some too.</i>
Avez-vous besoin de votre frère ?	<i>Do you want your brother ?</i>
J'ai besoin de lui.*	<i>I want him.</i>
De quoi avez-vous besoin ?	<i>What do you want ?</i>
J'ai besoin d'un dictionnaire.	<i>I want a dictionary.</i>
Avez-vous soin de votre livre ?	<i>Do you take care of your book ?</i>
J'en ai soin.	<i>I take care of it.</i>
Avez-vous soin de votre père ?	<i>Do you take care of your father ?</i>
J'ai soin de lui.*	<i>I take care of him.</i>
Votre frère est-il fâché contre moi ?	<i>Is your brother angry with me ?</i>
Il est fâché contre votre sœur.	<i>He is angry with your sister.</i>
Avez-vous peur de ce chien ?	<i>Are you afraid of this dog ?</i>
J'en ai peur.	<i>I am afraid of him.</i>
De qui avez-vous honte ?	<i>Of whom are you ashamed ?</i>
Je n'ai honte de personne.	<i>I am ashamed of nobody.</i>
Avez-vous besoin de quelque chose ?	<i>Do you want anything ?</i>
Je n'ai besoin de rien.	<i>I want nothing.</i>

* The word **en** should be avoided as much as possible in relation to persons.

EXERCISE 37.

Besoin, m. <i>want, need.</i>	Fatigué, -e, <i>weary,</i>	Parler, <i>to speak.</i>
Conduite, f. <i>conduct.</i>	<i>tired.</i>	Reposer, <i>to rest.</i>
Domestique, m. <i>servant.</i>	Garçon, m. <i>boy.</i>	Soin, m. <i>care.</i>
Effets, m. <i>things, clothes.</i>	Jeune homme, m.	Travailler, <i>to work.</i>
Étonné, -e, <i>astonished.</i>	<i>young man.</i>	Vieux, <i>old.</i>
Fâché, -e, <i>sorry, angry.</i>	Lire, <i>to read.</i>	

1. Qui a besoin de pain? 2. Personne n'en a besoin. 3. N'avez-vous pas besoin de votre domestique? 4. Si, Monsieur, j'ai besoin de lui.* 5. Votre jardinier a-t-il soin de votre jardin? 6. Oui, Madame, il en a soin. 7. A-t-il bien soin de son vieux père? 8. Oui, Monsieur, il a bien soin de lui. 9. Votre garçon a-t-il honte de sa conduite? 10. Oui, Monsieur, il en a honte. 11. Avez-vous peur de ce cheval-ci ou de celui-là? 12. Je n'ai peur ni de celui-ci ni de celui-là. 13. Notre domestique a-t-il soin de vos effets? 14. Il en a bien soin. 15. Avez-vous peur de parler ou de lire? 16. Je n'ai peur ni de parler ni de lire. 17. Êtes-vous étonné de cette affaire? 18. Je n'en suis pas étonné. 19. En êtes-vous fâché? 20. Oui, Monsieur, j'en suis bien fâché. 21. Avez-vous besoin de ce garçon? 22. Oui, Madame, j'ai besoin de lui. 23. N'avez-vous pas besoin de son livre? 24. Je n'en ai pas besoin. 25. Avez-vous envie de travailler ou de lire? 26. Je n'ai envie ni de travailler ni de lire, j'ai envie de me reposer, car je suis fatigué.

EXERCISE 38.

1. Do you want your servant? 2. Yes, Sir, I want him. 3. Does your brother-in-law want you? 4. He wants me and my brother.* 5. Does he not want money? 6. He does not want money, he has enough. 7. Is your brother sorry for his conduct? 8. He is very sorry for his conduct, and very angry with you. 9. Does he take good (*bien*) care of his books? 10. He takes good care of them. 11. How many volumes has he? 12. He has more than you, he has more than twenty. 13. What does the young man want? 14. He wants his clothes. 15. Do you want to rest (*vous reposer*)? 16. Is not your brother astonished at this? 17. He is astonished at it. 18. Have you a wish to read your brother's books? 19. I have a wish to read them, but I have no time. 20. Have you time to work? 21. I have time to work, but I have no time to read. 22. Does the younger brother take care of his things? 23. He takes good care of them. 24. Is that little boy afraid of the dog? 25. He is not afraid of the dog, he is afraid of the horse. 26. Do you want bread? 27. I do not want any. 28. Are you pleased with your brother's conduct? 29. I am pleased with it. 30. Has your brother a wish to read my

* Repeat the preposition *de*.

book? 31. He has no desire to read your book, he is weary.
 32. Is that young man angry with you or with his friends?
 ~33. He is neither angry with me nor with his friends. 34.
 Do you want my dictionary? 35. I want your dictionary and
 your brother's.

SECTION XXII.

1. If the ending or distinguishing characteristic of the conjugation of a verb, in the present of the infinitive, be removed, the part remaining will be the *stem* of the verb:—

Chant-er Fin-ir Rec-evoir Rend-re

2. To that *stem* are added, in the different simple tenses of a regular verb, the terminations proper to the conjugation to which it belongs [§ 62].

3. PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Chant-ant Fin-issant Rec-evant Rend-ant
Singing *Finishing* *Receiving* *Rendering*

4. PARTICIPLE PAST.

Chant-é Fin-i Reç-u Rend-u
Sung *Finished* *Received* *Rendered*

5. TERMINATION OF THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE.

Je	chant	-e	fin	-is	reç	-ois	rend	-s
	<i>sing</i>		<i>finish</i>		<i>receive</i>		<i>render</i>	
Tu	parl	-es	chér	-is	aperç	-ois	vend	-s
	<i>speakest</i>		<i>cherishest</i>		<i>perceivest</i>		<i>sellest</i>	
Il	donn	-e	fourn	-it	perç	-oit	tend	
	<i>gives</i>		<i>furnishes</i>		<i>gathers</i>		<i>tends</i>	
Nous	cherch	-ons	pun	-issons	conc	-evons	entend	-ons
	<i>seek</i>		<i>punish</i>		<i>conceive</i>		<i>hear</i>	
Vous	port	-ez	sais	-issez	d	-evez	perd	-ez
	<i>carry</i>		<i>seize</i>		<i>owe</i>		<i>lose</i>	
Ils	aim	-ent	un	-issent	déc	-oivent	mord	-ent
	<i>love, like</i>		<i>unite</i>		<i>deceive</i>		<i>bite</i>	

6. The present of the indicative has but one form in French, therefore **Je chante**, may be rendered in English by, *I sing, I do sing, I am singing.*

7. The plural of the present of the indicative may be formed from the participle present by changing **ant** into **ons, ez, ent**. Ex.: **chantant**, *nous chantons*; **finissant**, *nous finissons*; **recevant**, *nous recevons*; **rendant**, *nous rendons*.

8. This rule holds good not only in all the regular, but in almost all the irregular verbs.

9. Verbs may be conjugated interrogatively in French (except in the first person singular of the present of the indicative of a few verbs) [95 (4) (5)], by placing the subject, when it is a personal pronoun, or **ce**, or **on**, after the verb in all the simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle in the compound tenses.

Chantez-vous bien ?	<i>Do you sing well ?</i>
Avez-vous bien chanté ?	<i>Have you sung well ?</i>
N'avez-vous pas bien chanté ?	<i>Have you not sung well ?</i>
[Sect. 5, R. 2.]	
Ne chantez-vous pas bien ?	<i>Do you not sing well ?</i>
Votre père parle-t-il bien ?	<i>Does your father speak well ?</i>
[Sect. 2, R. 6—Sect. 4, R. 4.]	

10. The verb **porter** means *to carry*. It means also *to wear*, in speaking of garments; **apporter** means *to bring*, and **emporter** *to carry away*; **aimer** means *to love, to like, to be fond of*, and takes the preposition *à* before another verb.

Quel habit portez-vous ?	<i>What coat do you wear ?</i>
Je porte un habit de drap noir.	<i>I wear a coat of black cloth.</i>
Qu'apporte votre frère ?	<i>What does your brother bring ?</i>
[Sect. 2, R. 6.]	
Il apporte de l'argent à son ami.	<i>He brings money to his friend.</i>

11. A noun used in a general sense [§ 77 (1)] takes the article *le, la, l', or les*.

Aimez-vous le bœuf ou le mouton ?	<i>Do you like beef or mutton ?</i>
Je n'aime ni le bœuf ni le mouton.	<i>I like neither beef nor mutton.</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Chantez-vous une chanson italienne ?	<i>Do you sing an Italian song ?</i>
Nous chantons des chansons allemandes.	<i>We sing German songs.</i>
Portez-vous ce livre à l'homme ?	<i>Do you carry this book to the man ?</i>
Non, je le porte à mon frère.	<i>No, I carry it to my brother.</i>
Emportez-vous tout votre argent ?	<i>Do you carry away all your money ?</i>
J'en emporte seulement une partie.	<i>I carry away only a part of it.</i>
Finissez-vous votre leçon aujourd'hui ?	<i>Do you finish your lesson to-day ?</i>
Nous la finissons ce matin.	<i>We finish it this morning.</i>
N'aimez-vous pas les enfants attentifs ?	<i>Do you not like attentive children ?</i>
Je les aime beaucoup.	<i>I like them much.</i>
Ne recevez-vous pas beaucoup de lettres ?	<i>Do you not receive many letters ?</i>
Nous en recevons beaucoup.	<i>We receive many letters.</i>
Vendez-vous beaucoup de marchandises ?	<i>Do you sell many goods ?</i>
Nous en vendons beaucoup.	<i>We sell many.</i>
Votre frère aime le bœuf et le mouton.	<i>Your brother likes beef and mutton.</i>

EXERCISE 39.

[We shall hereafter put a hyphen between the stem and the termination of the verbs placed in the vocabularies. The number indicates the conjugation.]

Aim-er, 1. <i>to love, to</i> Assez, enough.	Chapeau, m. <i>hat</i> .
like, to be fond of. Autre, other.	Chér-ir, 2. <i>to cherish</i> .

Cherch-er, 1. <i>to seek,</i> <i>to look for.</i>	Guère, <i>but little.</i>	Non seulement, <i>only.</i>
Compagnon, m. <i>com-</i> <i>panion.</i>	Habits, m. p. <i>clothes,</i> <i>garments.</i>	Paille, f. <i>straw.</i>
Dame, f. <i>lady.</i>	Lecture, f. <i>reading.</i>	Perd-re, 4. <i>to lose.</i>
De bonne heure, <i>early.</i>	Mais, <i>but.</i>	Port-er, 1. <i>to carry,</i> <i>wear.</i>
D-evoir, 3. <i>to owe.</i>	Maison, f. <i>house.</i>	Rec-evoir, 3. <i>to receive.</i>
Donn-er, 1. <i>to give.</i>	Marchand, m. <i>mer-</i> <i>chant.</i>	Souvent, <i>often.</i>
Fin-ir, 2. <i>to finish.</i>	Marchandises, f. p. <i>p.</i>	Toujours, <i>always.</i>
Fourn-ir, 2. <i>to furnish.</i>	<i>goods.</i>	Travail, m. <i>labour.</i>
Gard-er, 1. <i>to keep.</i>	Neveu, m. <i>nephew.</i>	Trouv-er, 1. <i>to find.</i>
		Vend-re, 4. <i>to sell.</i>

1. Votre mère aime-t-elle la lecture? [R. 11.] 2. Oui. Mademoiselle, elle l'aime beaucoup plus que sa sœur. 3. Quel chapeau votre neveu porte-t-il? 4. Il porte un chapeau de soie, et je porte un chapeau de paille. 5. Cette dame aime-t-elle ses enfants? 6. Oui, Monsieur, elle les chérit. 7. Fournissez-vous des marchandises à ces marchands? 8. Je fournis des marchandises à ces marchands, et ils me donnent de l'argent. 9. Vos compagnons aiment-ils les beaux habits? [R. 11.] 10. Nos compagnons aiment les beaux habits et les bons livres. 11. Cherchez-vous mon frère? 12. Oui, Monsieur, je le cherche, mais je ne le trouve pas. 13. Votre frère perd-il son temps? 14. Il perd son temps et son argent. 15. Perdons-nous toujours notre temps? 16. Nous le perdons très souvent. 17. Devez-vous beaucoup d'argent? 18. J'en dois assez, mais je n'en dois pas beaucoup. 19. Vendez-vous vos deux maisons à notre médecin? 20. Je n'en vends qu'une, je garde l'autre pour ma belle-sœur. 21. Recevez-vous de l'argent aujourd'hui? 22. Nous n'en recevons guère. 23. Votre menuisier finit-il son travail de bonne heure? 24. Il le finit tard. 25. À quelle heure le finit-il? 26. Il le finit à midi et demi. 27. Nous finissons le nôtre à dix heures moins vingt minutes.

EXERCISE 40.

1. Does your companion like reading? 2. My companion does not like reading. 3. Does your father like good books? [R. 11.] 4. He likes good books and good clothes.* 5. Do you owe more than twenty dollars? 6. I only owe ten, but my brother owes more than fifteen. 7. Are you wrong to finish your work early? 8. I am right to finish mine early, and you are wrong not to (*de ne pas*) finish yours. 9. Do you receive much money to-day? 10. I receive but little. 11. Do we give our best books to that little child? 12. We do not give them, we keep them because (*parce que*) we want them. 13. Do you sell your two horses? 14. We do not sell our two horses, we keep one of them. 15. Do you finish your work this morning (*matin*)? 16. Yes, Sir, I finish it this morning early. 17. Does your brother-in-law like fine clothes? 18.

* Repeat the article.

Yes, Madam, he likes fine clothes. 19. Do you seek my nephew? 20. Yes, Sir, we seek him. 21. Does he lose his time? 22. He loses not only his time, but he loses his money. 23. How much money has he lost to-day? 24. He has lost more than ten dollars. 25. Does your joiner finish your house? 26. He finishes my house and my brother's. 27. Do you sell good hats? 28. We sell silk hats, and silk hats are good [R. 11]. 29. How old is your companion? 30. He is twelve years old, and his sister is fifteen. 31. Does your brother like meat? 32. He likes meat and bread. 33. Do you receive your goods at two o'clock? 34. We receive them at half past twelve. 35. We receive them at ten minutes to one.

SECTION XXIII.

1. There are in French, as in other languages, verbs which are called irregular, because their stem is altered instead of being invariable, as in the regular verbs; or because they have not the endings peculiar to their conjugation [§ 64].

2. Many irregular verbs have tenses which are conjugated regularly.

3. The singular of the present of the indicative of the irregular verbs, is almost always irregular.

4. In verbs ending in *oyer*, *uyer*, the *y* is changed into *i* before an *e* mute [§ 50].

5. PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

ALLER, 1. *to go*. ENVOYER, 1. *to send*. VENIR, 2. *to come*.

Je vais, *I go, do go*, J'envoie [R. 4.] *I send, do send, or am going*; Je viens, *I come, do come, or am coming*;

Tu vas,	Tu envoies,	Tu viens,
Il va,	Il envoie,	Il vient,
Nous allons,	Nous envoyons,	Nous venons,
Vous allez,	Vous envoyez,	Vous venez,
Ils vont.	Ils envoient [R. 4].	Ils viennent.

6. All verbs ending in *enir* are conjugated like *venir*.

7. The student will find in § 64 the irregular verbs alphabetically arranged. He should always consult that table when meeting with an irregular verb.

8. The expression, *à la maison*, is used for the English *at home*, *at his or her house*, &c.

Le chirurgien est-il à la maison? *Is the surgeon at home?*
 Mon frere est à la maison. *My brother is at home.*

9. The proposition *chez*, placed before a noun or pronoun, answers to the English, *at the house of*, *with* (meaning *at the residence of*), *among*, &c. [§ 138 (3)].

Chez moi, chez lui, chez elle. *At my house, at his house, at her house.*

Chez nous, chez vous, chez eux, m. chez elles, f. *At our house, at your house, at their house.*

That is, literally, *at the house of me, at the house of him, &c.*

Chez mon père, chez ma sœur. *At my father's, at my sister's.*

10. The word **avec** answers to the English *with*.

Le papier est sur la table avec vos plumes. *The paper is on the table with your pens.*

Venez avec nous, ou avec lui. *Come with us, or with him.*

11. The word **y** means *to it, at it, at that place, there*. It is generally placed before the verb, and refers always to something mentioned [§ 40, § 100, § 101].

Votre sœur est-elle chez vous? *Is your sister at your house?*
Oui, Monsieur, elle y est. *Yes, Sir, she is there.*

12. In French, an answer cannot, as in English, consist merely of an auxiliary or a verb preceded by a nominative pronoun; as, Do you come to my house to-day? *I do*. Have you books? *I have*. The sentence in French must be complete; as, *I go there; I have some*. The words **oui** or **non**, without a verb, would however suffice.

Venez-vous chez moi aujourd'hui? *Do you come to my house to-day?*
Oui, Monsieur, j'irai. *Yes, Sir, I will.*
Avez-vous des livres chez vous? *Have you books at home?*
Oui, Monsieur, nous en avons? *Yes, Sir, we have.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Où est le colonel?	<i>Where is the colonel?</i>
Il est chez son frère aîné.	<i>He is at his eldest brother's.</i>
N'est-il pas chez nous?	<i>Is he not at our house?</i>
Non, Monsieur, il n'y est pas.	<i>No, Sir, he is not.</i>
Madame votre mère est-elle à la maison? *	<i>Is your mother at home?</i>
Non, Madame, elle n'y est pas.	<i>No, Madam, she is not.</i>
Allez-vous chez nous, ou chez lui?	<i>Do you go to our house, or to his house?</i>
Nous allons chez le capitaine.	<i>We go to the captain's.</i>
N'est-il pas chez votre frère?	<i>Is he not at your brother's?</i>
Non, Monsieur, il est chez nous.	<i>No, Sir, he is at our house.</i>
N'envoyez-vous pas vos habits chez vos sœurs?	<i>Do you not send your clothes to your sisters'?</i>
Je les envoie chez elles.	<i>I send them to their house.</i>
N'allez-vous pas chez ce monsieur?	<i>Do you not go to that gentleman's?</i>
Je n'y vais pas, je n'ai pas le temps d'y aller aujourd'hui.	<i>I do not [R. 12]. I have not time to go there to-day.</i>

* The French, in speaking to a person whom they respect, prefix the word **Monsieur, Madame, or Mademoiselle**, to the word representing their interlocutor's relations or friends.

EXERCISE 41.

All-er, 1. <i>ir. to go.</i>	Hollandais, e, <i>Dutch.</i>	Peintre, m. <i>painter.</i>
Ami, m. <i>friend.</i>	Horloger, m. <i>watch-</i>	Relieur, m. <i>bookbinder.</i>
Associé, m. <i>partner.</i>	<i>maker.</i>	Rest-er, 1. <i>to remain,</i>
Capitaine, m. <i>captain.</i>	Magasin, m. <i>ware-</i>	<i>live.</i>
Demeur-er, 1. <i>to live,</i>	<i>house.</i>	Russe, <i>Russian.</i>
<i>dwell.</i>	Maison, f. <i>house.</i>	Ven-ir, 2. <i>ir. to come.</i>
Gilet, m. <i>waistcoat.</i>	Matin, m. <i>morning.</i>	Voisin, e, <i>neighbour.</i>

1. Où allez-vous, mon ami ? 2. Je vais chez Monsieur votre père, est-il à la maison ? 3. Il y est ce matin. 4. D'où venez-vous ? 5. Nous venons de chez vous et de chez votre sœur. 6. Qui est chez nous ? 7. Mon voisin y est aujourd'hui. 8. Où avez-vous l'intention de porter ces livres ? 9. J'ai l'intention de les porter chez le fils du médecin. 10. Avez-vous tort de rester chez vous ? 11. Je n'ai pas tort de rester à la maison. 12. L'horloger a-t-il de bonnes montres chez lui ? 13. Il n'a pas de montres chez lui, il en a dans son magasin. 14. Chez qui portez-vous vos livres ? 15. Je les porte chez le relieur. 16. Allez-vous chez le capitaine hollandais ? 17. Nous n'allons pas chez le capitaine hollandais, nous allons chez le major russe. 18. Est-il chez vous ou chez votre frère ? 19. Il demeure chez nous. 20. Ne demeurons-nous pas chez votre tailleur ? 21. Vous y demeurez. 22. D'où vient votre peintre ? 23. Il vient de chez son associé. 24. Où portez-vous mes souliers et mon gilet ? 25. Je porte vos souliers chez le cordonnier et votre gilet chez le tailleur.

EXERCISE 42.

1. Where does your friend go ? 2. He is going [Sect. 22. R. 6] to your house or to your brother's. 3. Does he not intend to go to your partner's ? 4. He intends to go there, but he has no time to-day. 5. What do you want to-day ? 6. I want my waistcoat, which (*qui*) is at the tailor's. 7. Are your clothes at the painter's ? 8. They are not there, they are at the tailor's. 9. Where do you live, my friend ? 10. I live at your sister-in-law's. 11. Is your father at home ? 12. No, Sir, he is not. 13. Where does your servant carry the wood ? 14. He carries it to the Russian captain's. 15. Does the gentleman who (*qui*) is with your father live at his house ? 16. No, Sir, he lives with me. 17. Is he wrong to live with you ? 18. No, Sir, he is right to live with me. 19. Whence (*d'où*) comes the carpenter ? 20. He comes from his partner's house. 21. Has he two partners ? 22. No, Sir, he has only one, who lives here (*ici*). 23. Have you time to go to our house this morning ? 24. We have time to go there. 25. We intend to go there and to speak to your sister. 26. Is she at your house ? 27. She is at her (own) house. 28. Have you bread, butter, and cheese at home ? 29. We have bread and butter there. 30. We have no cheese there, we do not like cheese. 31. Is your watch at the watchmaker's ? 32. It (*elle*) is there. 33. Have you two gold watches ? 34. I have only one gold watch.

35. Who intends to go to my father's this morning? 36. Nobody intends to go there.

SECTION XXIV.

1. In the first person singular of the present of the indicative of almost all those French verbs, which in that person have only one syllable, the common interrogative form [Sect. 22. 9] is not allowed. To render the verb interrogative, the expression **est-ce que** * is prefixed to the affirmative form [§ 95, (5) (6)].

Est-ce que je vends du drap? *Do I sell cloth?*
Est-ce que je joue souvent? *Do I play often?*

2. The first person singular of the indicative of **avoir**, *to have*; **être**, *to be*; **aller**, *to go*; **pouvoir**, *to be able*; **devoir**, *to owe*; **savoir**, *to know*, etc., may, however, be conjugated interrogatively according to the general rules.

Ai-je vos mouchoirs? *Have I your handkerchiefs?*
Combien vous dois-je? *How much do I owe you?*

3. The form **est-ce que** is always allowable, and sometimes preferable, when the first person singular of the present of the indicative of a verb has several syllables [§ 95, (6)].

Est-ce que je vous envoie des livres? *Do I send you books?*
Est-ce que je commence à parler? *Do I begin to speak?*

4. **Est-ce que** may, in familiar conversation, be used with all the persons of those tenses susceptible of being conjugated interrogatively:—**Qu'est-ce que vous lisez?** may be said, instead of, **que lisez-vous?** *What do you read?*

5. INTERROGATIVE FORM OF THE INDICATIVE PRESENT OF

ALLER , <i>to go</i> .	ENVOYER , <i>to send</i> .	VENIR , <i>to come</i> .
Est-ce que je vais?	Est-ce que j'envoie?	do Est-ce que je viens?
<i>do I go, or am I going?</i>	<i>I send, or am I sending?</i>	<i>do I come, or am I coming?</i>
Vas-tu?	Envoies-tu?	Viens-tu?
Va-t-il?	Envoie-t-il?	Vient-il?
Allons-nous?	Envoyons-nous?	Venons-nous?
Allez-vous?	Envoyez-vous?	Venez-vous?
Vont-ils?	Envoient-ils?	Viennent-ils?

6. The article **le**, preceded by the preposition **à** is contracted into **au** before a noun masculine commencing with a consonant, or an *h* aspirate; and into **aux** before a plural noun [§ 14, (8)].

Allez-vous au bal ou au marché? *Do you go to the ball or the market?*

7. **À l'église** means *at or to church*; **à l'école**, *at or to school*:—

Nous allons à l'église et à l'école. *We go to church and to school.*

* This expression is elliptical. The words **possible**, **probable**, **vrai**, &c., are understood. Literally, **est-ce que** means *is it that*. **Est-ce que votre frère est arrivé?** has the force of *is it (true understood) that your brother has arrived?* This form is generally employed to express astonishment.

8. Quelque part, means *somewhere, anywhere*; nulle part, *nowhere*.

Où est votre neveu, or Où votre neveu est-il? *Where is your nephew?*

Il est quelque part. *He is somewhere.*

Il n'est nulle part. *He is nowhere.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Est-ce que je vais à l'école?	<i>Do I go to school?</i>
Vous allez à l'église aujourd'hui.	<i>You go to church to-day.</i>
Est-ce que je commence mon travail?	<i>Do I begin my work?</i>
Est-ce que je parle anglais?	<i>Do I speak English?</i>
Est-ce que j'envoie ce livre à mon frère?	<i>Do I send this book to my brother?</i>
Allez-vous au marché demain?	<i>Do you go to market to-morrow?</i>
J'y vais après-demain.	<i>I go there the day after to-morrow.</i>
Envoyez-vous vos enfants à l'école?	<i>Do you send your children to school?</i>
Je les envoie chez le professeur.	<i>I send them to the professor's.</i>
Je les y envoie cette après-midi.	<i>I send them there this afternoon.</i>
Où vos habits sont-ils?	<i>Where are your clothes?</i>
Ils sont quelque part.	<i>They are somewhere.</i>
Ils ne sont nulle part.	<i>They are nowhere.</i>
Est-ce que je demeure chez vous?	<i>Do I live at your house?</i>
Est-ce que je mange trop?	<i>Do I eat too much?</i>

EXERCISE 43.

Absent, e, <i>absent</i> .	Cuir, m. <i>leather</i> .	Perruquier, m. <i>hair-dresser</i> .
Adresse, f. <i>address</i> .	Depuis, <i>since</i> .	
Banque, f. <i>bank</i> .	École, f. <i>school</i> .	Point, <i>not</i> .
Banquier, m. <i>banker</i> .	Écolier, m. <i>scholar</i> .	Poste, f. <i>post-office</i> .
Billet, m. <i>note</i> .	Eglise, f. <i>church</i> .	Rouge, <i>red</i> .
Chapelier, m. <i>hatter</i> .	Marché, m. <i>market</i> .	Vert, e, <i>green</i> .
Concert, m. <i>concert</i> .	Noir, e, <i>black</i> .	Village, m. <i>village</i> .
Couper, 1. <i>to cut</i> .		

1. Où est-ce que je vais? 2. Vous allez chez le chapelier.
 3. Est-ce que je vais à la banque? 4. Vous allez à la banque et au concert. 5. Est-ce que je coupe votre bois? 6. Vous ne coupez ni mon bois ni mon habit. 7. Est-ce que je porte un chapeau vert? 8. Vous ne portez pas un chapeau vert, vous en portez un noir. 9. Votre écolier va-t-il quelque part? 10. Il va à l'église, à l'école et au marché. 11. Ne va-t-il pas chez le perruquier? 12. Il ne va nulle part. 13. Ne portez-vous point des bottes de cuir rouge? 14. J'en porte de cuir noir. 15. N'allez-vous pas chez le banquier? 16. Je ne vais pas chez lui, il est absent depuis hier. 17. Vient-il à la banque ce matin? 18. Il a l'intention d'y venir, s'il a le temps.* 19. A-t-il envie d'aller au concert? 20. Il a grande envie d'y aller, mais il n'a pas de billet. 21. Demeurez-vous dans ce village? 22. Oui, Monsieur, j'y demeure. 23. Envoyez-vous ce billet à la poste? 24. Je l'envoie à son adresse.

* The *i* of *si* is elided before *il*, *ils*, but in no other case. This is the only instance of the elision of *i*.

EXERCISE 44.

1. Do I wear my large black hat? 2. You wear a handsome green hat. 3. Does the banker go to the hair-dresser's this morning? 4. He goes there this morning. 5. Does he intend to go to the bank this morning? 6. He does not intend to go there, he has no time. 7. Do you send your letters to the post-office? 8. I do not send them, they are not yet written (*écrites*). 9. Do I send you a note? 10. You send me a ticket, but I have no wish to go to the concert. 11. Does your brother go to school to-morrow? 12. He goes (there) to-day, and remains at home to-morrow. 13. Do I go there? 14. You do not go anywhere. 15. Where do you go? 16. I am going to your brother's, is he at home? 17. He is not at home, he has been absent since yesterday. 18. Does your brother live in this village? 19. He does not [Sect. 23. 12], he lives at my nephew's. 20. Are you wrong to go to school? 21. No, Sir, I am right to go to church and to school. 22. Do you wish to come to my house? 23. I like to go to your house, and to your brother's. 24. When are you coming to our house? 25. To-morrow, if I have time. 26. Does the banker like to come here? 27. He likes to come to your house. 28. Is the hair-dresser coming? 29. He is not yet coming. 30. What are you sending to the scholar? 31. I am sending books, paper, and clothes to him. 32. Where is he? 33. He is at school. 34. Is the school in the village? 35. It is there.

SECTION XXV.

1. The verb **aller** is used, in French, in the same manner as the verb *to go*, in English, to indicate a proximate future.

Allez-vous écrire ce matin? *Are you going to write this morning?*
Je vais écrire mes lettres. *I am going to write my letters.*

2. The verb **venir** is used idiomatically, in French, to indicate a past just elapsed. It requires, in this signification, the preposition **de** before another verb.

Je viens d'écrire mes lettres. *I have just written my letters.*
Nous venons de recevoir des lettres. *We have just received letters.*

3. **Aller trouver**, **venir trouver**, are used in the sense of *to go to*, *to come to*, in connexion with nouns or pronouns representing persons:—

Allez trouver le ferblantier. *Go to the tinman.*
J'ai envie d'aller le trouver. *I have a desire to go to him.*
Venez me trouver à dix heures. *Come to me at ten o'clock.*

4. **Aller chercher** means *to go for*, *to go and fetch*:—

Allez chercher le médecin. *Go and fetch the physician.*
Je vais chercher du sucre et du café. *I am going for coffee and sugar.*

5. **Envoyer chercher**, means *to send for*, *to send and fetch*:—

Envoyez chercher le marchand. *Send for the merchant.*
J'envoie chercher des légumes. *I send for vegetables.*

6. The first and second persons of the plural of the imperative are, with few exceptions, the same as the corresponding persons of the present of the indicative. The pronouns *nous*, *vous*, are not used with the imperative.

7. PLURAL OF THE IMPERATIVE OF *ALLER*, *ENVOYER*,
AND *VENIR*.

Allons, <i>let us go.</i>	Envoyons, <i>let us send.</i>	Venons, <i>let us come.</i>
Allez, <i>go.</i>	Envoyez, <i>send.</i>	Venez, <i>come.</i>

8. *Tous*, m. *toutes*, f. followed by the article *les* and a plural noun, are used in French in the same sense as the word *every* in English.

Votre frère vient tous les jours.	<i>Your brother comes every day.</i>
Vous allez à l'école tous les matins.	<i>You go to school every morning.</i>

9. *Tout*, m. *toute*, f. followed by *le* or *la* and the noun in the singular, are used for the English expression *the whole* coming before a noun.

Il reste ici toute la journée. *He remains here the whole day.*

10. A day of the week or of the month, pointed out as the time of an appointment or of an occurrence, is not preceded by a preposition in French.

Venez lundi ou mardi.	<i>Come on Monday or Tuesday.</i>
Venez le quinze ou le seize avril.	<i>Come on the fifteenth or sixteenth of April.</i>

11. When the occurrence is a periodical or customary one, the article *le* is prefixed to the day of the week or the time of the day : —

Il vient nous trouver le lundi.	<i>He comes to us Mondays.</i>
Il va trouver votre père l'après-midi.	<i>He goes to your father in the afternoon.</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Je vais parler à M. votre père.	<i>I am going to speak to your father.</i>
Nous venons de recevoir de l'argent.	<i>We have just received money.</i>
Que venez-vous de faire ?	<i>What have you just done ?</i>
Je viens de déchirer mon habit.	<i>I have just torn my coat.</i>
Votre frère va-t-il trouver son ami ?	<i>Does your brother go to his friend ?</i>
Il va le trouver tous les jours.	<i>He goes to him every day.</i>
Il vient me trouver tous les lundis.	<i>He comes to me every Monday.</i>
Allez-vous chercher de l'argent ?	<i>Do you go and fetch money ?</i>
Je n'en vais pas chercher.	<i>I do not. [Sect. 23. 12.]</i>
Envoyez-vous chercher des livres Arabes ?	<i>Do you send for Arabic books ?</i>
Allez-vous chez cette dame lundi ?	<i>Do you go to that lady's house on Monday ?</i>
J'ai l'intention d'y aller mardi.	<i>I intend to go there on Tuesday.</i>
J'y vais ordinairement le mercredi.	<i>I generally go there on Wednesday.</i>
Il va à l'église le dimanche.	<i>He goes to church on Sundays.</i>

EXERCISE 45.

Année, f. <i>year</i> .	Dimanche, m. <i>Sunday</i> .	Mardi, m. <i>Tuesday</i> .
Apprend-re, 4. ir. to learn.	Écossais, e, <i>Scotch</i> .	Mercredi, m. <i>Wednesday</i> .
Après-midi, f. <i>afternoon</i> .	Écri-re, 4. ir. to write.	Musique, f. <i>music</i> .
Commenc-er, 1. to commence.	Enseign-er, 1. to teach.	Prochain, e, <i>next</i> .
Compagne, f. <i>companion</i> .	Excepté, <i>except</i> .	Rest-er, 1. to remain, to live.
Connaissances, f. <i>acquaintances</i> .	Irlandais, e, <i>Irish</i> .	Jeudi, m. <i>Thursday</i> .
Demain, to-morrow.	Journée, f. <i>day</i> .	Samedi, m. <i>Saturday</i> .
	Lundi, m. <i>Monday</i> .	Teinturier, m. <i>dyer</i> .
	Malade, <i>sick</i> .	Vendredi, m. <i>Friday</i> .

1. Qu'allez-vous faire? 2. Je vais apprendre mes leçons. 3. N'allez-vous pas écrire à vos connaissances? 4. Je ne vais écrire à personne. 5. Qui vient de vous parler? 6. L'Irlandais vient de nous parler. 7. Quand l'Écossaise va-t-elle vous enseigner la musique? 8. Elle va me l'enseigner l'année prochaine. 9. Va-t-elle commencer mardi ou mercredi? 10. Elle ne va commencer ni mardi ni mercredi, elle a l'intention de commencer jeudi, si elle a le temps. 11. Votre compagne va-t-elle à l'église tous les dimanches? 12. Elle y va tous les dimanches et tous les mercredis. 13. Qui allez-vous trouver? 14. Je ne vais trouver personne. 15. N'avez-vous pas l'intention de venir me trouver demain? 16. J'ai l'intention d'aller trouver votre teinturier. 17. Envoyez-vous chercher le médecin? 18. Quand je suis malade, je l'envoie chercher. 19. Reste-t-il avec vous toute la journée? 20. Il ne reste chez moi que quelques minutes. 21. Allez-vous à l'école le matin? 22. J'y vais le matin et l'après-midi. 23. Y allez-vous tous les jours? 24. J'y vais tous les jours, excepté le lundi et le dimanche. 25. Le samedi je reste chez nous, et le dimanche je vais à l'église.

EXERCISE 46.

1. What is the Irishman going to do? 2. He is going to teach music. 3. Has he just commenced his work? 4. He has just commenced it. 5. Who has just written to you? 6. The dyer has just written to me. 7. Does your little boy go to church every day? 8. No, Sir, he goes to church on Sundays and he goes to school every day. 9. Do you go for the physician? 10. I send for him because (*parce que*) my sister is sick. 11. Do you go to my physician or to yours? 12. I go to mine, yours is not at home. 13. Where is he? 14. He is at your father's or at your brother's. 15. Do you intend to send for the physician? 16. I intend to send for him. 17. Am I right to send for the Scotchman? 18. You are wrong to send for him. 19. Do you go to your father in the afternoon? 20. I go to him in the morning. 21. Does your brother go to your uncle's every Monday? 22. He goes there every Sunday. 23. Are you going to learn music? 24. My niece is going to learn it, if she has time. 25. Am I going to read or to write? 26. You are going to read to-morrow. 27. Does he go to your house every day? 28. He comes to us every Wednesday.

29. At what hour? 30. At a quarter to nine. 31. Does he come early or late? 32. He comes at a quarter past nine. 33. What do you send for? 34. We send for wine, bread, butter, and cheese. 35. What do you go for? 36. We go for vegetables, meat, and sugar. 37. We want sugar every morning.

SECTION XXVI.

PLACE OF THE PRONOUNS.

1. The personal pronoun used as the direct [§ 2 (2), § 43 (4)] object of the verb,* is in French placed before the verb, except in the second person singular or in the first and second persons plural of the imperative, when used affirmatively.

Il me voit, il l'aime.

He sees me, he loves him.

Il nous aime, il vous aime.

He loves us, he loves you.

2. The personal pronoun representing the indirect object of the verb [§ 2 (3), § 43 (5)] answering to the dative of the Latin, and to the indirect object of the English with the preposition *to* expressed or understood, is also in French placed before the verb :—

Il me parle, il lui parle.

He speaks to me, he speaks to him.

Il nous donne une fleur.

He gives us a flower.†

Il vous parle, il leur parle.

He speaks to you, he speaks to them.

3. The personal pronoun is placed *after* the verb in the imperative affirmative :—

Aimez-les, parlez-leur.

Love them, speak to them.

4. The words *en* and *y* follow the above rules :—

J'en parle, j'y pense.

I speak of it, I think of it.

5. The pronoun used as the indirect object of a verb, answering to the genitive or ablative of the Latin, and to the indirect object, which in English is separated from the verb by a preposition other than *to* (*à*), which, of course, it follows, is in French always placed *after* the verb :—

Je parle de lui, d'elle, d'eux.

I speak of him, of her, of them.

Je reste avec vous et avec eux.

I remain with you and with them.

6. All pronouns used as objects of verbs, must be repeated :—

Je les aime, je les respecte, je les honore.

I love, respect, and honour them.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

M'entendez-vous?

Do you hear or understand me?

Je ne vous entends pas.

I do not understand or hear you.

Les entendez-vous?

Do you hear them?

Je les vois et je les entends.

I see them and understand them.

Il nous aime et il nous honore.

He loves and honours us.

* The young student will easily distinguish the personal pronoun used as the direct object of a verb, by the fact that there is in English no preposition between the verb and this pronoun.

† The preposition *to* is understood. *He gives a flower to us.*

Me parlez-vous de votre ami ?	<i>Do you speak to me of your friend ?</i>
Je vous parle de lui [R. 6].	<i>I speak to you of him.</i>
Nous parlez-vous de ces dames ?	<i>Do you speak to us about those ladies ?</i>
Je vous parle d'elles.	<i>I speak to you of them.</i>
Ne leur parlez-vous pas ?	<i>Do you not speak to them ?</i>
Je n'ai pas envie de leur parler.	<i>I have no wish to speak to them.</i>
Parlez-lui—ne lui parlez pas.	<i>Speak to him or her—do not speak to him.</i>
Allez à lui, courez à lui.	<i>Go to him—run to him.</i>
Parlez-leur—ne leur parlez pas.	<i>Speak to them—do not speak to them.</i>

EXERCISE 47.

Affaire, f. <i>affair</i> .	Compagnon, m. <i>com-</i>	Pens-er, 1. <i>to think</i> .
Arbre, m. <i>tree</i> .	<i>panion</i> .	Poirier, m. <i>pear-tree</i> .
Avis, m. <i>advicé</i> .	Déjà, <i>already</i> .	Pommier, m. <i>apple-</i>
Cerisier, m. <i>cherry-tree</i> .	Ecri-re, 4. <i>ir. to write</i> .	<i>tree</i> .
Communiqu-er, 1. <i>to</i>	Exemple, m. <i>example</i> .	Respect-er, 1. <i>to re-</i>
<i>communicate</i> .	Nouvelle, f. <i>news</i> .	<i>spect</i> .

1. Allez-vous lui écrire ? 2. Je vais lui écrire et lui communiquer cette nouvelle. 3. Allez-vous lui parler de moi ? 4. Je vais lui parler de vous et de votre compagnon. 5. Leur envoyez-vous de beaux arbres ? 6. Je leur envoie des pommiers, des poiriers, et des cerisiers. 7. Ne m'envoyez-vous pas des cerisiers ? 8. Je ne vous en envoie pas, vous en avez déjà. 9. Avez-vous raison de leur parler de cette affaire ? 10. Je n'ai pas tort de leur parler de cette affaire. 11. Venez à nous. 12. Venez nous trouver cette après-midi. 13. Allez-vous les trouver tous les jours ? 14. Je vais les trouver tous les soirs. 15. Leur donnez-vous de bons avis ? 16. Je leur donne de bons avis et de bons exemples. 17. Nous parlez-vous de vos sœurs ? 18. Je vous parle d'elles. 19. Ne nous parlez-vous pas de nos frères ? 20. Je vous parle d'eux. 21. Ne les aimez-vous pas ? 22. Nous les aimons et nous les respectons. 23. Pensez-vous à ce livre, ou n'y pensez-vous pas ? 24. Nous y pensons et nous en parlons. 25. Nous n'y pensons pas.

EXERCISE 48.

1. When are you going to write to your brother ? 2. I am going to write to him to-morrow morning. 3. Do you intend to write to him every Monday ? 4. I intend to write to him every Tuesday. 5. Have you a wish to speak to him to-day ? 6. I have a wish to speak to him, but he is not here. 7. Where is he ? 8. He is at his house. 9. Do you speak to them ? 10. Yes, Sir, I speak to them about (*de*) this affair. 11. Do they give you good advice ? 12. They give me good advice and good examples. 13. Do you go to your sister every day ? 14. I go to her every morning at a quarter to nine. 15. Does she like to see (*voir*) you ? 16. She likes to see me and she receives me well. 17. Do you think of this affair ? 18. I think of it the whole day. 19. Do you speak of it with

(avec) your brother? 20. We speak of it often. 21. Do you send your companion to my house? 22. I send him every day. 23. Are you at home every day? 24. I am there every morning at ten o'clock. 25. Do you like to go to church? 26. I like to go there every Sunday with a companion. 27. Do you speak of your houses? 28. I speak of them (*en*). 29. Does your brother speak of his friends? 30. Yes, Sir, he speaks of them (*d'eux*). 31. Does he think of them? 32. Yes, Sir, he thinks of them (*à eux*). 33. Does he think of this news? 34. Yes, Sir, he thinks of it (*y*). 35. I love and honour them.

SECTION XXVII.

RESPECTIVE PLACE OF THE PRONOUNS. § 98.

1. When two pronouns occur, one used as a direct object of the verb (accusative), and the other as the indirect object (dative), the indirect object, if not in the third person singular or plural, must precede the direct object [§ 98 (1)].

Je vous le donne.	<i>I give it to you.</i>
Il me le donne.	<i>He gives it to me.</i>
Il nous le donne.	<i>He gives it to us.</i>

2. When the pronoun used as an indirect object [dative, Rule 2, Sect. 25], is in the third person singular or plural, it must be placed after the direct object [§ 98 (2)].

Nous le lui donnons.	<i>We give it to him.</i>
Nous le leur donnons.	<i>We give it to them.</i>

3. The above rules of precedence apply also to the imperative used negatively:—

Ne nous le donnez pas [R. 1].	<i>Do not give it to us.</i>
Ne le lui donnez pas [R. 2].	<i>Do not give it to him.</i>

4. With the imperative used affirmatively, the direct object precedes in all cases the indirect object [§ 98 (5)].

Donnez-le-nous.	<i>Give it to us.</i>
Montrez-le-leur.	<i>Show it to them.</i>

5. **En** and **y** always follow the pronouns; **en** follows **y** when both are used in the same sentence:—

Je lui en donne.	<i>I give him some.</i>
Il nous y envoie.	<i>He sends us thither.</i>
Il nous y en a envoyé.	<i>He has sent some to us there.</i>
Envoyez-leur-y-en.	<i>Send some to them there.</i>

6. PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

VOIR, <i>to see.</i>	VOULOIR, <i>to will, to</i>	POUVOIR, <i>to be able,</i>
	<i>be willing.</i>	
Je vois, <i>I see, do see,</i>	Je veux, <i>I will or am</i>	Je puis, <i>I can, I may,</i>
<i>or am seeing;</i>	<i>willing;</i>	<i>I am able;</i>
Tu vois,	Tu veux,	Tu peux,*

* After the verbs **pouvoir**, *to be able*; **oser**, *to dare*; **savoir**, *to know*; the negative **pas** may be omitted

Il voit,
Nous voyons,
Vous voyez,
Ils voient.

Il veut,
Nous voulons,
Vous voulez,
Ils veulent.

Il peut,
Nous pouvons,
Vous pouvez,
Ils peuvent.

7. The above verbs take no preposition before another verb.

8. The preposition *pour* is used to render the preposition *to*, when the latter means *in order to*.

Je vais chez vous pour parler à votre frère et pour vous voir. *I go to your house to speak to your brother and to see you.*
J'ai besoin d'argent pour acheter des marchandises. *I want money to (in order to) buy goods.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Voulez-vous nous le donner ?	<i>Will you give it to us ?</i>
Je veux vous le prêter.	<i>I will lend it to you.</i>
Pouvez-vous me les donner ?	<i>Can you give them to me ?</i>
Je ne puis vous les donner.	<i>I cannot give them to you.</i>
Votre frère peut-il le lui envoyer ?	<i>Can your brother send it to him ?</i>
Il ne veut pas le lui envoyer.	<i>He will not send it to him.</i>
Qui veut le leur prêter ?	<i>Who will lend it to them ?</i>
Personne ne veut le leur prêter.	<i>No one will lend it to them.</i>
Envoyez-les-nous.	<i>Send them to us.</i>
Ne nous les envoyez pas.	<i>Do not send them to us.</i>
Donnez-nous-en.	<i>Give us some.</i>
Ne leur en envoyez pas.	<i>Do not send them any.</i>
Envoyez-le-leur, pour les contenter.	<i>Send it to them to satisfy them.</i>
Je vous y en enverrai.	<i>I will send you some there.</i>
Je puis vous l'y envoyer.	<i>I can send it to you there.</i>

EXERCISE 49.

Commis, m. clerk.	Guère, but little.	Poisson, m. fish.
Connaissance, f. acquaintance.	Marchande de modes, f. milliner.	Pologne, f. Poland.
Croi-re, 4. ir. to believe.	Montr-er, 1. to show.	Prêt-er, 1. to lend.
Dette, f. debt.	Oubli-er, 1. to forget.	Semaine, f. week.
D-evoir, 3. to owe.	Pay-er, 1. to pay.	Souvent, often.
		Voyage, m. journey.

1. Voulez-vous donner ce livre à mon frère ? 2. Je puis le lui prêter, mais je ne puis le lui donner. 3. Voulez-vous nous les envoyer ? 4. La marchande de modes peut vous les envoyer. 5. Les lui montrez-vous ? 6. Je les vois et je les lui montre. 7. Avez-vous peur de nous les prêter ? 8. Je n'ai pas peur de vous les prêter ? 9. Ne pouvez-vous nous envoyer du poisson ? 10. Je ne puis vous en envoyer, je n'en ai guère. 11. Voulez-vous leur en parler ? 12. Je veux leur en parler, si je ne l'oublie pas. 13. Venez-vous souvent les voir ? 14. Je viens les voir tous les matins, et tous les soirs. 15. Ne leur parlez-vous point de votre voyage en Pologne ? 16. Je leur en parle, mais ils ne veulent pas me croire. 17. Est-ce que je vois mes connaissances le lundi ? 18. Vous les voyez tous les jours de la semaine. 19. Vous envoient-elles plus d'argent que le commis de notre marchand ? 20. Elles m'en

envoient plus que lui. 21. En envoyez-vous au libraire? 22. Je lui en envoie quand je lui en dois. 23. N'avez-vous pas tort de lui en envoyer? 24. Je ne puis avoir tort de payer mes dettes. 25. Ils vous en donnent, et ils vous en prêtent quand vous en avez besoin.

EXERCISE 50.

1. Will you send us that letter? 2. I will send it to you, if you will read it. 3. I will read it if (*si*) I can. 4. Can you lend me your pen? 5. I can lend it to you, if you will take care of it [Sect. 21 (3)]. 6. May I speak to your father? 7. You may speak to him, he is here. 8. Are you afraid of forgetting it? [Sect. 20 (4).] 9. I am not afraid of forgetting it. 10. Will you send them to him? 11. I intend to send them to him, if I have time. 12. Do you speak to him of your journey? 13. I speak to him of my journey. 14. I speak to them of it. 15. Can you communicate it to him? 16. I have a wish to communicate it to him. 17. Do you see your acquaintances every Monday? 18. I see them every Monday and every Thursday. 19. Where do you intend to see them? 20. I intend to see them at your brother's and at your sister's. 21. Can you send him there every day? 22. I can send him there every Monday, if he wishes (*s'il le veut*). 23. Can you give them to me? 24. I can give them to you. 25. Who will lend them books? 26. No one will lend them any. 27. Your bookseller is willing to sell them good books and good paper. 28. Is he at home? 29. He is at his brother's. 30. Are you wrong to pay your debts? 31. I am right to pay them. 32. Will you send it to us? 33. I am willing to send it to you, if you want it. 34. Are you willing to give them to us? 35. We are willing to give them to your acquaintances. 36. Have you sent some to them there? 37. Yes, I have sent some to them there.

SECTION XXVIII.

EXCEPTIONS TO THE RULES SET FORTH IN THE TWO FOREGOING SECTIONS.

1. The personal pronouns, when used as direct objects, are placed after the verb in a simple tense, after the past participle in a compound tense, and expressed as follows, viz.:—*me* by *moi*, *thee* by *toi*, *him* by *lui*, *her* by *elle*, *us* by *nous*, *you* by *vous*, *them* (m.) by *eux*, *them* (f.) by *elles*,

1st, when the verb has several direct objects, whether they are all pronouns, or nouns and pronouns:—

Je connais elle et eux.

I know her and them.

J'ai vu elle et sa sœur.

I have seen her and her sister.

Il regardait tantôt vous, tantôt moi.

He looked now at you, then at me.

Je blâme vous et non lui.

I blame you, not him.

2ndly, when the verb is accompanied by **ne . . . que** referring to the pronoun :—*

Je ne crains que lui.
Ils n'ont vu que moi.

*I fear him only.
They saw me only.*

2. The personal pronouns in the dative case are expressed as above, and placed after the preposition **à**, which of course is put after the verb in a simple tense, and after the past participle in a compound tense,

1st, when the verb has several objects in the dative case, whether they are all pronouns, or nouns and pronouns :—

Je parle à vous et à lui. *I speak to you and to him.*
J'ai écrit à elles et à leur frère. *I wrote to them and to their brother.*

2ndly, when the pronoun direct object, and the pronoun in the dative case are of the first and second person :—

Il te confiera à nous. *He will entrust thee to us.*
Le roi m'a envoyé à vous. *The king has sent me to you.*

3rdly, when the direct object is a pronoun of the first or second person, and the dative one of the third :—

Votre frère vous présentera à eux. *Your brother will introduce you to them.*
Votre oncle nous a envoyés à elle. *Your uncle has sent us to her.*

4thly, with the following verbs : **aller**, to go ; **courir**, to run ; **accourir**, to run up ; **boire à**, to drink to ; **penser**, to think ; **venir**, to come ; **revenir**, to come back, to come again ; **être**, in the sense of to belong ; **appeler**, to call ; **rappeler**, to call again, to call back ; **attirer**, to attract :—†

Elle courut à lui. *She ran up to him.*
Ce cheval est à moi. *This horse belongs to me.*

5thly, with idiomatic verbal expressions, such as, **avoir affaire**, to have to do or to deal with ; **avoir rapport**, to concern, to bear upon ; **avoir égard**, to consider, to show regard ; **avoir recours**, to have recourse ; **prendre garde**, to beware, to take care, to mind ; **prendre intérêt**, to take interest in ; **faire attention**, to pay attention, to notice, &c. :—

Nous aurons recours à toi. *We will have recourse to thee.*
Il faut prendre garde à soi. *One must take care of one's self.*
Je n'ai pas fait attention à elle. *I did not notice her.*

6thly, for the sake of emphasis, in elevated style :—

Sachez-le bien, je parle à vous ! *Know it well, I speak to you !*

7thly, with all reflective verbs :—

Le ministre s'adressait à eux. *The minister used to apply to them.*
Le tailleur ne s'était pas fié à eux. *The tailor had not trusted them.*

* **Ne . . . que** has no influence on the position of the pronoun when it does not refer to it :— **Je ne l'ai vu que deux fois**, I saw him twice only.

† Used figuratively, **attirer** is preceded by its pronoun object :— **Sa paresse lui attirait constamment des reproches**, his idleness constantly brought reproaches upon him.

sthly, when the verb is accompanied by **ne . . . que**, referring to the pronoun :—*

Je ne parle qu'à vous.

I speak to you only.

Ils n'avaient écrit qu'à elle.

They had written to her only.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

J'ai chargé elle et lui de le faire.

I have ordered her and him to do it.

Il saura bien empêcher vous et ses autres ennemis de lui nuire.

He will know well how to prevent you and his other enemies from injuring him.

Ils ne connaissent que moi ici.

They know me only here.

Mon cousin a écrit à toi et à ta sœur.

My cousin has written to thee and to thy sister.

Le ministre a promis à nous et à eux qu'elle serait graciée.

The minister has promised to us and to them that she would be pardoned.

Votre père vous confiera à moi pendant le voyage.

Your father will entrust you to me during the voyage.

Mon frère m'a envoyé à vous hier.

My brother sent me to you yesterday.

Je ne veux pas t'envoyer à lui.

I will not send thee to him.

Il ne me confiera pas à eux.

He will not entrust me to them.

Il faut songer à soi.

One must think of one's self.

Cela a rapport à vous.

That concerns you.

Il ne se fie pas à toi.

He does not trust thee.

Je déclare à vous, à vous, que cela est faux !

I declare to you, to yourself, that that is untrue !

Prenez garde à vous !

Mind, take care of yourself !

Il n'écrira qu'à eux.

He will write to them only.

EXERCISE 51.

Adressé, *addressed, sent.*

Dit, *told.*

Présente, *should introduce.*

Aperçu, *perceived.*

Écrirai, *will write.*

Présentiez, *should introduce*

Appuyé, *supported.*

Écrit, *written.*

introduce

Associé, *m. partner.*

En, dans, *in.*

Reconnu, *recognized.*

Aussitôt, *as soon.*

En cas de besoin, *in case of need.*

Regardés, *looked at.*

Avait, *had.*

Fois, *f. times.*

Remarqué, *remarked.*

Calomnié, *slandered.*

Général, *m. general.*

Roi, *king.*

Calomnies, *f. calumnies.*

Ici, *here.*

S'adressa, *applied.*

Comtesse, *f. countess.*

Il faut, *one should.*

Seule, *single, one.*

Confie, *entrusted.*

Nous nous fions, *we trust.*

Terminer, *to settle.*

Connais, *know.*

Nui, *injured.*

Tuteur, *m. guardian.*

Commissait, *knew.*

Parce que, *because.*

Une fois, *once.*

Courut, *ran.*

Pour que, *in order*

Ville, *f. town.*

Crédit, *m. credit.*

Afin que, *that.*

Vu, *seen.*

1. J'ai vu lui et son père. 2. Nous avons reconnu sa mère et elle. 3. Tu as calomnié moi, elle et eux. 4. Avez-vous remarqué la comtesse et lui? 5. Ils ont appuyé toi et ton

* When **ne . . . que** does not refer to the pronoun it has no influence on the place of the latter :—*Elle ne m'a parlé que de son fils, she spoke to me of nothing but her son.*

cousin de tout leur crédit. 6. Je ne connais que lui ici. 7. Il ne veut voir qu'elle. 8. En trois mois, tu ne m'as écrit que deux fois. 9. Il ne vous a regardés qu'une seule fois. 10. Votre commis a-t-il écrit à vous et à votre associé? 11. Oui, il a écrit plusieurs fois à mon associé et à moi. 12. Vos calomnies ont nui à elle, à lui et à moi. 13. Ils nous envoient à vous pour terminer cette affaire. 14. Votre mère vous a adressé à moi pour que je vous présente à eux. 15. Mon tuteur m'a confié à elle parce qu'il ne connaît qu'elle dans cette ville. 16. Nous courûmes à lui aussitôt que nous l'eûmes aperçu. 17. Votre frère aura recours à vous, en cas de besoin. 18. Le roi s'adressa à eux plusieurs fois. 19. Prends garde à toi. 20. Elle n'a parlé qu'à vous. 21. Faites attention à eux.

EXERCISE 52.

1. Have you seen her and her father? 2. Hast thou recognised his mother and him? 3. Have they slandered thee, him, her, and me? 4. We have seen the baroness and him. 5. They have supported your uncle and you with all their credit. 6. I know only them (*f.*) here. 7. We are willing to see them (*m.*) only. 8. In a year she wrote to me only once. 9. In three hours you looked at me but once. 10. My clerk has written to you and to your partner. 11. Have you spoken several times to them (*m.*) and to the prince? 12. Why have you injured her, him, and me? 13. Have they sent you to me to settle our affair? 14. Your father has sent me to you, that you should introduce me to her. 15. The general had entrusted me to them because he knew only them in that town. 16. My mother ran up to me, and told me she had always thought of me. 17. This concerns me. 18. We trust them (*m.*). 19. One should take care of one's self. 20. I will write to you only. 21. They have paid attention to us.

SECTION XXIX.

USE OF THE ARTICLE (§ 77).

1. The article **le, la, les**, as already stated, is used in French before nouns taken in a general sense:—

Les jardins sont les ornements des villages et des campagnes. *Gardens are the ornaments of villages and of rural districts.*

2. The article is also used in French, as in English, before nouns taken in a particular sense:—

Les jardins de ce village sont superbes. *The gardens of this village are superb.*

3. It is also used before abstract nouns, before verbs, adjectives, or any other part of speech used substantively:—

La paresse est odieuse. *Idleness is odious.*
La jeunesse n'est pas toujours docile. *Youth is not always tractable.*

Le boire et le manger sont nécessaires à la vie. *Eating and drinking are necessary to life.*
 Les mais, les si, les car arrêtent tout. *But's, if's, for's stand in the way of everything.*

4. The article is used before the names of countries, provinces, rivers, winds, and mountains [77 (3) (4)] :—

La France est plus grande que l'Italie. *France is larger than Italy.*

La Normandie est très fertile. *Normandy is very fertile.*

5. The article is used before titles :—

Le général Cavaignac. *General Cavaignac.*

Le maréchal Ney. *Marshal Ney.*

6. In respectful address or discourse, the words, **Monsieur, Madame, Mademoiselle** are placed before titles and designations of relationship :—

Monsieur le président. *(Mr.) President.*

Madame la comtesse. *(Madam) Countess.*

Mademoiselle votre sœur. *(Miss) your sister.*

7. The plural of *Monsieur, Madame, and Mademoiselle*, is **Messieurs, Mesdames, and Mesdemoiselles**.

8. The student should be careful to distinguish a noun taken in a general or in a particular sense from one taken in a partitive sense [§ 78].

General or particular sense.

Nous aimons les livres,
We like books.

Nous avons les livres,
We have the books.

Partitive sense.

Nous avons des livres,
We have books, i. e. some books.

Vous avez écrit des lettres,
You have written letters, i. e. some letters.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES

La modestie est aimable.

Modesty is amiable.

Le courage est indispensable au général.

Courage is indispensable to the general.

Les fleurs sont l'ornement des jardins.

Flowers are the ornament of gardens.

Les fleurs des jardins de ce château.

The flowers of the gardens of this villa.

Avez-vous l'intention de visiter la France ?

Do you intend visiting France ?

J'ai l'intention de visiter l'Italie.

I intend visiting Italy.

Le capitaine Dumont est-il ici ?

Is captain Dumont here ?

Le major Guillaume est chez lui.

Major William is at home.

Voyez-vous Madame votre mère ?

Do you see your mother ?

Je vois Monsieur votre frère.

I see your brother.

Mon frère n'aime pas les louanges.

My brother is not fond of praises

EXERCISE 53.

Aim-er, 1. *to be fond of, to like.*

Capitaine, m. *captain.*

Caporal, m. *corporal.*

Étudi-er, 1. *to study.*

Fleur, f. *flower.*

Apport-er, 1. *to bring.*

Bois, m. *wood, forest.*

Demeur-er, 1. *to dwell.*

live.

Fraise, f. *strawberry.*

Framboise, f. *raspberry*

Légume, m. *vegetable*. Lundi, m. *Monday*. Prune, f. *plum*.
 Loin, *far*. Pêche, f. *peach*.

1. Aimez-vous le pain ou la viande? 2. J'aime le pain, la viande et le fruit. 3. Avons-nous des pêches dans notre jardin? 4. Nous y avons des pêches, des fraises, des framboises et des cerises. 5. Monsieur votre frère aime-t-il les cerises? 6. Il n'aime guère les cerises, il préfère les prunes. 7. Avez-vous des légumes? 8. Je n'aime point les légumes. 9. Nous n'avons ni légumes ni fruits [Sect. 6. 3, 4]. 10. Nous n'aimons ni les légumes ni les fruits. 11. Allez-vous tous les jours dans le bois de Monsieur votre frère? 12. Je n'y vais pas tous les jours. 13. Votre sœur apporte-t-elle les fleurs? 14. Elle les apporte. 15. Madame votre mère apporte-t-elle des fleurs? 16. Elle en apporte tous les lundis. 17. Voyez-vous le général Bertrand? 18. Je ne le vois pas, je vois le caporal Duchêne. 19. Mesdemoiselles vos sœurs sont-elles fatiguées? 20. Mes sœurs sont fatiguées d'étudier. 21. Monsieur le président est-il chez lui? 22. Non, Monsieur, il est chez Monsieur le colonel Dumont. 23. Demeure-t-il loin d'ici? 24. Il ne demeure pas loin d'ici. 25. Où demeure-t-il? 26. Il demeure chez Monsieur le capitaine Lebrun.

EXERCISE 54.

1. Does your sister like flowers? 2. My sister likes flowers, and my brother is fond of books. 3. Is he wrong to like books? 4. No, Sir, he is right to like books and flowers. 5. Have you many flowers in your garden? 6. We have many flowers and much fruit. 7. Is your cousin fond of raspberries? 8. My cousin is fond of raspberries and * strawberries. 9. Is the captain fond of praises? 10. He is not fond of praises. 11. Has the gardener brought you vegetables? 12. He has brought me vegetables and fruit.* 13. Is he ashamed to bring you vegetables? 14. He is neither ashamed nor afraid to sell vegetables. 15. Is your mother tired? 16. My mother is not tired. 17. Is your brother at colonel D.'s? 18. He lives at colonel D.'s, but he is not at home at present (*à présent*). 19. How many peaches have you? 20. I have not many peaches, but I have many plums. 21. Does Capt. B. like peaches? 22. He likes peaches,* plums, raspberries, and strawberries. 23. Are you going into (*dans*) your brother's wood? 24. I go there every morning. 25. Is general L. here? 26. No, Sir, he is not here, he is at your cousin's. 27. Does your friend General H. live far from here? 28. He does not live far from here, he lives at his brother's. 29. Have you fine flowers in your garden? 30. We have very fine flowers: we are fond of flowers. 31. Do you give them to him? 32. I give them to you. 33. I give you some. 34. I give them some. 35. Give us some. 36. Do not give us any.

* The student must not forget that the article is repeated before every noun.

SECTION XXX.

USE OF THE ARTICLE CONTINUED.

1. Adjectives expressing nationality will, according to R. 3 of the last lesson, be preceded by the article :—

Il apprend le français, l'anglais, l'allemand et l'italien. *He learns French, English, German, and Italian.*

2. After the verb *parler*, the article must be omitted before an adjective of nationality used substantively :—

Votre frère parle espagnol et portugais. *Your brother speaks Spanish and Portuguese.*

3. The article is not used in French before the number which follows the name of a sovereign. This number (unless it be *first*) must be the cardinal, and not the ordinal [§ 27 (2)] :—

Vous avez l'histoire de Henri quatre. *You have the history of Henry the Fourth.*

4. A noun placed in apposition with a noun or pronoun is not in French preceded by *un*, *une*, *a* or *an*, unless it be qualified by an adjective or determined by the following part of the sentence.

Votre ami est médecin.	<i>Your friend is a physician.</i>
Notre frère est avocat.	<i>Our brother is a barrister.</i>
Votre ami est un bon médecin.	<i>Your friend is a good physician.</i>
Notre frère est un avocat célèbre.	<i>Our brother is a celebrated barrister.</i>

5. PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

APPRENDRE, <i>to learn.</i>	CONNAÎTRE, <i>to know.</i>	SAVOIR, <i>to know.</i>
J'apprends, <i>I learn, do learn, or am learning;</i>	Je connais, <i>I know or do know ;</i>	Je sais, <i>I know or do know ;</i>
Tu apprends,	Tu connais,	Tu sais,
Il apprend,	Il connaît,	Il sait,
Nous apprenons,	Nous connaissons,	Nous savons,
Vous apprenez,	Vous connaissez,	Vous savez,
Ils apprennent.	Ils connaissent.	Ils savent.

6. *Connaître* means *to be acquainted with* ; *savoir*, *to know*, is said only of things.

Connaissez-vous ce Français, cet Anglais, cet Allemand et cet Espagnol ?	<i>Do you know that Frenchman, that Englishman, that German, and that Spaniard ?</i>
Savez-vous le français, l'anglais, l'allemand et l'espagnol ?	<i>Do you know French, English, German, and Spanish ?</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Le capitaine G. sait il le français ?	<i>Does captain G. know French ?</i>
Il ne le sait pas, mais il l'apprend.	<i>He does not know it, but learns it.</i>
Connaissez-vous le Docteur L. ?	<i>Do you know Dr. L. ?</i>
Je ne le connais pas, mais je sais où il demeure	<i>I am not acquainted with him, but I know where he lives.</i>

Ce monsieur est-il peintre?	<i>Is that gentleman a painter?</i>
Non, il est architecte.	<i>No, he is an architect.</i>
Ce monsieur est un architecte distingué.	<i>That gentleman is a distinguished architect.</i>
Ce Français parle grec et arabe.	<i>That Frenchman speaks Greek and Arabic.</i>
Il parle grec, arabe et italien.	<i>He speaks the Greek, Arabic, and Italian languages.</i>
Avez-vous vu Charles dix, frère de Louis dix-huit?	<i>Have you seen Charles the Tenth, a brother of Louis the Eighteenth?</i>

EXERCISE 55.

Allemand, e, <i>German</i> .	Hongrois, e, <i>Hungarian</i> .	Quatre, <i>four</i> .
Ancien, ne, <i>ancient</i> .	<i>rian</i> .	Russe, <i>Russian</i> .
Anglais, e, <i>English</i> .	Langue, f. <i>language</i> .	Suédois, e, <i>Swedish</i> ,
Chinois, e, <i>Chinese</i> .	Moderne, <i>modern</i> .	<i>Swede</i> .
Danois, e, <i>Danish</i> .	Polonais, e, <i>Polish</i> .	Tapissier, m. <i>upholsterer</i> .
<i>Dane</i> .	<i>Pole</i> .	
Grec, que, <i>Greek</i> .	Quatorze, <i>fourteen</i> .	

1. Connaissez-vous ce Monsieur? 2. Oui, Madame, je le connais fort bien. 3. Savez-vous de quel pays il est? 4. Il est hongrois. 5. Parle-t-il allemand? 6. Il parle allemand, polonais, russe, suédois et danois. 7. N'est-il pas médecin? 8. Non, Monsieur, avant la révolution il était capitaine. 9. Avez-vous envie d'apprendre le russe? 10. J'ai envie d'apprendre le russe et le grec moderne. 11. Connaissez-vous les messieurs qui parlent à votre sœur? 12. Je ne les connais pas. 13. Savez-vous où ils demeurent? 14. Ils demeurent chez le tapissier de votre frère. 15. N'avez-vous pas l'histoire de Louis quatorze, dans votre bibliothèque? 16. Je n'ai ni celle de Louis quatorze, ni celle de Henri quatre. 17. Avez-vous tort d'apprendre le chinois? 18. Je n'ai pas tort d'apprendre le chinois. 19. Vos compagnons apprennent-ils les langues anciennes? 20. Ils savent plusieurs langues anciennes et modernes. 21. Parlez-vous anglais? 22. Je sais l'anglais et je le parle. 23. Connaissez-vous l'Anglais que nous voyons? 24. Je ne le connais pas. 25. Il ne me connaît pas et je ne le connais pas.

EXERCISE 56.

1. Does our physician know French? 2. He knows French, English, and German. 3. Does he know the French physician? 4. He knows him very well. 5. Are you acquainted with that lady? 6. I am not acquainted with her. 7. Is she a German or a Swede? 8. She is neither a German nor a Swede, she is a Russian. 9. Do you intend to speak to her? 10. I intend to speak to her in (*en*) English. 11. Does she know English? 12. She knows several languages; she speaks English, Danish, Swedish, and Hungarian. 13. Is your brother a colonel? 14. No, Sir, he is a captain. 15. Is your upholsterer a Dane? 16. He is not a Dane, he is a Swede. 17. Are you a Frenchman? 18. No, Sir, I am a Hungarian. 19. Do you know Chinese? 20. I know Chinese, Russian,

and modern Greek. 21. Are you wrong to learn languages? 22. I am not wrong to learn languages. 23. Do you know the Englishman who lives at your brother's? 24. I am acquainted with him. 25. I am not acquainted with him. 26. Do you like books? 27. I am fond of books. 28. Have you a desire to learn Russian? 29. I have no desire to learn Russian. 30. Have you no time? 31. I have but little time. 32. What do you learn? 33. We learn Latin, Greek, French, and German. 34. Do you not learn Spanish? 35. We do not learn it.

SECTION XXXI.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS (§ 38).

1. **Qui**, used as nominative, and having an antecedent, may relate to persons or to things:—

Les fleurs qui sont dans votre jardin. *The flowers which are in your garden.*

2. **Qui**, having an antecedent, is used as indirect object, *i. e.* with a preposition, but *only in reference to persons*:—

Je connais le monsieur à qui vous venez de parler. *I know the gentleman to whom you have just spoken.*

3. Without antecedent, **qui** is used *only in reference to persons*, as subject and as object, with and without preposition:—

Qui est là?	<i>Who is there?</i>
Nous ne savons qui est arrivé.	<i>We do not know who has arrived.</i>
Je sais de qui vous parlez.	<i>I know of whom you are speaking.</i>
Je consulterai qui je voudrai.	<i>I shall consult whom I like.</i>
Qui votre frère voit-il?	<i>Whom does your brother see?</i>
De qui parlez-vous ce matin?	<i>Of whom do you speak this morning?</i>

4. **Que** may be said of persons or things. It can never be understood, and must be repeated before every verb [Sect. 18. 1].

Les personnes que nous voyons. *The persons whom we see.*
 Les langues que nous apprenons. *The languages which we learn.*

5. **Ce qui**, **ce que** are employed for *that which*, or its equivalent *what*:—

Ce qui est vrai est beau.	<i>What is true is beautiful.</i>
Ce que vous apprenez est utile.	<i>That which you learn is useful.</i>
Trouvez-vous ce que vous cherchez?	<i>Do you find what you seek?</i>

6. **Que** answers to the English pronoun *what*, used absolutely before a verb:—

Que pensez-vous de cela? *What do you think of that?*

7. **Quoi** is generally preceded or followed by a preposition, and relates only to things:—

De quoi voulez-vous parler?	<i>Of what do you wish to speak?</i>
A quoi pensez-vous?	<i>Of what do you think?</i>
Quoi de plus aimable que la vertu?	<i>What is more amiable than virtue?</i>

8. *Lequel, m. laquelle, f. lesquels, m.p. lesquelles, f.p. which, or which one* [Sect. 17. 6], or *which ones*, relate to persons or things. They may be preceded by a preposition :—

Lequel avez-vous apporté?
Duquel parlez-vous?

Which one have you brought?
Of which one do you speak?

9. *Dont, of which, or of whom, whose*, may relate to persons or things, in the masculine or feminine, singular or plural. It can never be used absolutely, and must always be preceded by an antecedent.

Les fleurs dont vous me parlez. *The flowers of which you speak to me.*
Les demoiselles dont votre sœur vous parle. *The young ladies of whom your sister speaks to you.*

10. PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

DI-RE, 4. <i>to say.</i>	FAI-RE, 4. <i>to make, to do.</i>	METT-RE, 4. <i>to put.</i>
Je dis, <i>I say, do say,</i> or <i>am saying;</i>	Je fais, <i>I make or do, I</i> <i>am making or doing;</i>	Je mets, <i>I put, do</i> <i>put, or am putting;</i>
Tu dis,	Tu fais,	Tu mets,
Il dit,	Il fait,	Il met,
Nous disons,	Nous faisons,	Nous mettons,
Vous dites,	Vous faites,	Vous mettez,
Ils disent.	Ils font.	Ils mettent.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Connaissez-vous le monsieur qui parle à notre cousin?	<i>Do you know the gentleman who speaks to our cousin?</i>
Je connais celui qui lui parle.	<i>I know the one who speaks to him.</i>
Comprenez-vous ce que je vous dis?	<i>Do you understand what I say to you?</i>
Qui vous a parlé de cette affaire?	<i>Who has spoken to you of this affair?</i>
L'Anglais dont vous parlez est ici.	<i>The Englishman of whom you speak is here.</i>
L'Espagnol dont la sœur est ici.	<i>The Spaniard whose sister is here.</i>
Que faites-vous ce matin?	<i>What do you do this morning?</i>
Que dites-vous à notre ami?	<i>What do you say to our friend?</i>
Nous faisons ce que vous nous dites.	<i>We do that which you say to us.</i>
Pour qui faites-vous cet habit?	<i>For whom do you make this coat?</i>
De quoi parlez-vous à votre frère?	<i>Of what do you speak to your brother?</i>
Nous faisons ce que nous pouvons.	<i>We do what we can.</i>
Nous parlons de ce dont vous parlez.	<i>We speak of that of which you speak.</i>

EXERCISE 57.

Arriv-er, 1. <i>to arrive.</i>	Habillement, m. <i>dress,</i>	Plaisir, m. <i>pleasure.</i>
Avec, <i>with.</i>	<i>clothes.</i>	Presque, <i>almost.</i>
Coffre, m. <i>trunk.</i>	Hollandais, e, <i>Dutch.</i>	Rien, <i>nothing.</i>
Command-er, 1. <i>to order.</i>	Linge, m. <i>linen.</i>	Soulier, m. <i>shoe.</i>
Ecossais, e, <i>Scotch.</i>	Monsieur, m. <i>gentleman.</i>	Vrai, e, <i>true.</i>
Enfant, m. <i>child.</i>	Nom, m. <i>name.</i>	

1. Qui connaissez-vous? 2. Nous connaissons les Hollandais dont vous nous parlez. 3. Quelles leçons apprenez-vous?

4. Nous apprenons les leçons que vous nous recommandez. 5. Ce qu'il vous dit est-il vrai? 6. Ce que vous nous dites est vrai. 7. De qui nous parlez-vous? 8. Nous vous parlons des Écossais qui viennent d'arriver. 9. Savez-vous qui vient d'arriver? 10. Je sais que le monsieur que votre frère connaît vient d'arriver. 11. Que font vos sœurs? 12. Elles ne font presque rien, elles n'ont presque rien à faire. 13. Que mettez-vous dans votre coffre? 14. Nous y mettons ce que nous avons, nos habillements et notre linge. 15. N'y mettez-vous pas vos souliers? 16. Nous y mettons les souliers dont nous avons besoin. 17. De quoi avez-vous besoin? 18. Nous avons besoin de ce que nous avons. 19. Cet enfant sait-il ce qu'il fait? 20. Il sait ce qu'il fait et ce qu'il dit. 21. Ne voulez-vous pas le leur dire? 22. Avec beaucoup de plaisir. 23. Faites-vous ce que le marchand vous commande? 24. Nous faisons ce qu'il nous dit. 25. Il parle de ce dont vous parlez.

EXERCISE 58.

1. Have you what (*ce dont*) you want? 2. We have what we want. 3. Is the gentleman whom you know here? 4. The lady of whom you speak is here. 5. Is she just arrived? [Sect. 25. 2.] 6. She is just arrived. 7. Do you know that gentleman? 8. I know the gentleman who is speaking with your father. 9. Do you know his name? 10. I do not know his name, but I know where he lives (*demeure*). 11. What do you do every morning? 12. We do almost nothing; we have very little to do. 13. Does the tailor make your clothes? 14. He makes my clothes, my brother's, and my cousin's. 15. Do you know what you say? 16. I know what I say, and what I do. 17. Do you know the Scotchman of whom your brother speaks? 18. I know him well. 19. What does he put into his trunk? 20. He puts his clothes. 21. Is that which you say true? 22. What I say is true. 23. Do you understand that which I say to you? 24. I understand all that you say. 25. Of whom does your brother speak? 26. He speaks of the gentleman whose sister is here. 27. Is your brother wrong to do what he does? 28. He cannot be wrong to do it. 29. What are you doing? 30. I am doing that which you do. 31. Where do you put my books? 32. Into (*dans*) your brother's trunk. 33. Is your brother here? 34. He is not here. 35. He is at my brother's, or at my father's.

SECTION XXXII.

1. The verb **mettre** is used in the same sense as the English to *put on*, in speaking of garments. **Mettre le couvert**, means to *lay the cloth*, or *set the table*:—

Quel chapeau mettez-vous?

What hat do you put on?

Votre frère met son habit noir.

Your brother puts on his black coat.

Le domestique va mettre le couvert.

The servant is going to lay the cloth.

2. **Ôter** means *to take off, to take away, to take out* :—

Mon domestique ôte son chapeau. *My servant takes off his hat.*
 Ôtez ce livre de la table. *Take away that book from the table.*
 N'a-t-on pas ôté le dîner ? *Have they not taken away the dinner ?*

3. The verb **faire** is used before another verb, in the sense of *to have, to cause* :—

Votre frère fait-il bâtir une maison ? *Does your brother have a house built ?*
 Il en fait bâtir plus d'une. *He has more than one built.*

4. It may be used in the same sense before its own infinitive :—

Je fais faire un habit de drap. *I have a cloth coat made.*
 Vous faites faire des souliers de cuir. *You have leather shoes made.*

5. **Vouloir** [Sect. 27. 6] followed by **dire** is used in the sense of *to mean* :—

Que voulez-vous dire ? *What do you mean ?*
 Que veut dire votre sœur ? *What does your sister mean ?*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Ne mettez-vous pas vos habits ? *Do you not put on your clothes ?*
 J'ai peur de les gâter. *I am afraid of spoiling them.*
 Ne portez-vous jamais votre habit noir ? *Do you never wear your black coat ?*
 Je le mets tous les samedis. *I put it on every Saturday.*
 Pourquoi n'ôtez-vous pas votre manteau ? *Why do you not take off your cloak ?*
 J'ai trop froid, j'ai peur de l'ôter. *I am too cold, I am afraid to take it off.*
 Faites-vous raccommoder vos souliers ? *Do you have your shoes mended ?*
 Je fais raccommoder mes habits. *I have my clothes mended.*
 Je fais faire une paire de bottes. *I have a pair of boots made.*
 Je fais creuser un puits. *I have a well dug.*
 Que veut dire votre frère ? *What does your brother mean ?*
 Que veut dire cela ? *What does that mean ?*
 Cela ne veut rien dire. *That means nothing.*
 Ôtez-vous vos souliers et vos bas ? *Do you take off your shoes and stockings ?*
 Je n'ôte ni les uns ni les autres. *I take off neither these nor those.*
 Le dîner est prêt ; le domestique va mettre le couvert. *Dinner is ready ; the servant is going to lay the cloth.*
 Voulez-vous ôter le couvert ? *Will you take away the things from the table ?*
 Je vais mettre le couvert. *I am going to lay the cloth.*
 Je vais ôter le couvert. *I am going to take away the things*

EXERCISE 59.

Apothicaire, m. *drug-gist.* Cave, f. *cellar.* Dîner, m. *dinner.*
 Creus-er, l. *to dig.* Fâché, e. *sorry, angry.*
 Après, *after.* Dimanche, m. *Sunday.* Gât-er, l. *to spoil.*

Gilet, m. <i>waistcoat</i> .	Pourquoi, <i>why</i> .	Tout à l'heure, <i>immediately</i> .
Grand, e, <i>large</i> .	Prêt, e, <i>ready</i> .	
Manteau, m. <i>cloak</i> .	Raccommoder, 1. <i>to mend</i> .	Uniforme, m. <i>uniform</i> .
Noir, e, <i>black</i> .		Velours, m. <i>velvet</i> .
Pantoufle, f. <i>slipper</i> .		

1. Le général N. met-il son uniforme? 2. Il ne le met point. 3. Pourquoi ne portez-vous point votre manteau noir? 4. J'ai peur de le gâter. 5. Mettez-vous vos souliers de satin tous les matins? 6. Je ne les mets que les dimanches. 7. Il est midi; le domestique met-il le couvert? 8. Il ne le met pas encore; il va le mettre tout à l'heure. 9. Le dîner n'est-il pas prêt? 10. Le domestique ôte-t-il le couvert? 11. Il ne l'ôte pas encore, il n'a pas le temps de l'ôter. 12. Ôtez-vous votre habit quand vous avez chaud? 13. Je l'ôte quand j'ai trop chaud. 14. Faites-vous faire un habit de drap? 15. Je fais faire un habit de drap et un gilet de satin noir. 16. Ne faites-vous point raccommoder vos pantoufles de velours? 17. Ne faites-vous pas creuser une cave? 18. Je fais creuser une grande cave. 19. Que veut dire l'apothicaire? 20. Il veut dire qu'il a besoin d'argent. 21. Savez-vous ce que cela veut dire? 22. Cela veut dire que votre frère est fâché contre vous. 23. Avez-vous envie de mettre votre manteau? 24. J'ai l'intention de le mettre, car j'ai grand froid. 25. Je vais l'ôter, car j'ai chaud.

EXERCISE 60.

1. Do you take off your coat? 2. I do not take off my coat, I put it on. 3. Do you take off your cloak when you are cold? 4. When I am cold I put it on. 5. Does your little boy take off his shoes and stockings? [§ 21 (4).] 6. He takes them off, but he is going to put them on again (*remettre*). 7. Does that little girl lay the cloth? 8. She lays the cloth every day at noon (*midi*). 9. Does she take away the things after dinner? 10. She takes away the things every day. 11. Do you intend to have a coat made? 12. I intend to have a coat made. 13. I am going to have a coat and a vest made. 14. Does your brother have his boots mended? 15. He has them mended. 16. What does your son mean? 17. I do not know what he means. 18. Is he angry with me or with my brother? 19. He is neither angry with you nor with your brother. 20. Is he afraid to spoil his coat? 21. He is not afraid to spoil it. 22. Does the druggist want money? 23. He does not want money. 24. Has your sister taken my book from the table? 25. She has not taken it away. 26. Why do you take off your shoes? 27. I take them off because they hurt me (*me font mal*). 28. Do you intend to have a house built? 29. I intend to have one built. 30. Does the tailor spoil your coat? 31. He does not spoil it. 32. Who spoils your clothes? 33. Nobody spoils them. 34. What hat do you wear? 35. I wear a black hat.

SECTION XXXIII.

IMPERSONAL VERBS.*

1. The impersonal verb is conjugated only in the third person singular. Its nominative pronoun *il*, *it*, is used absolutely, *i.e.* it represents no noun previously expressed.

Il pleut aujourd'hui.

It rains to-day.

2. The impersonal verb assumes the termination of the class or conjugation to which it belongs. Some verbs are always impersonal, and will be found in § 64. Others are only occasionally so, and if irregular, will be found in the *personal* form in the same § 64.

3. PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF THE IMPERSONAL VERBS.

Y AVOIR, *to be there.* *PLEUVOIR*, *to rain.* *NEIGER*, *to snow.*

Il y a, *there is, there are.* *Il* pleut, *it rains, it is raining.* *Il* neige, *it snows, it is snowing.*

GRÊLER, *to hail.*

GELER, *to freeze.*

DÉGELER, *to thaw.*

Il grêle (§ 50), *it hails, it is hailing.* *Il* gèle (§ 50), *it freezes, it is freezing.* *Il* dégèle (§ 50), *it thaws, it is thawing.*

4. *Il y a* means *there is*, or *there are*, and may be followed by a singular or by a plural noun [§ 61].

Il y a du gibier au marché.

There is game in the market.

Il y a des pommes dans votre jardin. *There are apples in your garden.*

5. In relation to the weather, the verb *faire* is used impersonally in the same manner as the English verb *to be*.

Il fait beau temps aujourd'hui.

It is fine weather to-day.

Il fait chaud, *il* fait froid.

It is warm, it is cold.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Pleut-il ce matin?

Does it rain this morning?

Il ne pleut pas, *il* neige.

It does not rain, it snows.

Il va pleuvoir ce matin.

It is going to rain this morning

Ne gèle-t-il pas ce matin?

Does it not freeze this morning?

Il ne gèle pas, *il* fait du brouillard.

It does not freeze, it is foggy.

Y a-t-il du sucre chez vous?

Is there any sugar at your house?

Il y en a beaucoup chez mon frère.

There is a great deal at my brother's.

Y a-t-il plusieurs personnes chez moi?

Are there several persons at my house?

Il y a plus de cent personnes.

There are more than one hundred persons.

N'y a-t-il personne à l'église?

Is there nobody at church?

* By impersonal verbs is simply meant those verbs which are used only in the third person singular, as they have, properly speaking, no personal subject; for though *il* is used, it is *neuter*, being derived from Latin *illud*, and it should not be confounded with the masculine pronoun *il*, which is derived from *ille*.

Il n'y a encore personne.	<i>There is as yet no one there.</i>
Est-il trop tôt ?	<i>Is it too soon !</i>
Au contraire, il est trop tard.	<i>On the contrary, it is too late.</i>
Fait-il froid ou chaud aujourd'hui ?	<i>Is it cold or warm to-day ?</i>
Il fait chaud et humide.	<i>It is warm and damp.</i>
Fait-il du vent ou du brouillard ?	<i>Is it windy or foggy ?</i>
Il fait un temps bien désagréable.	<i>It is very disagreeable weather.</i>

EXERCISE 61.

Assemblée, f. <i>assembly, party.</i>	Couvert, c. <i>cloudy.</i>	Manuscrit, m. <i>manuscript.</i>
Bibliothèque, f. <i>library.</i>	Écurie, f. <i>stable.</i>	Veau, m. <i>veal.</i>
Brouillard, m. <i>fog.</i>	Épais, se, <i>thick.</i>	Vent, m. <i>wind.</i>
Chambre, f. <i>room.</i>	Foin, m. <i>hay.</i>	Volaille, f. <i>poultry.</i>
Cinquante, <i>fifty.</i>	Gibier, m. <i>game.</i>	
	Humide, <i>damp.</i>	

1. Quel temps fait-il aujourd'hui ? 2. Il fait un temps superbe. 3. Fait-il très beau temps aujourd'hui ? 4. Il fait un temps couvert et humide. 5. Pleut-il beaucoup ce matin ? 6. Il ne pleut pas encore, mais il va pleuvoir. 7. Fait-il du vent ou du brouillard ? 8. Il ne fait pas de vent. 9. Le brouillard est très épais. 10. Combien de personnes y a-t-il à l'assemblée ? 11. Il y a plus de deux cents [Sect. 19, 7] personnes. 12. N'y a-t-il pas beaucoup de manuscrits dans votre bibliothèque ? 13. Il n'y en a pas beaucoup, il n'y en a que cinquante-cinq. 14. Fait-il trop froid pour vous dans cette chambre ? 15. Il n'y fait ni trop froid ni trop chaud. 16. Y a-t-il beaucoup de foin dans votre écurie ? 17. Il y en a assez pour mon cheval. 18. Restez-vous à la maison quand il pleut ? 19. Quand il pleut je reste à la maison, mais quand il fait beau temps je vais chez mon cousin. 20. Y a-t-il de la viande au marché ? 21. Il y en a beaucoup, il y a aussi du gibier. 22. Il y a du veau, du mouton et de la volaille. 23. N'y a-t-il pas aussi des légumes et des fruits ? 24. Il n'y en a pas. 25. Il y en a aussi.

EXERCISE 62.

1. Are you cold this morning ? 2. I am not cold, it is warm this morning. 3. Is it foggy or windy ? 4. It is neither foggy nor windy, it rains in torrents (*à verse*). 5. Is it going to rain or to snow ? 6. It is going to freeze, it is very cold. 7. It is windy and foggy. 8. Is there anybody at your brother's to-day ? 9. My brother is at home, and my sister is at church. 10. Is there any meat in the market ? 11. There is meat and poultry. 12. Is it too warm or too cold for your sister in this room ? 13. It is not so warm in this room as in your brother's library. 14. Are there good English books in your sister's library ? 15. There are some good ones. 16. Are there peaches and plums in your garden ? 17. There are many. 18. Do you remain at your brother's when it snows ? 19. When it snows we remain at home. 20. Are there ladies at your mother's ? 21. Your two sisters are there to-day. 22.

Have you time to go and fetch them? 23. I have no time this morning. 24. Is your horse in the stable? 25. It is not there, it is at my brother's. 26. Does it hail this morning? 27. It does not hail, it freezes. 28. What weather is it this morning? 29. It is very fine weather. 30. Is it too warm? 31. It is neither too warm nor too cold. 32. Is it going to freeze? 33. It is going to snow. 34. Does it snow every day? 35. It does not snow every day, but it snows very often (*souvent*).

SECTION XXXIV.

PLACE OF THE ADVERB (§ 132).

1. In simple tenses, the adverb generally follows the verb, and is placed as near it as possible:—

Votre commis écrit très bien. *Your clerk writes very well.*
 Cette demoiselle lit très mal. *That young lady reads very badly.*

2. When a verb is in the infinitive, the negatives **ne** and **pas**, **ne** and **rien**, &c., may be placed before it:—

Ne pas parler, ne pas lire. *Not to speak, not to read.*
 Ne jamais mentir; ne rien voir. *Never to tell a lie; to see nothing.*

3. The adverb **assez**, *enough*, *tolerably*, precedes generally the other adverbs. It precedes also adjectives and nouns:—

Vous écrivez assez correctement. *You write pretty correctly.*
 Vous avez assez de livres. *You have books enough.*
 Cet enfant est assez attentif. *That child is attentive enough.*

4. **Voici** means, *here is*; **voilà**, *there is*:—

Voici le livre que vous aimez. *Here is the book which you like.*
 Voilà le monsieur dont vous parlez. *There is the gentleman of whom you speak.*

5. **Dans** is used for *in* or *into*, when the noun which follows it is preceded by an article, or by a possessive, demonstrative, or numeral adjective (§ 138 (2)):—

Le crayon est dans le pupitre. *The pencil is in the desk.*
 Mettez cette lettre dans votre malle. *Put this letter into your trunk.*

6. **En** is used for *to*, *in*, or *into*, coming after the verbs *to be*, *to go*, *to reside*, followed by the name of a part of the earth, a country, or province:—

Notre ami est en France. *Our friend is in France.*
 Vous allez en Italie. *You go to Italy.*

7. The preposition **à** is used for the words *at* or *to*, *in* or *into*, before the name of a town, city, or village, preceded by the verbs mentioned above:—

Il va à Paris le mois prochain. *He is going to Paris next month.*

8. The same preposition is used in the expressions, à la campagne, à la ville, à la chasse, à la pêche, &c.

Nous allons à la campagne.	<i>We go into the country.</i>
Vous n'allez pas à la ville.	<i>You do not go to the city.</i>
Je vais à la chasse et à la pêche.	<i>I go hunting and fishing.</i>

INDICATIVE PRESENT OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS,

CONDUIRE, 4. *to conduct*. ÉCRIRE, 4. *to write*. LIRE, 4. *to read*.

Je conduis, *I conduct*, J'écris, *I write*, do Je lis, *I read*, do read.
do conduct, or am write, or am writing ; or am reading ;
conducting ;

Tu conduis,	Tu écris,	Tu lis.
Il conduit,	Il écrit,	Il lit,
Nous conduisons,	Nous écrivons,	Nous lisons,
Vous conduisez,	Vous écrivez,	Vous lisez,
Ils conduisent,	Ils écrivent.	Ils lisent.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Votre parent écrit-il bien ?	<i>Does your relation write well ?</i>
Il écrit assez bien et assez vite.	<i>He writes well enough and rapidly enough.</i>
Nous avons assez de livres.	<i>We have books enough.</i>
Nous sommes assez attentifs à nos leçons.	<i>We are attentive enough to our lessons.</i>
Voilà la demoiselle dont vous parlez.	<i>There is the young lady of whom you speak.</i>
Votre cheval n'est-il pas dans le champ ?	<i>Is not your horse in the field ?</i>
Il n'y est pas, il est dans le jardin.	<i>It is not there, it is in the garden.</i>
Allez-vous en France cette année ?	<i>Do you go to France this year ?</i>
Nous allons à Paris et à Lyon.	<i>We go to Paris and to Lyons.</i>
Où conduisez-vous ce jeune homme ?	<i>Where do you take this young man ?</i>
Je le conduis en Allemagne.	<i>I take him to Germany.</i>
Demeurez-vous à la ville ?	<i>Do you live in the town ?</i>
Nous demeurons à la campagne.	<i>We live in the country.</i>
Allez-vous souvent à la chasse ?	<i>Do you go often hunting ?</i>
Nous allons quelquefois à la pêche.	<i>We sometimes go fishing.</i>

EXERCISE 63.

Associé, m. <i>partner</i> .	Fort, <i>very</i> .	Suisse, f. <i>Switzerland</i> .
Campagne, f. <i>country</i> .	Pêche, f. <i>fishing</i> .	Terre, f. <i>farm, estate</i> .
Canif, m. <i>pocket-knife</i> .	Prusse, f. <i>Prussia</i> .	Ville, f. <i>town, city</i> .
Chasse, f. <i>hunting</i> .	Rapidement, <i>rapidly</i> .	Vite, <i>quickly</i> .
Commis, m. <i>clerk</i> .	Rendre, 4. <i>to return</i> .	Voyage, m. <i>journey</i> .

1. Écrivez-vous encore la même leçon ? 2. Je n'écris plus la même, j'en écris une autre. 3. Votre commis écrit-il rapidement ? 4. Il écrit fort bien, mais il n'écrit pas vite. 5. N'avez-vous pas assez d'argent pour acheter cette terre ? 6. J'ai assez d'argent, mais j'ai l'intention de faire un voyage en France. 7. Voilà votre livre, en avez-vous besoin ? 8. Je n'en ai pas besoin, j'en ai un autre. 9. Avez-vous encore besoin de mon canif ? 10. Je n'en ai plus besoin, je vais vous le

rendre. 11. Notre cousin demeure-t-il à la ville? 12. Il ne demeure plus à la ville, il demeure à la campagne. 13. Aime-t-il à aller à la chasse? 14. Il n'aime pas à aller à la chasse. 15. Il va tous les jours à la pêche. 16. Notre associé est-il à Paris ou à Rouen? 17. Il est à Marseille. 18. Où avez-vous l'intention de conduire votre fils? 19. Je vais le conduire en Italie. 20. Demeurez-vous à Milan ou à Florence? 21. Je ne demeure ni à Milan ni à Florence, je demeure à Turin. 22. Votre ami demenre-t-il en Suisse? 23. Il ne demeure plus en Suisse, il demeure en Prusse. 24. Votre domestique est-il à l'église? 25. Non, Monsieur, il est à l'école.

EXERCISE 64.

1. Does your clerk write as well as your son? 2. He writes tolerably well, but not so well as my son. 3. Have you books enough in your library? 4. I have not books enough, but I intend to buy some more. 5. Here is your sister's letter, will you read it? 6. I intend to read it. 7. Does your son like to go fishing? 8. He likes to go fishing and hunting. 9. When does he like to go fishing? 10. When I am in the country. 11. What do you do when you are in the city? 12. When I am in the city, I read and learn my lesson. 13. Do you intend to go to France this year? 14. I intend to go to Germany. 15. Will you go to the city if it (*s'il*) rains? 16. When it rains I always remain at home [R. 1]. 17. How many friends have you in the city? 18. I have many friends there. 19. Are there many English in France? 20. There are many English in France and in Italy (*Italie*). 21. Are there more English in Germany than in Italy? 22. There are more English in Italy than in Germany. 23. Is it fine weather in Italy? 24. It is very fine weather there. 25. Does it often freeze there? 26. It freezes sometimes there, but not often. 27. Does that young lady read as well as her sister? 28. She reads better than her sister, but her sister reads better than I. 29. Is there any one at your house? 30. My father is at home. 31. Is your brother-in-law absent? 32. My brother-in-law is at your house. 33. There is no one at home to-day.

SECTION XXXV.

1. The indefinite pronoun **on** has no exact equivalent in English. It may be rendered by *one, we, you, they, people, &c.*, according to the idea to be expressed. **On** * has, of course, no antecedent, and sometimes refers to a particular person [§ 42 (4) (5), § 109].

On doit honorer la vertu.

We should honour virtue.

On nous apporte de l'argent.

Money is brought to us.

2. As may be seen in the last example, **on** is often the nominative of an active verb, which is best rendered in English by the passive voice [§ 109 (1)]:—

* Although generally expressing plurality, yet **on**, which is only used as subject, *always* governs its verb in the third person singular.

On dit que votre épouse est ici. *It is said that your wife is here.*
 On raconte des histoires singulières. *Singular histories are related.*
 On récolte beaucoup de blé en France. *Much wheat is harvested (grown) in France.*

3. **Avoir lieu**, answers to the English expression, *to take place* :—

Cela a lieu tous les jours. *That takes place every day.*

4. **Au lieu de**, answers to the English, *instead of*. The verb which follows it must, according to Rule 2, Sect. 20, be put in the infinitive :—

Au lieu d'étudier, il joue. *Instead of studying, he plays.*

5. **Devoir**, *to owe*, is used before an infinitive, like the English verb *to be*, to express obligation :—

Je dois lui écrire demain. *I am to write to him to-morrow.*

Nous devons y aller demain. *We are to go there to-morrow.*

6. **Recevoir des nouvelles**, means, *to hear from* :—

Devez-vous recevoir des nouvelles de votre sœur ? *Are you to hear from your sister ?*

7. **Entendre parler** answers to the English phrase, *to hear of or about* :—

Entendez-vous souvent parler de vos amis ? *Do you often hear of your friends ?*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Que dit-on de nous dans la ville ? *What do they say of us in the city ?*

On ne parle pas de vous. *People do not speak of you.*

Ne mange-t-on pas tous les jours ? *Do not people eat every day ?*

On mange quand on a faim. *People eat when they are hungry.*

On trouve beaucoup d'or en Californie. *Much gold is found in California.*

Dit-on quelque chose de nouveau ? *Do they (people) say anything new ?*

On ne dit rien de nouveau. *Nothing new is said.*

A-t-on reçu des nouvelles de George ? *Has anything been heard from George ?*

On n'a point entendu parler de lui. *Nothing has been heard of him.*

On n'a point reçu de ses nouvelles. *They have not heard from him.*

Devez-vous écrire à notre ami ? *Are you to write to our friend ?*

Je dois lui écrire demain. *I am to write to him to-morrow.*

Le concert doit-il avoir lieu ce soir ? *Is the concert to take place this evening ?*

Il doit avoir lieu ce matin. *It is to take place this morning.*

Je viens au lieu de mon frère. *I come instead of my brother.*

Il danse au lieu de marcher. *He dances instead of walking.*

EXERCISE 65.

Afrique, f. *Africa*. Fournir, 2. *to furnish*. Partir, 2. *to depart*.

Alger, *Algiers*. Habits, m. p. *clothes*. to set out, *to leave*.

Apporter, 1. *to bring*. Malade, *ill*. Prochain, c. *next*.

Demain, *to-morrow*. Mois, m. *month*. Savoir, 3 ir. *to know*.

Diamant, m. *diamond*. Or, in. *gold*. Voyage, m. *journey*.

1. Vous apportez-t-on de l'argent tous les jours ? 2. On ne m'en apporte pas tous les jours. 3. Vous fournit-on des habits

quand vous en avez besoin ? [Sect. 21.] 4. On m'en fournit toutes les fois (*every time*) que j'en ai besoin. 5. A-t-on besoin d'argent quand on est malade ? 6. Quand on est malade, on en a grand besoin. 7. Avez-vous reçu des nouvelles de mon fils ? 8. Je n'ai point reçu de ses nouvelles. 9. Ne dit-on pas qu'il est en Afrique ? 10. On dit qu'il doit partir pour Alger. 11. Quand doit-il commencer son voyage ? 12. On dit qu'il doit le commencer le mois prochain. 13. Ce mariage a-t-il lieu aujourd'hui ou demain ? 14. On nous dit qu'il doit avoir lieu cette après-midi. 15. Il aura lieu à cinq heures et demie. 16. Avez-vous envie de venir au lieu de votre frère ? 17. Mon frère doit venir au lieu de notre cousin. 18. Avez-vous l'intention de lui dire ce qu'il doit faire ? 19. Il sait ce qu'il doit faire. 20. Savez-vous ce qu'on dit de nouveau ? 21. On ne dit rien de nouveau. 22. Trouve-t-on beaucoup d'or en Californie ? 23. On y en trouve beaucoup. 24. Y trouve-t-on aussi des diamants ? 25. On n'y en trouve point, on n'y trouve que de l'or.

EXERCISE 66.

1. What do people say of me ? 2. People say that you are not very attentive to your lessons. 3. Is it said that much gold is found in Africa ? 4. It is said that much gold is found in California. 5. Do they bring you books every day ? 6. Books are brought to me [R. 2] every day, but I have no time to read them. 7. What should one do (*doit-on faire*) when one is ill ? 8. One should send for a physician. 9. Do you send for my brother ? 10. I am to send for him this morning. 11. Do you hear from your son every day ? 12. I hear from him every time that your brother comes. 13. Does the sale (*vente*, f.) take place to-day ? 14. It takes place this afternoon. 15. At what time (*heure*) does it take place ? 16. It takes place at half past three. 17. I have a wish to go there, but my brother is ill. 18. What am I to do ? 19. You are to write to your brother, who, it is said (*dit-on*), is very ill. 20. Is he to leave for Africa ? 21. He is to leave for Algiers. 22. Do you come instead of your father ? 23. I am to write instead of him. 24. Does the concert take place this morning ? 25. It is to take place this afternoon. 26. Do you know at what hour ? 27. At a quarter to five. 28. Is your brother coming ? 29. My brother is not coming, he has no time. 30. Are you angry with your brother ? 31. I am not angry with him. 32. Is anything new said ? (Is there anything new ?) 33. There is nothing new. 34. What is said of him ? 35. Nothing is said of him.

SECTION XXXVI.

PRONOMINAL VERBS (§ 44 (6), § 57).

1. A verb is called pronominal when it is conjugated with two pronouns of the same person, *i.e.* the usual nominative pronoun and the pronouns *me, te, se, &c.* [§ 57.]

In these verbs, the second pronoun is in fact only the objective pronoun direct or indirect, which, according to Rules 1 and 2, Sect. 26, is placed before the verb.

2. These verbs express—1st, an action performed and suffered by the subject, and are then called *pronominal reflexive verbs*, as :—

Il se flatte.	<i>He flatters himself.</i>
Ils se louent.	<i>They praise themselves.</i>

2nd, an action reciprocated between two or more subjects, in which case they are only used in the plural, and are called *pronominal reciprocal verbs*, as :—

Nous nous aiderons l'un l'autre.	<i>We shall help each other.</i>
Ces enfants s'entraiment.	<i>These children love one another.</i>

3rd, an action strictly confined to the subject; these are called *naturally pronominal verbs*, and are expressed in English by transitive or intransitive verbs as the case may be :—

Je me souviens de cela.	<i>I remember that.</i>
Son oiseau s'envolera.	<i>Her bird will fly away.</i>

3. The reflexive form of the verb, which is much more frequently used in French than in English, often answers to the passive form so common in the latter language :—

Cela se voit tous les jours.	{ <i>That is seen every day—literally,</i>
	{ <i>That sees itself every day.</i>
Cette marchandise se vend facilement.	{ <i>That merchandise is easily sold.</i>
	{ <i>That merchandise sells itself easily.</i>
Cela se fait ainsi.	{ <i>That is done thus.</i>
	{ <i>That does itself so.</i>

4. The verb **se porter**, literally, *to carry one's self*, is used idiomatically for *to do* or *to be* in speaking of health :—

Comment vous portez-vous?	<i>How do you do?</i>
Je me porte très bien.	<i>I am very well.</i>

5. **S'asseoir** [4 ir. see § 64], *to sit down*, is also a reflexive verb :—

Votre frère s'assied.	<i>Your brother sits down.</i>
-----------------------	--------------------------------

6. **Se promener** means *to walk, to ride, &c.*, for pleasure, or health :—

Je me promène tous les jours.	<i>I take a walk every day.</i>
Je me promène à cheval.	<i>I take a ride.</i>

7. **Marcher, aller à cheval, aller en voiture**, signify *to walk* or *to ride*, when we wish to express simply the manner of progressing :—

Marchez-vous beaucoup tous les jours?	<i>Do you walk much every day?</i>
Je vais à cheval et en voiture.	<i>I ride on horseback and in a carriage.</i>

8. CONJUGATION OF THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF THE PRONOMINAL VERBS.

SE PORT-ER, 1. <i>to be</i> or <i>do</i> .	SE PROMEN-ER, 1. <i>to</i> <i>walk or ride</i> .	S'ASSE-OIR, 3. <i>ir. to sit</i> <i>down</i> .
Je me porte, <i>I am</i> or <i>do</i> ;	Je me promène, <i>I take</i> <i>a walk or ride</i> ;	Je m'assieds, <i>I sit down</i> or <i>am sitting down</i> ;
Tu te portes,	Tu te promènes [§ 50].	Tu t'assieds,
Il se porte,	Il se promène.	Il s'assied,
Nous nous portons,	Nous nous promenons,	Nous nous asseyons,
Vous vous portez,	Vous vous promenez,	Vous vous asseyez,
Ils se portent.	Ils se promènent.	Ils s'asseient.

9. The reflexive pronouns in the imperative of pronominal verbs follow Rule 4 of Sect. 26, and Rules 3, 4, of Sect. 27, and also § 97 (2) (3) :—

Asseyons-nous, asseyez-vous.	<i>Let us sit down, sit down.</i>
Ne nous asseyons pas.	<i>Let us not sit down.</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

A quoi vous appliquez-vous ?	<i>To what do you apply yourself ?</i>
Je m'occupe de mes affaires.	<i>I occupy myself with my affairs.</i>
Je m'adresse à mes amis.	<i>I apply to my friends.</i>
Vous adressez-vous à votre père ?	<i>Do you apply to your father ?</i>
Je m'adresse à lui [§ 97 (4)].	<i>I apply to him.</i>
Comment se porte Monsieur votre père ?	<i>How is your father ?</i>
Il se porte passablement bien.	<i>He is tolerably well.</i>
Pourquoi ne vous asseyez-vous pas ?	<i>Why do you not sit down ?</i>
Je m'assieds quand je suis fatigué.	<i>I sit down when I am weary.</i>
Je n'ai pas le temps de m'asseoir.	<i>I have no time to sit down</i>
Vous promenez-vous tous les jours ?	<i>Do you take a walk every day ?</i>
Je me promène en voiture aujourd'hui.	<i>I take a ride to-day (in a carriage).</i>
Nos amis se promènent-ils à cheval ?	<i>Do your friends take a ride to-day ?</i>
N'aimez-vous pas à marcher ?	<i>Do you not like walking ?</i>
J'aime beaucoup à aller à cheval.	<i>I like riding much.</i>
Aimez-vous à vous promener ?	<i>Do you like walking (for pleasure) ?</i>
Asseyons-nous, s'il vous plaît.	<i>Let us sit down, if you please.</i>
Ne nous asseyons-nous pas ?	<i>Do we not sit down ?</i>
Ne nous asseyons pas, il est trop tard.	<i>Let us not sit down, it is too late.</i>
Combien ce drap se vend-il le * mètre ?	<i>How much is that cloth sold a yard ?</i>
Il se vend vingt-cinq francs le mètre.	<i>It is sold twenty-five francs the metre.</i>
Comment cela s'appelle-t-il ?	<i>How is that called ? What is the name of that ?</i>
Comment vous appelez-vous [§ 50 (4)] ?	<i>What is your name ? How do you call yourself ?</i>

* The English indefinite article *a* or *an* before a noun expressing measure is rendered into French by the definite article *le*, *la*, when mentioning a price.

EXERCISE 67.

Banquier, m. *banker*. Magnifique, *magnifi-* Pied, m. *foot*.
 Cheval, m. *horse*. cent. Port-er, 1. *to carry, wear*
 Comment, *how*. Matin, m. *morning*. Quelquefois, *some-*
 Drap, m. *cloth*. Mieux, *better*. times.
 Fatigué, e, *wearry*, Obligé, e, *obliged*. Quitt-er, 1. *to leave*.
 tired. Part-ir, 2. *to set out*. Voiture, f. *carriage*.

1. Comment ce monsieur s'appelle-t-il? 2. Je ne sais comment il s'appelle. 3. Cette dame ne s'appelle-t-elle pas L.? 4. Non, Madame, elle s'appelle M. 5. Monsieur votre père se porte-t-il bien ce matin? 6. Il se porte beaucoup mieux. 7. Fait-il beau temps aujourd'hui? 8. Il fait un temps magnifique, n'allez-vous pas vous promener? 9. Nous n'avons ni cheval ni voiture. 10. Ne pouvez-vous marcher? 11. Je suis trop fatigué pour marcher. 12. N'allez-vous pas à cheval tous les matins? 13. Je me promène tous les matins. 14. Comment vous promenez-vous? 15. Quelquefois à pied et quelquefois en voiture. 16. À qui vous adressez-vous quand vous avez besoin d'argent? 17. Je m'adresse à mon banquier. 18. Ne voulez-vous pas vous asseoir? 19. Nous vous sommes bien obligés. 20. Ce drap se vend-il fort bien? 21. Il se vend fort cher. 22. Ne devez-vous pas aller à la campagne s'il fait beau temps? 23. Votre frère doit-il quitter la ville aujourd'hui? 24. Il doit partir demain matin. 25. Ma sœur se promène tous les matins.

EXERCISE 68.

1. Does your sister walk every day? 2. She takes a walk every morning. 3. She likes riding on horseback and in a carriage. 4. What is that little girl called? 5. She is called L. 6. Is not that gentleman called L.? 7. No, Sir, he is called G., and his cousin is called H. 8. How is your brother? 9. My brother is very well, but my sister is not well. 10. How are your two daughters? 11. They are tolerably well to-day. 12. Will you not sit down, gentlemen? 13. We are much obliged to you, Madam, we have not time. 14. Does that book sell well? 15. It sells very well. 16. How much is that silk sold a yard (*le mètre*)? 17. It is sold six francs a yard. 18. Is it fine weather to-day? 19. It is very fine weather, will you not take a walk? 20. I have no time to walk. 21. To whom does your brother apply? 22. He applies to his banker. 23. Is his brother at home? 24. No, Sir, he is at Paris. 25. When does he intend to go to France? 26. He intends to go to France in one month. 27. Is your sister to leave to-morrow morning? 28. She is to leave to-day if (*s'il*) it is fine weather. 29. What do people say of this? 30. Nothing is said about it [*Scet. 34*]. 31. Are you too much fatigued to walk? 32. I am not too much fatigued, but I have no wish to walk. 33. Do you like walking or riding? 34. I like riding, when I have a good horse. 35. I do not like walking

SECTION XXXVII.

1. The reflective pronoun is often used to express possession, instead of the possessive adjective. In such cases the article takes the place of this adjective, before the noun* [§ 77 (99)].

Vous chauffez-vous les pieds? *Do you warm your feet?*
Je me chauffe les mains et les pieds. *I warm my hands and feet.*

2. **Se souvenir** [2 ir. *See* § 62], **se rappeler** [§ 49 (4)], correspond to the English verb *to remember*. **Se rappeler** takes a direct object, besides its reflective pronoun, whether the former is a noun or a pronoun:—

Vous rappelez-vous ces demoiselles? *Do you remember those young ladies?*
Je ne me les rappelle pas. *I do not remember them.*

3. Custom seems, however, to sanction the use of the preposition **de** between the verb **se rappeler** and an infinitive:—

Nous ne nous rappelons pas d'en avoir été privées (CONDILLAC). *We do not remember having been deprived of it.*

4. **Se souvenir** takes the preposition **de** before a noun or pronoun as well as before an infinitive:—

Vous souvenez-vous de cette affaire? *Do you remember that affair?*
Je ne m'en souviens pas. *I do not remember it.*
Je me souviens de lui avoir écrit. *I remember having written to him.*

5. **Se coucher**, corresponds to the English verbs *to retire*, *to go to bed*:—

Je me couche de bonne heure. *I retire early.*

6. **Se lever** [§ 50 (6)] means *to rise*, *to get up*:—

Je me lève au point du jour. *I rise at the break of day.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Vous coupez-vous les ongles? *Do you cut your nails?*
Je me coupe les ongles et les cheveux. *I cut my nails and hair.*
Vous coupez-vous les doigts? *Do you cut your fingers?*
Je me coupe souvent les doigts, quand je taille ma plume. *I often cut my fingers, when I mend my pen.*
Vous rappelez-vous [§ 50 (4)] vous les malheurs du frère de votre ami? *Do you remember the misfortunes of your friend's brother?*
Je me rappelle ses malheurs. *I remember his misfortunes.*
Je me les rappelle distinctement. *I recollect them distinctly.*
Je me rappelle de l'avoir vu. *I remember having seen him.*
Vous souvenez-vous de cela? *Do you remember that?*
Je ne m'en souviens pas du tout. *I do not remember it at all.*
À quelle heure vous couchez-vous? *At what hour do you retire?*

* This form is only used with nouns referring to the various parts of the human body.

Nous nous couchons tous les jours au coucher du soleil.	<i>We go to bed every day at sunset.</i>
Nous nous levons de meilleure heure que vous,—au lever du soleil.	<i>We rise earlier than you,—at sun- rise.</i>
Il se lève à cinq heures du matin, et il se couche à dix heures et demie du soir.	<i>He rises at five o'clock in the morn- ing, and goes to bed at half past ten in the evening.</i>

EXERCISE 69.

Associé, m. <i>partner.</i>	Feu, m. <i>fire.</i>	Se brûl-er, l. ref. <i>to</i>
Bois, m. <i>wood.</i>	Main, f. <i>hand.</i>	<i>burn one's self.</i>
Boucher, m. <i>butcher.</i>	Parfaitement, <i>per-</i>	Se chauff-er, l. ref. <i>to</i>
Charpentier, m. <i>car-</i>	<i>fectly.</i>	<i>warm one's self.</i>
<i>pentier.</i>	Perruquier, m. <i>hair-</i>	Se souvenir, <i>to remem-</i>
De meilleure heure,	<i>dresser.</i>	<i>ber (see Venir, § 62).</i>
<i>earlier.</i>	Poêle, m. <i>stove.</i>	S'occup-er, l. <i>to occupy</i>
Doigt, m. <i>finger.</i>	Pouce, m. <i>thumb.</i>	<i>one's self.</i>
Fer, m. <i>iron.</i>	Promesse, f. <i>promise.</i>	Travaill-er, l. <i>to work.</i>

1. Le perruquier se coupe-t-il le pouce? 2. Non, Monsieur, il se coupe les cheveux. 3. Le charpentier ne se coupe-t-il pas la main? 4. Il ne se coupe pas la main, il coupe le bois. 5. Ne vous rappelez-vous pas cette dame? 6. Je me rappelle cette dame et ces messieurs. 7. De quoi vous occupez-vous? 8. Nous nous occupons de nos affaires. 9. Vous souvenez-vous des fusils de votre père? 10. Je ne m'en souviens point du tout. 11. Cette petite fille ne se brûle-t-elle pas? 12. Elle ne se brûle pas, il n'y a pas de feu dans le poêle. 13. Pourquoi le boucher ne se chauffe-t-il pas? 14. Parce qu'il n'a pas froid. 15. Ces enfants se lèvent-ils de meilleure heure que moi? 16. Ils se couchent de bonne heure, et ils se lèvent tous les matins à six heures. 17. Votre associé ne veut-il pas s'asseoir? 18. Il n'a pas le temps de s'asseoir. 19. Vous souvenez-vous de vos promesses? 20. Je m'en souviens parfaitement. 21. Ne vous chauffez-vous pas quand vous avez froid? 22. Je ne me chauffe presque jamais. 23. Ne se couche-t-on pas quand on a sommeil? 24. On se couche quand on a sommeil, et on mange quand on a faim. 25. Quand on se porte bien, se lève-t-on de bonne heure? 26. Quand on se porte bien, on doit (*should*) se lever de bonne heure.

EXERCISE 70.

1. Do you rise early when you are well? 2. When I am well, I rise every morning at five o'clock. 3. Do you remember your cousin L.? 4. I remember him perfectly well. 5. Do you go to bed early? 6. We go to bed at ten o'clock. 7. Does not the tailor burn his fingers? 8. He does not burn his fingers, his iron is not warm. 9. Does the carpenter cut his thumb? 10. He cuts neither his thumb nor his hand. 11. Why do you not warm yourself? 12. I do not warm myself, because I am not cold. 13. Is it not very cold to-day? 14. It is not cold to-day, it rains. 15. Does your hair-dresser rise at sunrise? 16. The carpenter rises at sunrise and goes to bed at sunset.

17. Do you rise earlier than I? 18. We rise every morning at the break of day. 19. Do you cut your hair often? 20. I cut my hair and my nails every month. 21. Do you remember that gentleman? 22. I remember him very well. 23. I do not remember him. 24. Do you cut your fingers when you mend a pen? 25. I cut my hand when I work. 26. Do you remember what you learn? 27. I do not remember all that (*tout ce que*) I learn. 28. Do you know if your father is well? 29. He is very well to-day. 30. Is not your mother well? 31. She is not very well. 32. Do you remember your friend's misfortunes? 33. I remember them. 34. I remember that.

SECTION XXXVIII.

1. The verb **tromper**, used in the active voice, corresponds to the English verb *to deceive* :—

Il trompe tout le monde. *He deceives everybody.*

2. Used reflectively, **se tromper** means *to be mistaken*, literally, *to deceive one's self* :—

On se trompe bien souvent. *One is often mistaken.*

3. **Ennuyer** [§ 50 (2)], used actively, means *to weary the mind, to tease, to bore* :—

Cet homme ennuit ses auditeurs. *That man wearies his hearers.*

Vous nous ennuyez par vos demandes. *You tease, or weary us by your questions.*

4. **S'ennuyer** has no exact correspondent in English. It signifies generally, *to be, or to become mentally weary of a thing or place. To be dull (weary)* :—

Nous nous ennuyons ici. *You are weary of being here.*

Vous ennuyez-vous à la campagne? *Are you weary of being in the country?*

5. **Je m'ennuie** means in fact, *I am mentally weary, I want change, amusement, occupation, &c.* :—

Je m'ennuie partout. *I find no amusement anywhere.*

6. **S'amuser** answers to the English expressions, *to amuse one's self, to take pleasure in, to spend one's time in, to find amusement in, to enjoy one's self* :—

Nous nous amusons à la campagne. *We enjoy ourselves in the country.*

Vous vous amusez à des bagatelles. *You spend your time in trifles.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

On se trompe souvent soi-même *We often deceive ourselves while*
en cherchant à tromper les *seeking to deceive others.*
autres.

Votre commis ne se trompe-t-il pas? *Is not your clerk mistaken?*

Il se trompe bien rarement. *He is very rarely mistaken.*

Ne vous trompez-vous pas fréquemment? *Are you not frequently mistaken?*

Tout le monde est sujet à se tromper.	<i>Every one is apt to be mistaken.</i>
Ce marchand trompe tout le monde.	<i>That merchant deceives everybody.</i>
Sa conversation nous ennuie.	<i>His conversation wearies us.</i>
Vous ennuyez vos amis par vos plaintes.	<i>You weary your friends by your complaints.</i>
Est-ce que je ne vous ennuie pas ?	<i>Do I not weary you ?</i>
Vous ennuyez-vous chez nous ?	<i>Are you weary of remaining with us ?</i>
Je m'ennuie à la ville et je m'amuse à la campagne.	<i>I become weary of the city and find amusement in the country.</i>
A quoi vous amusez-vous ?	<i>In what do you amuse yourself ?</i>
Je m'amuse à lire de l'allemand.	<i>I amuse myself in reading German.</i>

EXERCISE 71.

Apprend-re, 4. ir. to learn.	Ennuy-er, 1. to tire.	Quand, when.
Banquier, m. banker.	Entend-re, 4. to hear	Quelquefois, sometimes.
Client, m. client, customer.	Langue, f. language.	Recev-oir, 3. to receive.
Malade, ill.	Mémoire, m. bill.	Reven-ir, 2. ir. to come back.
Demeur-er, 1. to dwell.	Préfér-er, 1. to prefer.	Tromp-er, 1. to deceive.

1. Aimez-vous à demeurer à la campagne ? 2. Je préfère la campagne à la ville. 3. Vous ennuyez-vous souvent à la campagne ? 4. Quand je m'ennuie à la campagne, je reviens à la ville. 5. Reçoit-on des nouvelles du Général L. ? 6. On n'entend pas parler de lui. 7. Vous trompez-vous quelquefois ? 8. Tout le monde se trompe quelquefois. 9. Le banquier trompe-t-il ses clients ? 10. Il ne trompe ni ses clients ni ses amis, il ne trompe personne. 11. Ne vous trompez-vous pas dans ce mémoire ? 12. Je ne me trompe pas. 13. Vous amusez-vous à lire ou à écrire ? 14. Je m'amuse à apprendre l'allemand et le français. 15. Avez-vous tort d'apprendre les langues ? 16. J'ai raison de les apprendre. 17. Vous ennuyez-vous souvent ? 18. Je m'ennuie quand je n'ai rien à faire. 19. À quoi vous amusez-vous quand vous êtes à la campagne ? 20. Nous nous promenons le matin, et nous travaillons le reste de la journée. 21. Vous portez-vous toujours bien ? 22. Nous sommes quelquefois malades. 23. Envoyez-vous chercher le médecin ? 24. Nous l'envoyons chercher. 25. Je vais le chercher.

EXERCISE 72.

1. Are you not mistaken ? 2. I am not mistaken. 3. Is not the banker mistaken ? 4. He is not mistaken, but his clerk is certainly (*certainement*) mistaken. 5. Does he not deceive you ? 6. He does not deceive me, he deceives nobody. 7. Are you not wrong to deceive your father ? 8. I do not intend to deceive him. 9. Does not the merchant make a mistake ? 10. He makes a mistake in the bill which he writes. 11. Do you like the country or the city ? 12. I prefer the city ; I soon become weary of the country. 13. Does not that child weary you by his questions ? 14. Does not that long

story (*récit*, m.) weary you? 15. It does not weary me, it amuses me. 16. Do you amuse yourself when you are in the country? 17. I amuse myself, I learn French and Italian. 18. Are you not weary of remaining at your uncle's? 19. I am never weary of remaining there. 20. Is your brother often mistaken? 21. Everybody is sometimes mistaken. 22. Does his conversation weary you? 23. On the contrary, it amuses us. 24. Is your brother heard from? 25. Nothing is heard of him [Sect. 34]. 26. Is your sister well? 27. No, Sir, she is ill. 28. Do I weary you? 29. You do not weary me. 30. Am I mistaken? 31. You are not mistaken. 32. Is he often mistaken? 33. He is often mistaken. 34. Do you not rise late? 35. No, Sir, I rise early.

SECTION XXXIX.

1. The pronominal verb, **se passer**, is used idiomatically in the sense of *to do without*. It is followed by the preposition **de** when it comes before a noun or a verb:—

Vous passez-vous de ce livre? *Do you do without that book?*
Je ne puis m'en passer. *I cannot do without it.*

2. **Se servir**, [2. ir. *see* § 64], *to make use of*, also requires the preposition **de** before its object:—

Je me sers de votre canif. *I use your penknife.*
Je ne m'en sers pas. *I do not use it.*

3. The second example of the two rules above, shows that, when the object of those verbs is a thing, it is represented in the sentence by the pronoun **en**:—

Je m'en sers, je m'en passe. *I use it, I do without it.*

4. The pronoun * used as indirect object of a reflexive verb, if representing a person, follows the verb [§ 97 (4)]:—

Je puis me passer de lui. *I can do without him.*
Je m'adresse à vous et à elle. *I apply to you and to her.*

5. **S'endormir** [2. ir. *see* § 64], *to fall asleep*, and **s'éveiller**, *to awake*, are also reflexive:—

Je m'endors aussitôt que je me couche. *I fall asleep as soon as I go to bed.*
Je m'éveille à six heures du matin. *I awake at six o'clock in the morning.*

6. **S'approcher**, *to come near, to approach*; **s'éloigner**, *to draw back, to leave*, take the preposition **de** before a noun. Their object, when a pronoun, is subject to Rules 3 and 4 above:—

Votre fils s'approche-t-il du feu? *Does your son draw near the fire?*
Il ne s'en approche pas. *He does not come near it.*
Il s'éloigne de moi et de vous. *He goes from me and from you.*

* The rule does not apply to the reflexive pronoun, which is sometimes an indirect object.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Vous servez-vous de ce couteau?	<i>Do you use that knife?</i>
Je ne m'en sers pas, il ne coupe pas.	<i>I do not use it, it does not cut.</i>
De quels couteaux vous servez-vous?	<i>What knives do you use?</i>
Nous nous servons de couteaux d'acier.	<i>We use steel knives.</i>
Pouvez-vous vous passer d'argent?	<i>Can you do without money?</i>
Nous ne pouvons nous en passer.	<i>We cannot do without it.</i>
Vous passez-vous de votre maître?	<i>Do you do without your teacher?</i>
Nous nous passons de lui.	<i>We do without him.</i>
Vous adressez-vous à ces messieurs?	<i>Do you apply to those gentlemen?</i>
Nous nous adressons à eux et à vous.	<i>We apply to them and to you.</i>
Vous vous endormez facilement.	<i>You go to sleep easily.</i>
Je m'éveille de très bonne heure.	<i>I awake very early.</i>
Pourquoi vous approchez-vous du feu?	<i>Why do you come near the fire?</i>
Je m'en approche parce que j'ai froid.	<i>I come near it because I am cold.</i>
Nous nous éloignons du feu.	<i>We go from the fire.</i>
Nous nous en éloignons.	<i>We go from it.</i>
Nous nous approchons de notre père.	<i>We go near our father.</i>
Nous nous approchons de lui.	<i>We go near him.</i>

EXERCISE 73.

Aussi, <i>also.</i>	Encre, <i>f. ink.</i>	Ordinairement, <i>generally.</i>
Aussitôt que, <i>as soon as.</i>	Fenêtre, <i>f. window.</i>	Plume, <i>f. pen.</i>
Canif, <i>m. penknife.</i>	Fourchette, <i>f. fork.</i>	Pourquoi, <i>why.</i>
Demoiselle, <i>young lady.</i>	Heure, <i>f. hour, o'clock.</i>	Prêt-er, <i>l. to lend.</i>
Domestique, <i>m. servant.</i>	Moins, <i>less, before.</i>	Quart, <i>m. quarter.</i>
	Obligé, <i>e, obliged.</i>	Taill-er, <i>l. to mend.</i>

1. Pouvez-vous vous passer d'encre? 2. Nous pouvons nous en passer, nous n'avons rien à écrire. 3. Vous servez-vous de votre plume? 4. Je ne m'en sers pas; en avez-vous besoin? 5. Ne voulez-vous pas vous approcher du feu? 6. Je vous suis bien obligé, je n'ai pas froid. 7. Pourquoi ces demoiselles s'éloignent-elles de la fenêtre? 8. Elles s'en éloignent parce qu'il y fait trop froid. 9. Ces enfants ne s'adressent-ils pas à vous? 10. Ils s'adressent à moi et à mon frère. 11. À quelle heure vous éveillez-vous le matin? 12. Je m'éveille ordinairement à six heures moins un quart. 13. Vous levez-vous aussitôt que vous vous éveillez? 14. Je me lève aussitôt que je m'éveille. 15. De quels livres vous servez-vous? 16. Je me sers des miens et des vôtres. 17. Ne vous servez-vous pas de ceux de votre frère? 18. Je m'en sers aussi. 19. Les plumes dont [Sect. 31, R. 9] vous vous servez sont-elles bonnes?

20. Pourquoi votre ami s'éloigne-t-il du feu? 21. Il s'en éloigne parce qu'il a trop chaud. 22. Pourquoi votre domestique s'en approche-t-il? 23. Il s'en approche pour se chauffer. 24. Vous ennuyez-vous ici? 25. Je ne m'ennuie pas.

EXERCISE 74.

1. Will you lend me your penknife? 2. I cannot do without it, I want it to mend my pen. 3. Do you want to use my book? 4. I want to use it, will you lend it to me? 5. What knife does your brother use? 6. He uses my father's knife and my brother's fork. 7. Will you not draw near the fire? 8. We are much obliged to you, we are warm. 9. Is that young lady warm enough? [Sect. 34, 3.] 10. She is very cold. 11. Tell her (*dites-lui*) to come near the fire. 12. Why do you go from the fire? 13. We are too warm. 14. Does your brother leave the window? 15. He leaves the window because he is cold. 16. To whom does that gentleman apply? 17. He applies to me and to my brother. 18. Why does he not apply to me? 19. Because he is ashamed to speak to you. 20. Do you awake early every morning? 21. I awake early when I go to bed early. 22. Why do you go to sleep? 23. I go to sleep because I am tired. 24. Are you afraid to go near your father? 25. I am not afraid to approach him. 26. Can you do without us? 27. We cannot do without you, but we can do without your brother. 28. Do you want my brother's horse? 29. No, Sir, we can do without it. 30. Do you intend to do without money? 31. You know very well that we cannot do without it. 32. Is your brother weary of being here? 33. He is not weary of being here? 34. Come near the fire, my child.

SECTION XL.

1. The verb **aller**, (1 ir. § 64), used pronominally, and preceded by the word **en**, i. e. **s'en aller**, corresponds to the English expressions *to go away*, *to leave* :—

2. INDICATIVE PRESENT OF THE VERB S'EN ALLER, TO GO AWAY.

Je m'en vais,	<i>I go away ;</i>	Nous nous en	<i>We go away ;</i>
Tu t'en vas,	<i>Thou art going</i>	allons,	
	<i>away ;</i>	Vous vous en	<i>You are going</i>
Il s'en va,	<i>He goes away ;</i>	allez,	<i>away ;</i>
		Ils s'en vont,	<i>They go away.</i>

3. THE SAME TENSE CONJUGATED INTERROGATIVELY.

Est-ce que je	<i>Do I go away ?</i>	Nous en allons-	<i>Do we go away ?</i>
m'en vais ?		nous ?	
T'en vas-tu ?	<i>Art thou going</i>	Vous en allez-	<i>Do you go away ?</i>
	<i>away ?</i>	vous ?	
S'en va-t-il ?	<i>Is he going away ?</i>	S'en vont-ils ?	<i>Are they going</i>
			<i>away ?</i>

4. **Se fâcher**, *to be or become angry*, requires the preposition **contre** or **de** before the noun or pronoun following it :—

Se fâche-t-il contre votre frère ? *Does he become angry against your brother ?*

Il se fâche contre lui. *He is angry with him.*

Vous vous fâchez d'un rien. *You get angry at nothing.*

5. **Se réjouir**, *to rejoice*, is followed by the preposition **de** :—

Je me réjouis de votre bonheur. *I rejoice at your happiness.*

6. **Se plaire** [4 ir. see § 64], *to take pleasure, to delight in anything, to like to be in a place*, takes **à** before its object :—

Je me plais à la campagne. *I like to be in the country.*

Je me plais à étudier, à lire. *I take pleasure in studying, in reading.*

7. **Se dépêcher**, **se hâter**, *to make haste*, take **de** before their object :—

Dépêchez-vous de finir vos leçons. *Make haste to finish your lessons.*

Pourquoi ne vous dépêchez-vous pas ? *Why do you not make haste ?*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Le marchand s'en va-t-il aujourd'hui ? *Does the merchant go away to-day ?*

Nous nous en allons demain. *We are going away to-morrow.*

Je m'en vais quand je suis fatigué. *I go away when I am tired.*

Pourquoi vous fâchez-vous contre lui ? *Why do you get angry with him ?*

Il se plaît à jouer, il n'étudie jamais. *He takes pleasure in playing, he never studies.*

Vous plaisez-vous chez vos parents ? *Do you like to be at your relations ?*

De quoi vous réjouissez-vous ? *At what do you rejoice ?*

Nous nous réjouissons de votre succès. *We rejoice at your success.*

Nous nous en réjouissons. *We rejoice at it.*

Pourquoi vous dépêchez-vous ? *Why do you make haste ?*

Nous nous dépêchons d'écrire. *We make haste to write.*

Nous nous plaisons en Angleterre. *We like to be in England.*

Nous ne nous plaisons pas à Paris. *We do not like to be in Paris.*

Nous ne nous y plaisons pas. *We do not like to be there.*

Vous plaisez-vous à New York ? *Do you like to be in New York ?*

Nous nous y plaisons. *We like to be there.*

EXERCISE 75.

Ambassadeur, m. <i>ambassador.</i>	Jou-er, l. <i>to play.</i>	Prochain, e, <i>next.</i>
Arrivée, f. <i>arrival.</i>	Malheur, m. <i>misfortune.</i>	Retourn-er, l. <i>to return.</i>
Autrui, m. <i>others.</i>	Midi, m. <i>noon.</i>	Semaine, f. <i>week.</i>
Cour-ir, 2. ir. <i>to run.</i>	Mieux, <i>better.</i>	Tante, f. <i>aunt.</i>
Jamais, <i>never.</i>	Parce que, <i>because.</i>	Turc, turque, <i>Turkish.</i>

1. Vous en allez-vous bientôt ? 2. Je m'en vais la semaine prochaine. 3. Pourquoi vous en allez-vous ? 4. Parce que je ne me plais pas ici. 5. Vous plaisez-vous mieux chez votre tante qu'ici ? 6. Je m'y plais mieux. 7. N'avez-vous pas tort

de vous en aller si tôt ? 8. J'ai raison de m'en aller. 9. Ne vous réjouissez-vous pas des malheurs d'autrui ? 10. Nous ne nous en réjouissons point. 11. Cet homme se fâche-t-il contre le jardinier ? 12. Il se fâche contre lui parce qu'il ne veut pas se dépêcher. 13. Se fâche-t-il bien souvent ? 14. Il se fâche à tout moment, il se fâche d'un rien. 15. Ne vous dépêchez-vous jamais ? 16. Je me dépêche toujours quand j'ai quelque chose à faire. 17. Ne vous plaisez-vous pas à courir et à jouer ? 18. Je me plais à jouer et mon frère se plaît à lire. 19. Vous réjouissez-vous de l'arrivée de l'ambassadeur turc ? 20. Je m'en réjouis. 21. Ne vous plaisez-vous pas en Amérique ? 22. Je m'y plais beaucoup mieux qu'en France. 23. Votre écolier ne se plaît-il pas chez vous ? 24. Il se plaît chez moi, mais il désire retourner chez son père. 25. Dépêchez-vous, il est déjà midi.

EXERCISE 76.

1. At what hour does your friend go away ? 2. He goes away every morning at nine o'clock. 3. Do you go away with (*avec*) him ? 4. I go away with him when I have time. 5. Will you make haste to finish your letter ? 6. I make haste to finish it. 7. Does the gardener get angry with his brother ? 8. He gets angry against him when he does not make haste. 9. Make haste, my friend, it is ten o'clock. 10. Why do you not make haste ? 11. I like to play, but I do not like to study. 12. Do you like to stay at my house ? 13. I like to stay there. 14. Are you pleased at the arrival of your mother ? 15. I rejoice at it. 16. Is not your brother wrong to go away so soon ? 17. He is right to go away, he has much to do at home. 18. Do you rejoice at other people's misfortunes ? 19. I do not rejoice at them. 20. I rejoice at your success. 21. Does not your brother draw near the fire ? 22. He goes from the fire, he is too warm. 23. Does that young lady get angry with you ? 24. She gets angry at trifles (*de rien*). 25. Do you like to be in Paris ? 26. I like to be there. 27. Can you do without me to-day ? 28. We cannot do without you—make haste to finish your work (*ouvrage*). 29. Do you want your penknife ? 30. I want to use it. 31. Make haste to rise, it is six o'clock. 32. Is it fine weather ? 33. No, Sir, it rains. 34. Is your father well this morning ? 35. Yes, Sir, he is very well.

SECTION XLI.

THE PAST INDEFINITE. [§ 117.]

1. The past indefinite is composed of the present of the indicative of one of the auxiliary verbs, **avoir** and **être** [§ 46(7)], and the participle past of a verb. See the different paradigms of verbs, § 48 and following.

J'ai parlé, je suis arrivé. I have spoken, I have arrived.

2. The past indefinite is used to express an action entirely completed, but performed at a time of which a part is not yet

elapsed, or at a time entirely past, but not specified. [§ 117 (1) (2)]:—

J'ai vu votre père ce matin. *I saw your father this morning.*
Je ne vous ai pas encore parlé. *I have not yet spoken to you.*

3. The past indefinite may also be used, when the time is specified [§ 117 (3)]:—

Je lui ai écrit la semaine dernière. *I wrote to him last week.*
Je lui ai envoyé une lettre le mois dernier. *I sent him a letter last month.*

4. In this tense and in other compound tenses, the adverb is generally placed between the auxiliary verb and the participle [§ 132 (3)]:—

Vous nous avez souvent parlé. *You have often spoken to us.*
Je ne l'ai pas encore vu. *I have not yet seen him.*

5. The adverbs **aujourd'hui**, *to-day*; **demain**, *to-morrow*; **hier**, *yesterday*; polysyllabic adverbs of manner ending in **ment**, and long adverbs generally, do not come between the auxiliary verb and the participle, but follow Rule 1, Sect. 34. See § 132 (5):—

Vous avez lu dernièrement. *You read lately.*

6. The impersonal verb **y avoir** [Sect. 33, R. 3, 4], placed before a word expressing time, corresponds with the English word, *ago*:—

J'ai reçu une lettre il y a huit jours. *I received a letter eight days ago.*
Vous avez acheté une maison il y a un an. *You bought a house a year ago.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Vos neveux nous ont parlé.	<i>Your nephews spoke to us.</i>
Nous avons parlé à votre père.	<i>We spoke to your father.</i>
Le tailleur a-t-il fait mon habit?	<i>Has the tailor made my coat?</i>
Le boulanger a mis son chapeau.	<i>The baker has put on his hat.</i>
Le cordonnier a ôté ses souliers.	<i>The shoemaker has taken his shoes off.</i>
Votre frère a dit quelque chose.	<i>Your brother said something.</i>
Qu'a dit votre sœur?	<i>What did your sister say?</i>
N'avez-vous rien dit à mon cousin?	<i>Have you told my cousin nothing?</i>
Je ne lui ai rien dit.	<i>I have told him nothing.</i>
Je ne l'ai jamais rencontré.	<i>I have never met him.</i>
Je ne leur ai jamais parlé.	<i>I never spoke to them.</i>
Qu'avez-vous fait aujourd'hui?	<i>What have you done to-day?</i>
Hier nous n'avons pas travaillé.	<i>We did not work yesterday.</i>
Leur en avez-vous souvent parlé?	<i>Have you often spoken to them about it?</i>
Je leur en ai souvent parlé.	<i>I have often spoken to them about it.</i>
Je ne le leur ai pas encore dit.	<i>I have not yet said anything to them about it.</i>
N'avez-vous pas assez écrit?	<i>Have you not written enough?</i>
Il m'a écrit il y a longtemps.	<i>He wrote to me a long time ago.</i>
Il nous a répondu il y a un mois.	<i>He replied to us a month ago.</i>

EXERCISE 77.

Avocat, m. *barrister*. Garçon, m. *boy*. Mis, *from mettre, put on*.
 Cela, ceci, *that, this*. Hier, *yesterday*. Plant-er, 1. *to plant*.
 Dit, *from dire, said*. Journée, f. *day*. Poirier, m. *pear-tree*.
 Étudi-er, 1. *to study*. Lu, *from lire, read*. Soulier, m. *shoe*.
 Gant, m. *glove*. Ministre, m. *minister*. Vu, *from voir, seen*.

1. Qui vous a dit cela? 2. L'avocat me l'a dit. 3. Lui avez-vous parlé de cette affaire? 4. Je ne lui en ai pas encore parlé. 5. L'avez-vous vu dernièrement? 6. Je l'ai vu il y a quelques jours. 7. N'avez-vous pas écrit hier? 8. Nous avons lu et écrit toute la journée. [Sect. 25 (9).] 9. N'avez-vous pas ôté vos gants et vos souliers? 10. Je n'ai pas ôté mes gants, mais j'ai ôté mon chapeau. 11. Le tailleur n'a-t-il pas mis son chapeau? 12. Oui, Monsieur, il a mis son chapeau. 13. Qu'avez-vous fait à ce petit garçon? 14. Je ne lui ai rien fait. 15. Ne lui avez-vous point dit que je suis ici? 16. Je ne le lui ai pas encore dit. 17. Qu'avez-vous étudié ce matin? 18. Nous avons étudié nos leçons et nous avons lu nos livres. 19. Le jardinier du ministre a-t-il planté le poirier? 20. Il l'a planté il y a plus de huit jours. 21. Avez-vous acheté un habit de drap noir? 22. J'en ai acheté un. 23. L'avez-vous porté aujourd'hui? 24. Je ne l'ai pas encore porté. 25. Nous avons mis nos souliers et nos bas ce matin.

EXERCISE 78.

1. Have you studied to-day? 2. We have no time to study, we have read a page. 3. Have you not written to my brother? 4. I have not yet written to him. 5. Has not the German written to my mother? 6. He has not yet written to her. 7. Have you told (*à*) my mother that I have taken (*pris*) this book? 8. I have not yet seen your mother. 9. What have you done this morning? 10. We have done nothing. 11. Have you taken off your coat? 12. I have not taken off my coat, it is too cold. 13. Has the bookseller written to your brother? 14. He wrote to him a long time ago. 15. Did he write to him a month ago? 16. He wrote to him more than a year ago. 17. Have you planted a pear-tree? 18. We have planted several. 19. Is it too cold to (*pour*) plant trees? 20. It is too warm. 21. What has the gardener done to your little boy? 22. He has done nothing to him. 23. Has any one done anything to him. 24. No one has done anything to him. 25. Is anything the matter with him? 26. Nothing is the matter with him. 27. Has your father put on his black hat? 28. No, Sir, he has not put on his black hat. 29. What has your brother said? 30. He has said nothing. 31. Has your sister told you that? 32. She told it me. 33. Did you not work yesterday? 34. We did not work yesterday, we had nothing to do. 35. Your little boy has done nothing to-day.

SECTION XLII.

THE PAST PARTICIPLE [§ 131].

1. The past participle, which in French forms a part of every compound tense [§ 46 (8)], is susceptible of changes in its termination.

2. The student will find in the table of the regular verbs [§ 63] the different terminations of the past participle of these verbs, and in § 64 those of the past participle of the irregular verbs.

3. The feminine of past participles is formed by adding *e* mute to the masculine.

4. The plural of a past participle not ending with *s*, is formed by the addition of that letter to the singular, masculine or feminine.

5. The participle past, accompanied by the auxiliary verb **avoir**, never agrees with the nominative or subject [§ 131 (3)]:—

Les demoiselles ont chanté.

The young ladies sang.

Ces messieurs ont lu toute la journée.

Those gentlemen read the whole day.

6. The participle past, having **être** as its auxiliary verb, assumes in its termination the gender and number of the * subject [§ 130 (2)]:—

Ma fille est arrivée ce matin.

My daughter arrived this morning.

Nos frères ne sont pas venus.

Our brothers are not come.

7. The participle past, accompanied by the auxiliary verb **avoir**, agrees in gender and number with its direct object [§ 2 (2), § 43 (4)], when that object precedes the auxiliary [§ 130 (4)]:—

Les dames que nous avons vues.

The ladies whom we have seen.

Les lettres que nous avons lues.

The letters which we have read.

8. When the direct object (accusative) follows the participle, no agreement takes place [§ 130 (5)]:—

Avez-vous vu les dames?

Have you seen the ladies?

Avons-nous lu les lettres?

Have we read the letters?

9. A participle past never agrees with its indirect object (dative or ablative) [§ 2 (3), § 43 (5)]:—

Les dames à qui nous avons parlé.

The ladies to whom we have spoken.

* When **vous** is used as subject in addressing one person, although it governs the verb in the second person plural as in English, yet it requires its adjective or past participle to be in the singular. Thus: **vous êtes aimé** (*you are loved*) indicates, by the past participle being in the singular, that one person only is referred to; whilst **vous êtes aimés**, with the past participle in the plural, points out that **vous** refers to several people.

The pronouns of the first and second persons, singular and plural, are common gender, and may therefore govern their adjective or past participle, in the masculine or in the feminine, according to the gender of the noun to which they refer.

10. The participle past used adjectively, that is, without an auxiliary verb, follows the rule of the adjective [§ 67 (3), § 130 (1)] :—

Des livres bien imprimés. *Well printed books.*

11. The past participle, having for object the relative pronoun *en*, remains invariable [§ 131 (11)] :—

Avez-vous apporté des plumes? *Have you brought pens?*
J'en ai apporté. *I have brought some.*

12. The presence of *en* does not, however, prevent the agreement of the participle, when it is preceded by a direct object [§ 131 (12)] :—

Les plumes que j'en ai apportées. *The pens which I have brought from it.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Vos sœurs ont-elles écrit? *Have your sisters written?*
Elles n'ont pas encore écrit. *They have not yet written.*
Les lettres que nous avons écrites. *The letters which we have written.*

Avez-vous écrit vos lettres? *Have you written your letters?*
Je les ai lues, je les ai écrites. *I have read them, I have written them.*

Les avez-vous apportées? *Have you brought them?*
Je ne les ai pas apportées. *I have not brought them.*
Avez-vous appelé ces dames? *Have you called those ladies?*
Je ne les ai pas appelées. *I have not called them.*

Qui avez-vous vu ce matin? *Whom have you seen this morning?*
Nous avons vu ces demoiselles. *We have seen those young ladies.*
Nous les avons vues. *We have seen them.*

Nous ne leur avons pas parlé. *We have not spoken to them.*
Avez-vous des livres reliés? *Have you any bound books?*
J'ai des livres brochés. *I have unbound (stitched, in paper covers) books.*

Avez-vous acheté des pommes? *Have you bought apples?*
J'en ai acheté. *I have bought some.*
Nous en avons acheté. *We have bought some.*
Nous les en avons persuadés. *We have persuaded them of it.*

EXERCISE 79.

Achet-er, 1. to buy. [§ 50 (5).]	Dit, from dire, 4. <i>in said.</i>	Gard-er, 1. to keep.
Appel-er, 1. to call. [§ 50 (4).]	Donn-er, 1. to give.	Gravure, f. engraving.
Entend-re, 4. to hear.	Exam-er, 1. to examine.	Oubli-er, 1. to forget.
Rec-evoir, 3. to receive.	Reli-er, 1. to bind.	Reven-us, m. p. income.
Bourse, f. purse.	Exprès, on purpose.	Tasse, f. cup.
Broch-er, 1. to stitch.	Fleur, f. flower.	Vu, from voir, 3. <i>in seen.</i>
Cass-er, 1. to break.	Commission, f. errand.	

1. Nous avez-vous apporté nos habits? 2. Nous ne les avons pas encore apportés. 3. Les avez-vous oubliés? 4. Nous ne les avons pas oubliés, mais nous n'avons pas eu le temps de les apporter. 5. Pourquoi n'avez-vous pas appelé les marchands? 6. Je les ai appelés, mais ils ne m'ont pas entendu. 7. Avez-

vous entendu cette musique ? 8. Je l'ai entendue. 9. N'avez-vous pas vu les jolies fleurs que j'ai apportées ? 10. Je les ai vues ; à qui les avez-vous données ? 11. Je ne les ai données à personne, je les ai gardées pour vous. 12. Avez-vous bien examiné ces gravures ? 13. Je les ai bien examinées. 14. Les avez-vous achetées ? 15. Je ne les ai point achetées. 16. N'avez-vous point reçu vos revenus ? 17. Je ne les ai point encore reçus. 18. La domestique a-t-elle cassé ces tasses ? 19. Elle les a cassées. 20. A-t-elle cassé des tasses exprès ? 21. Elle n'en a pas cassé exprès. 22. Avez-vous acheté des livres reliés ou brochés ? 23. J'ai acheté des livres reliés. 24. Nous avez-vous dit ces paroles ? 25. Nous vous les avons dites, mais vous les avez oubliées. 26. Je n'ai pas oublié votre commission.

EXERCISE 80.

1. Have you seen my cups ? 2. I have not yet seen them. 3. Have you brought me my books ? 4. I have not forgotten them, I have left them (*laiss-er*, l.) at my brother's. 5. Has your mother called your sisters ? 6. She has not yet called them. 7. Has the servant told you this news ? (*nouvelle*.) 8. She has told me this news. 9. She has told it me. 10. Have you forgotten my errand ? 11. We have not forgotten it, we have forgotten your money. 12. Where have you left your purse ? 13. We left it at the merchant's. 14. Have you bought the beautiful (*belles*) engravings which I saw at your bookseller's ? 15. I have not seen them. 16. Has your mother bought them ? 17. She has bought books, but she has bought no engravings. 18. Has that little girl broken my cups ? 19. She has broken them on purpose. 20. Does that lady receive her income every month ? 21. She receives it every six months. 22. Is the house which you have bought large ? 23. I have bought no house. 24. Did you receive a letter from your father yesterday ? 25. I received a letter from him four days ago. 26. Have you spoken to those ladies ? 27. I have spoken to them. 28. Have you given them flowers ? 29. I have given them some (*en*). 30. Are the books which you have bought bound ? 31. No, Sir, they are in paper covers. 32. Have you examined that house ? 33. I have not examined it. 34. Your brother (*en*) has examined several (*plusieurs*).

SECTION XLIII.

USE OF THE AUXILIARIES (§ 47).

1. All transitive verbs [§ 44 (2) (3)] always take **avoir** as auxiliary [§ 47 (1)] :—

Nous avons écrit à notre banquier. *We have written to our banker.*

2. Almost all intransitive verbs take the auxiliary **avoir**, when they express action :—

Nous avons couru, marché, parlé. *We have run, walked, spoken.*

3. The compound tenses of a few neuter verbs, expressing

action, are, however, conjugated with **être**, viz.: **aller**, to go; **arriver**, to arrive; **choir**, to fall; **décéder**, to die; **naître**, to be born; **venir**, to come; **parvenir**, to succeed; **devenir**, to become; **revenir**, to return, etc.:—

À quelle heure êtes-vous venu? *At what hour did you come?*
Je suis * né en France. *I was born in France.*

4. A few neuter verbs [§ 47 (3)] take **avoir**, when they express action, and **être**, when they express situation:—

Votre frère a-t-il sorti ce matin? *Has your brother gone out this morning?*

Votre frère est-il sorti? *Is your brother gone out?*

5. The past indefinite of the verb **être** [4. ir.] (**J'ai été**, &c.) is used instead of the preterite indefinite of **aller** (**Je suis allé**), when speaking of a place where one *has* been, with this difference, however, that **être** implies return from such place, whilst **aller** does not:—

Le médecin a été à Paris. *The physician has been at Paris.*
J'ai été à l'église ce matin. *I went to church this morning.*

6. When we are still in a given place or on the road towards it, the expression, **Je suis allé**, &c., must be used:—

Le médecin est allé à Londres. *The physician is gone to London.*
Votre sœur est allée à l'église. *Your sister is gone to church.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous été au bal hier au soir? *Did you go to the ball last evening?*

Nous n'y avons pas été. *We did not go.*

Où cette demoiselle a-t-elle été? *Whither did that young lady go?*

Elle a été chez son frère et chez nous. *She went to her brother's and to our house.*

Où votre sœur est-elle allée ce matin? *Where is your sister gone this morning?*

Elle est allée trouver sa cousine. *She is gone to her cousin's.*

N'avez-vous pas sorti aujourd'hui? *Did you not go out to-day?*

Je n'ai pas encore sorti. *I have not yet been out.*

Où est Monsieur le général? *Where is the general?*

Je ne sais pas, Monsieur, il est sorti. *I do not know, Sir, he is gone out.*

Où ce monsieur est-il né? *Where was that gentleman born?*

Il est né à Paris ou à Lyon. *He was born in Paris or Lyons.*

Votre nièce a-t-elle été voir son frère? *Did your niece go to visit her brother?*

Elle a été le voir hier. *She went to see him yesterday (and is back).*

Elle est allée le voir hier. *She went to see him yesterday (and is not back).*

* Observe that, when the person spoken of is *living*, the French use the present and not the past of the auxiliary with the past participle of **naître**, to be born:—**Cette dame est née en Angleterre.** *That lady (is) was born in England:*—**Mon frère est né en France.** *My brother (is) was born in France.*

EXERCISE 81.

Bijouterie, f. <i>jewellery</i> .	Maçon, m. <i>mason</i> .	Orfèvre, m. <i>goldsmith</i> .
Chapelier, m. <i>hatter</i> .	Magasin, m. <i>warehouse</i> .	Part-ir, 2. ir. <i>to set out</i> .
Espagne, f. <i>Spain</i> .	Malade, <i>sick</i> , or <i>ill</i> .	Retourn-er, 1. <i>to re-</i>
Êté, <i>from être</i> , 4. ir.,	Marchandise, f. <i>mer-</i>	<i>turn</i> .
	<i>been</i> , <i>chandise</i> .	Sort-ir, 2. ir. <i>to go out</i> .
Horloger, m. <i>watch-</i>	Né, <i>from Naître</i> , 4. ir.,	Venu, <i>from venir</i> , 2.
<i>maker</i> .	<i>born</i> .	<i>ir., come</i> .

1. À quelle heure votre sœur est-elle venue? 2. Elle est venue à huit heures moins un quart. 3. Ces demoiselles sont-elles nées à Rouen ou à Caen? 4. Elles ne sont nées ni à Rouen ni à Caen, elles sont nées à Strasbourg. 5. L'horloger est-il chez lui? 6. Non, Monsieur, il est allé à son magasin. 7. A-t-il été à Paris cette année? 8. Oui, Madame, il y a été. 9. Y a-t-il acheté des marchandises? 10. Il y a acheté de la bijouterie. 11. Avez-vous été trouver mon père? 12. J'ai été le trouver. 13. Votre chapelier a-t-il sorti aujourd'hui? 14. Il n'a pas sorti, il est malade. 15. Le maçon est-il à la maison? 16. Non, Madame, il est sorti. 17. Quand est-il sorti? 18. Il est sorti il y a une heure. 19. Votre chapelier est-il arrivé aujourd'hui ou hier? 20. Il est arrivé hier à quatre heures du matin. 21. Notre tailleur a-t-il été voir son père aujourd'hui? 22. Il est parti pour Lyon. 23. L'orfèvre de mon cousin n'est-il pas parti pour l'Espagne? 24. Non, Monsieur, il est retourné en Allemagne. 25. Ma sœur a été à l'église ce matin, et elle est allée à l'école il y a une demi-heure.

EXERCISE 82.

1. Is the physician at home? 2. No, Sir, he is not at home; he is out. 3. Have you been out this morning? 4. No, Sir, I have not been out; I am ill. 5. Is your sister's little girl out? 6. Yes, Sir, she is out; she is at my brother's. 7. At what hour did the hatter arrive? 8. He arrived last evening at nine. 9. Did the jeweller go to Paris or Lyons this year? 10. He went to Paris six months ago, but he is back (*de retour*). 11. Did you go to my brother or to my sister? 12. I have not had time to go to them. 13. Where was that gentleman born? 14. He was born in England, in Exeter, or in Portsmouth. 15. Was not your sister born in Paris? 16. No, Sir, she was born in Madrid, in Spain. 17. Did you tell me that your brother had bought a good house? 18. He has bought a very good house in London. 19. Do you know at what time the watchmaker arrived? 20. He arrived this morning at a quarter to five. 21. Has he brought much jewellery? 22. He has not brought much jewellery, but he has brought many watches (*montre*, f.). 23. Has he been in France or in Germany? 24. He has been in France, in Germany, and in Switzerland (*Suisse*). 25. Is your sister in (*à la maison*), Sir? 26. No, Sir, she is out; she is gone to church. 27. Did she go to school yesterday? 28. She went to school and to church. 29. Is she there now? 30. No, Sir, she is back. 31. Is the

hatter arrived? 32. Yes, Sir, he is arrived. 33. When did he arrive? 34. He arrived yesterday at nine o'clock in the morning.

SECTION XLIV.

1. **Combien de temps** corresponds with the English expression, *how long*.

Combien de temps avez-vous *How long did you live in Italy!*
demeuré en Italie?

2. **Combien de fois** answers to the English, *how often, how many times*.

Combien de fois y avez-vous *How many times have you been*
été? *there?*

3. **Jusqu'où** is used for *how far, what distance, &c.*

Jusqu'où avez-vous été? *How far have you been?*

4. **Jusqu'à quelle heure** (*till what hour*) means also *how late*.

Jusqu'à quelle heure avez-vous attendu? *How late did you wait?*

5. **D'où** means *whence*; **par où**, *which way, in what direction*.

D'où venez-vous, mon ami? *Whence do you come, my friend?*
Par où votre ami est-il allé? *Which way is your friend gone?*

6. **Mener** [§ 50, (6)], **porter**, *to take, to carry*; **amener**, **apporter**, *to bring, to take with one*; **emmener**, **emporter**, *to take, to carry away*. We use **mener**, **amener**, **emmener**, for *to take, to bring, to take away*, in the sense of *conducting, leading, guiding, on foot or in a vehicle*. **Porter**, **apporter**, **emporter**, mean *to carry, to bring, to carry away, &c.*

Menez votre sœur à l'école. *Take your sister to school.*
Portez ce livre à votre sœur. *Take this book to your sister.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Jusqu'où votre frère est-il allé? *How far is your brother gone?*

Il est allé jusqu'à Paris. *He is gone as far as Paris.*

Combien de temps va-t-il y rester? *How long is he going to stay there?*

Il va y rester jusqu'au printemps. *He is going to stay there until spring.*

Combien de temps avez-vous demeuré à Londres? *How long did you live in London?*

Nous y avons demeuré six ans. *We lived there six years.*

Jusqu'où avez-vous été? *How far did you go?*

Nous avons été jusqu'aux Champs Élysées. *We went as far as the Champs Élysées.*

Jusqu'à quelle heure avez-vous écrit? *How late did you write?*

J'ai écrit jusqu'à minuit. *I wrote until midnight.*

D'où viennent ces Allemandes? *Whence come those German ladies?*

Elles viennent d'Aix-la-Chapelle. *They come from Aix-la-Chapelle.*

Par où sont-elles venues? *Which way did they come?*

Elles sont venues par Bruxelles. *They came by Brussels.*

Menez-vous cette petite fille à l'école ?	<i>Do you take (lead) this little girl to school ?</i>
Je ne l'y mène pas, je l'y porte ; elle est trop petite pour marcher.	<i>I do not lead her there, I carry her there ; she is too young to walk.</i>
Amenez-vous vos enfants ?	<i>Do you bring your children ?</i>
Portez-vous une lettre à la poste ?	<i>Do you take a letter to the post-office ?</i>
J'emmène mon cheval, j'emporte ma montre.	<i>I bring away my horse, I bring away my watch.</i>

EXERCISE 83.

Bruit, m. <i>noise.</i>	Ici, <i>here.</i>	Pied, m. <i>foot.</i>
Drap, m. <i>cloth.</i>	Loin, <i>far.</i>	Quitt-er, l. <i>to leave.</i>
Elève, m. <i>pupil.</i>	Magnifique, <i>magnificent.</i>	Soieries, f. p. <i>silk goods.</i>
Fils, m. <i>son.</i>	Midi, <i>noon.</i>	Voiture, f. <i>carriage.</i>
Fin, e. <i>finè.</i>	Nouvelle, f. <i>news.</i>	Voyageur, m. <i>traveller.</i>

1. Le jeune homme est-il allé loin ? 2. Il n'est pas allé bien loin, il n'est allé que jusqu'à Paris. 3. Vos enfants font trop de bruit, pourquoi ne les emmenez-vous pas ? 4. Ils sont malades, ils ne peuvent marcher. 5. Comment les avez-vous amenés ici ? 6. Je les ai amenés en voiture. 7. À quelle heure amenez-vous le médecin ? 8. Je l'amène tous les jours à midi. 9. Combien de fois par jour menez-vous vos élèves à l'église ? 10. Je les mène à l'église deux fois par jour. 11. Combien de fois y avez-vous été ? 12. J'y ai été plusieurs fois. 13. Par où ces voyageurs sont-ils venus ? 14. Ils sont venus par Amiens et par Rouen. 15. D'où apportez-vous cette nouvelle ? 16. Je l'apporte de Cologne. 17. D'où avez-vous amené ces superbes chevaux ? 18. Je les ai amenés d'Angleterre. 19. Si vous quittez la France, avez-vous l'intention d'emmener votre fils ? 20. J'ai l'intention de l'emmener. 21. Qu'avez-vous apporté de France ? 22. Nous avons apporté de magnifiques soieries, des draps fins et des chapeaux de Lyon. 23. Avez-vous amené votre fille à pied ou à cheval ? 24. Je l'ai amenée en voiture. 25. Vos frères nous ont apporté des livres.

EXERCISE 84.

1. How long did your son live in London ? 2. He lived there ten years. 3. How far is the physician gone ? 4. The physician is gone as far as Cologne. 5. Has he taken his son with him ? 6. He has not taken him. 7. How have you brought your two little girls ? 8. I brought one in a carriage, and I carried the other. 9. Is she too little to walk ? 10. She is not too little to walk, but she is ill. 11. Have you brought your horse ? 12. We have brought two horses. 13. Have you brought the books which you have promised me (*promis*) ? 14. I have forgotten to bring them. 15. Has that lady brought her eldest (*aîné*) son ? 16. She has brought all her children. 17. How did they come ? 18. They came in a carriage. 19. Which way did your brother come from Germany ? 20. He came by Aix-la-Chapelle and Brussels. 21. Do you intend to

take your son to school this afternoon? 22. I do not intend to take him there, it is too cold. 23. Is that child too ill to walk? 24. He is too ill to walk, and I intend to carry him. 25. Why do you not take him in a carriage? 26. My brother has taken my horse away. 27. Have you brought the physician? 28. I have not brought him, no one is ill at our house. 29. Will you take this book to church? 30. I have another, I do not want it. 31. Have you taken my letter to the post-office? 32. I have forgotten it. 33. How late did you write? 34. I wrote until midnight (*minuit*). 35. Whence do your sisters come? 36. They come from Paris.

SECTION XLV.

(See Section 36.)

1. Pronominal verbs take *être* as auxiliary [§ 47]:—

Votre cousin s'est promené. *Your cousin has taken a walk.*
 Nos amis se sont flattés. *Our friends have flattered themselves.*

2. Although the compound tenses of pronominal verbs are conjugated with *être*, their past participle agrees with the direct object, when that object precedes the auxiliary, and is invariable when such object follows the participle. The student should be careful to see, if the reflective pronoun be a direct or an indirect object [§ 131]:—

Vous vous êtes flattées, Mesdemoiselles. *You have flattered yourselves, young ladies.*
 Elles se sont donné la main. *They have given (to) each other the hand.*
 La voiture qu'il s'est donnée est belle. *The carriage he has given to himself is beautiful.*

It will be easily perceived that *vous* in the first sentence is a *direct* object, and that *se* in the second and in the third represents an *indirect* object, the direct object of the third being *que*, which, standing for *voiture*, and preceding the auxiliary, governs the past participle *donnée* in the feminine singular.

3. Verbs naturally impersonal, i.e., verbs which are not used otherwise, take *avoir* as an auxiliary:—

Il a plu, il a neigé, il a gelé. *It rained, it snowed, it froze.*

4. Verbs occasionally used in the impersonal form, preserve their proper auxiliary:—

Il lui est arrivé un malheur. *A misfortune has happened to him.*
 A-t-il fait beau temps le mois passé? *Was it fine weather last month?*
 Y a-t-il eu beaucoup de monde? *Were there many people there?*

5. The participle past of an impersonal verb is always invariable [§ 131 (10)]:—

Les pluies qu'il y a eu cet été. *The rains which we have had this summer.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Les Italiennes se sont-elles promenées?	<i>Did the Italian ladies take a walk?</i>
Oui, Monsieur, elles se sont promenées.	<i>Yes, Sir, they have taken a walk.</i>
Nous nous sommes aperçus de cela.	<i>We perceived that, or we took notice of that.</i>
Votre mère s'est-elle bien portée?	<i>Has your mother been well?</i>
Vos sœurs se sont-elles assises?	<i>Did your sisters sit down?</i>
Cette marchandise s'est-elle bien vendue?	<i>Did that merchandise sell well?</i>
Vos enfants se sont-ils appliqués à l'étude?	<i>Did your children apply to study?</i>
Ils s'y sont appliqués.	<i>They applied themselves to it.</i>
Nous nous sommes donné de la peine [§ 131 (1)].	<i>We gave (to) ourselves much trouble.</i>
Quel temps a-t-il fait ce matin?	<i>What weather was it this morning?</i>
N'a-t-il pas fait beau temps?	<i>Was it not fine weather?</i>
Quel malheur vous est-il arrivé?	<i>What misfortune has happened to you?</i>
Que de peines il s'est données!	<i>What pains he has taken!</i>
Vous est-il arrivé quelque chose?	<i>Has anything happened to you?</i>
Il ne m'est rien arrivé.	<i>Nothing has happened to me.</i>

EXERCISE 85.

Acier, m. <i>steel.</i>	Grêl-er, 1. pec. <i>to hail.</i>	Se port-er, 1. ref. <i>to be or do.</i>
S'adress-er, 1. ref. <i>to apply.</i>	Hollandais, e, <i>Dutch.</i>	
S'aperc-evoir, 3. ref. <i>to perceive.</i>	Neig-er, 1. pec. <i>to snow.</i>	Se tromp-er, 1. ref. <i>to be mistaken.</i>
S'asse-oir, 3. ir. ref. <i>to sit down.</i>	Peine, f. <i>trouble.</i>	Se serv-ir, 2. ir. ref. <i>to use.</i>
S'ennuy-er, 1. pec. [§ 50], <i>to grow weary.</i>	Plu, <i>from</i> pleuvoir, <i>rained.</i>	Se vend-re, 4. ref. <i>to sell.</i>
	Plume, f. <i>pen.</i>	

1. À qui vos sœurs se sont-elles adressées? 2. Elles se sont adressées à moi. 3. Ne se sont-elles pas trompées? [Sect. 38. 1.] 4. Elles se sont trompées. 5. Vous êtes-vous aperçu de votre erreur? 6. Je ne m'en suis pas aperçu. 7. Vous êtes-vous ennuyés à la campagne? 8. Nous nous y sommes ennuyés [Sect. 38. 4]. 9. Ces demoiselles se sont-elles ennuyées chez vous? 10. Elles s'y sont ennuyées. 11. De quoi vous êtes-vous servie pour écrire, Mademoiselle? [Sect. 39. 2.] 12. Je me suis servie d'une plume d'or. 13. Ces écolières ne se sont-elles pas servies de plumes d'acier? 14. Elles se sont servies de plumes d'argent. 15. La Hollandaise s'est-elle assise? 16. Elle ne s'est point assise. 17. Lui est-il arrivé un malheur? 18. Il ne lui est rien arrivé, elle ne se porte pas bien. 19. Ne s'est-elle pas donné [§ 131 (1)] de la peine pour rien? 20. Cette soie ne s'est-elle pas bien vendue? 21. Elle s'est très bien vendue. 22. N'a-t-il pas fait beau temps toute la journée? 23. Non, Monsieur, il a plu, il a neigé et il a grêlé. 24. N'est-il rien arrivé aux deux dames que nous avons vues ce matin? 25. Non, Madame, il ne leur est rien arrivé.

EXERCISE 86.

1. Has it rained to-day? 2. It has not rained, but it has hailed and snowed. 3. Has anything happened to your little boy? 4. Nothing has happened to him, but he is ill to-day. 5. Did your sister sit down at your house? 6. She did not sit down, she was ill. 7. Did that cloth sell well? 8. It sold very well, we have sold it all. 9. Did you perceive your error (*erreur*)? 10. We perceived it. 11. Were not your sisters mistaken in this affair? 12. They were not mistaken. 13. Were not your cousins weary of being in the country? 14. They were weary of being at my brother's. 15. What have you used to write your exercises? 16. I used a gold pen, and my brother used a silver pen. 17. Have you used my pen-knife (*canif*)? 18. I have used it. 19. What has happened to you? 20. Nothing has happened to me. 21. Has your mother been well? 22. She has not been well. 23. Did your brothers apply to their studies, at school? 24. They applied to their studies, and have finished their lessons. 25. What weather was it this morning? 26. It was very fine weather. 27. Has your sister taken much trouble in this affair? 28. She has taken much trouble for nothing. 29. Did the Dutch ladies walk? 30. They walked this morning. 31. How far did they walk? 32. They walked as far as your brother's. 33. Have you given each other the hand? 34. We shook hands. 35. Those ladies flattered themselves very much (*beaucoup*).

SECTION XLVI.

THE PASSIVE VERB (§ 55).

1. The passive verb is conjugated by adding to the verb *être* in all its tenses, the past participle of an active verb. See model (§ 55).

2. This participle must agree in gender and number with the subject [§ 130 (2). Sect. 42, R. 6]:—

Ces vieillards sont respectés.	<i>Those old men are respected.</i>
Ces enfants sont aimés de tout le monde.	<i>Those children are loved by everybody.</i>

3. The genius of the French language seems to prefer the active to the passive voice. Many expressions which are in the passive in English, are accordingly rendered into French by the active or reflective [§ 124 (5), § 109 (1)]:—

Cette maison est à louer ou à vendre.	<i>That house is to be let or sold.</i>
---------------------------------------	---

Ma sœur est à plaindre.	<i>My sister is to be pitied.</i>
-------------------------	-----------------------------------

Cet homme est à craindre.	<i>That man is to be feared.</i>
---------------------------	----------------------------------

Cet homme s'appelle H. [Sect. 36, R. 2].	<i>That man is called H.</i>
--	------------------------------

Cet homme se trompe [Sect. 38, R. 2].	<i>That man is mistaken.</i>
---------------------------------------	------------------------------

On dit que cela est ainsi [Sect. 35, R. 2].	<i>They say that it is so.</i>
---	--------------------------------

On nous a dit cela [Sect. 35, R. 2].	<i>We have been told that.</i>
--------------------------------------	--------------------------------

4. In an answer to a question [*see* Sect. 23, R. 12], the pronoun *le* corresponds in signification to the English word *so*, or *it*, expressed or understood. *Le* then is used instead of a noun not determined (not preceded by an article or a possessive adjective), an adjective, a verb or even a whole sentence :—

Ces enfants sont-ils aimés ?	<i>Are those children loved ?</i>
Ils ne le sont pas.	<i>They are not (so).</i>
Ces demoiselles sont-elles sœurs ?	<i>Are those young ladies sisters ?</i>
Elles ne le sont pas.	<i>They are not.</i>

5. In answering a question, a determined noun is replaced by *le*, *la* or *les* according to its gender and number, the English equivalent being in this case *he*, *she* or *they* expressed or understood :—

Êtes-vous la sœur de mon ami ?	<i>Are you the sister of my friend ?</i>
Je la suis.	<i>I am (she).</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Leur conduite est-elle approuvée ?	<i>Is their conduct approved ?</i>
Elle n'est approuvée de personne.	<i>It is approved by nobody.</i>
Cette dame est-elle estimée et respectée ?	<i>Is that lady esteemed and respected ?</i>
Elle n'est ni estimée ni respectée.	<i>She is neither esteemed nor respected.</i>
Ces marchandises sont à vendre.	<i>Those goods are to be sold (for sale).</i>
Ces enfants sont bien à plaindre.	<i>Those children are to be pitied.</i>
A-t-on dit quelque chose à mon frère ?	<i>Has anything been said to my brother ?</i>
On ne lui a rien dit.	<i>Nothing has been said to him.</i>
Savez-vous comment cela s'appelle ?	<i>Do you know how that is called ?</i>
Madame, êtes-vous maîtresse ici ?	<i>Madam, are you mistress here ?</i>
Je ne le suis pas, Monsieur.	<i>I am not (so), Sir.</i>
Êtes-vous la maîtresse de la maison ?	<i>Are you the mistress of the house ?</i>
Je la suis.	<i>I am (she).</i>

EXERCISE 87.

Auteur, m. <i>author</i> .	Lou-er, 1. <i>to let, to</i>	Relieur, m. <i>bookbinder</i> .
Blâm-er, 1. <i>to blame</i> .	<i>praise</i> .	S'appel-er, 1. <i>pec. to be</i>
Car, <i>for</i> .	Mère, f. <i>mother</i> .	<i>called</i> [§ 50 (4)].
Conduite, f. <i>conduct</i> .	Paresseux, se, <i>idle</i> .	Souvent, <i>often</i> .
Croi-re, 4. <i>ir. to believe</i> .	Pun-ir, 2. <i>to punish</i> .	U's-er, 1. <i>to wear out</i> .
Écolier, m. <i>scholar</i> .	Rarement, <i>seldom</i> .	Vend-re, 4. <i>to sell</i> .
Jardin, m. <i>garden</i> .		

1. Votre mère est-elle aimée de sa sœur ? 2. Elle est aimée de son frère et de sa sœur. 3. Les Italiens sont-ils aimés des Français ? 4. Vos écoliers ne sont-ils pas blâmés ? 5. Ils sont blâmés quelquefois. 6. Sont-ils souvent punis ? 7. Ils sont rarement punis. 8. Par qui êtes-vous puni quand vous êtes paresseux ? 9. Jo ne suis jamais puni. 10. Sa conduite a-t-elle été approuvée ? 11. Elle a été approuvée de tout le monde 12.

Elle a été approuvée par* ses amis. 13. Cet auteur est-il estimé? 14. Il est estimé de tout le monde. 15. Le jardin du relieur est-il à vendre ou à louer? 16. On dit qu'il est à louer. 17. Le menuisier a-t-il fait faire un habit? 18. Il en a fait faire deux. 19. Les habits que vous avez achetés sont-ils usés (*worn out*)? 20. Ils sont usés, j'en ai fait faire d'autres. 21. Dit-on que nos amis sont aimés de tout le monde? 22. On ne le dit pas, car on ne le croit pas. 23. Les dames que nous avons vues à l'église hier au soir, sont-elles sœurs? 24. Elles ne le sont pas, on dit qu'elles sont cousines. 25. On dit que l'officier qui vient d'arriver s'appelle S.

EXERCISE 88.

1. Are you blamed or praised? 2. I am neither blamed nor praised. 3. Is not your cousin esteemed by everybody? 4. She is esteemed by nobody. 5. What has been said of my brother? 6. Nothing has been said of him. 7. Do you know if your brother's house is to be let? 8. I have been told (*on m'a dit*) that it is to be sold. 9. Is not an idle person to be pitied? 10. The idle man is to be pitied. 11. Is your son sometimes punished at school? 12. He is always punished when he is idle. 13. Are your scholars praised when they are diligent (*diligent*)? 14. They are praised when they are diligent, and they are blamed when they are idle. 15. Is that lady esteemed and respected? 16. She is loved, esteemed, and respected by everybody. 17. What has been told you? 18. We have been told that your brother is respected by everybody. 19. Madam, are you Mr. S.'s sister? 20. No, Sir, I am not. 21. Madam, are you pleased with your son's conduct? 22. No, Sir, I am not, for he is blamed by everybody. 23. How is that large (*gros*) man called? 24. It is said that he is called H. 25. What is your brother's name? 26. He is called James. 27. Have you been told that my brother is arrived? 28. We have been told so. 29. Are the goods which your brother has bought, for sale? 30. They are not for sale. 31. Has the bookbinder had a coat made? 32. He has had a coat made. 33. Is his other coat worn out? 34. The coat which he bought last year is worn out.

SECTION XLVII.

1. In the compound tenses of the verb *s'en aller*, *to go away* [Sect. 40. 1, 2], the pronoun *en* will of course keep its usual place, after the other pronouns and *before* the auxiliary. It must never come between the auxiliary and the participle:—

Je m'en suis allé, *I went away.* Nous nous en sommes allés, *We went away.*

* The prepositions used after passive verbs are *de* and *par*, viz., *de* generally after passive verbs expressing mental action, as in, *Je suis aimé de mes parents*, *I am loved by my parents*; *par* in any other case, and to avoid the repetition of *de*, e.g., *Cette maison a été bâtie par des ouvriers anglais*, *This house was built by English workmen*; *Il a été blâmé d'une manière sévère par son père*, *He has been blamed in a severe manner by his father.*

Tu t'en es allé, *Thou wentest away.* Vous vous en êtes allés. *You went away.*
 Il s'en est allé, *He went away.* Ils s'en sont allés. *They went away.*

Les dames s'en sont allées. *The ladies are gone away.*
 Les messieurs s'en sont allés. *The gentlemen are gone away.*

2. The verb **aller**, when referring to articles of dress, answers to the English *to fit, to sit* :—

Mon habit va bien. *My coat fits or sits well.*

3. **Seoir** [4. ir. *see table § 64*] answers to the English *to suit, to become* :—

Ce chapeau ne vous sied point. *That hat does not become you.*

4. **Essayer** (§ 50) corresponds in signification to the English *to try on* :—

J'ai essayé mon gilet, il me va bien. *I have tried my waistcoat, it fits me well.*

5. **Être** is often used in French for *appartenir, to belong* [§ 103 (3)] :—

A qui est cette maison ? { *To whom does that house belong ?*
 Elle est à mon cousin. { *Whose house is that ?*
It is my cousin's.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

A quelle heure vous en êtes-vous allé ? *At what hour did you go away ?*

Je m'en suis allé à neuf heures. *I went away at nine o'clock.*

Vous en êtes-vous allées trop tôt, Mesdames ? *Did you go away too soon, ladies ?*

Nous nous en sommes allées trop tard. *We went away too late.*

Cette robe vous va-t-elle bien ? *Does that dress fit you well ?*

Elle ne me va pas bien. *It does not fit me well.*

Cet habit vous sied-il fort bien ? *Does that coat become you very well ?*

Je l'ai essayé, mais il ne me va pas bien. *I have tried it on, but it does not fit me.*

Il lui va bien. *It fits him well.*

Il me gêne, il me serre trop. *It hurts me, it is too tight.*

Cette robe ne lui va pas bien. *That dress does not fit her well.*

Ces livres sont-ils à vous ou à moi ? *Are those books yours or mine ?*

Ils ne sont ni à moi ni à vous. *They belong neither to me nor to you.*

À qui sont-ils donc ? *Whose are they then ?*

Les livres de qui avez-vous apportés ? *Whose books have you brought ?*

J'ai apporté ceux de mon frère. *I have brought my brother's.*

EXERCISE 89.

Beau-frère, m.	Foncé, e, <i>dark.</i>	Neuf, ve, <i>new.</i>
brother-in law.	Gên-er, 1. <i>to hurt, to</i>	Où, <i>where.</i>
Botte, f. <i>boot.</i>	press.	Serr-er, 1. <i>to press.</i>
Clair, e, <i>light.</i>	Gilet, m. <i>waistcoat.</i>	Ten-ir, 2. ir. <i>to hold.</i>
Court, e, <i>short.</i>	Large, <i>wide.</i>	Vers, <i>towards, about.</i>
Étroit, e, <i>narrow, tight.</i>	Mieux, <i>better.</i>	

1. Vos bottes ne vont-elles pas bien ? 2. Elles ne me vont pas bien, elles me serrent trop. 3. Sont-elles trop étroites ? 4. Elles sont trop étroites et trop courtes, elles me gênent. 5. Le cordonnier s'en est-il allé ? 6. Il ne s'en est pas encore allé. 7. À quelle heure les compagnes de votre sœur s'en sont-elles allées ? 8. Elles s'en sont allées vers six heures de l'après-midi. 9. L'habit que vous tenez, est-il à vous ou à votre frère ? 10. Il n'est ni à lui ni à moi, il est à mon beau-frère. 11. Lui va-t-il bien ? 12. Il lui va fort bien, et il lui sied bien. 13. Où l'a-t-il fait faire ? 14. Il l'a fait faire en France ou en Allemagne. 15. À qui sont les livres que lit Mademoiselle votre sœur ? 16. Ils sont à moi. 17. Votre gilet va-t-il mieux que celui de votre beau-frère ? 18. Il me va beaucoup mieux. 19. Votre habit ne vous gêne-t-il pas ? 20. Il ne saurait (*cannot*) me gêner, il est de beaucoup trop large. 21. Avez-vous essayé votre habit neuf ? 22. Je l'ai essayé, mais la couleur ne me sied pas. 23. Est-elle trop claire ? 24. Elle est trop foncée. 25. Les couleurs foncées ne me siéent jamais.

EXERCISE 90.

1. Are your friends gone away ? 2. They are not yet gone away, they are still here. 3. At what hour did your mother go away ? 4. She went away early this morning. 5. Did your little sister go away late ? 6. She went away too soon. 7. Does your sister's new dress become her ? 8. It does not become her. 9. Why does it not become her ? 10. Dark colours never become her. 11. Do light colours become your brother's wife ? 12. They become her very well. 13. Are your new boots too narrow or too wide ? 14. They are neither too narrow nor too wide, they fit very well. 15. Does your brother's waistcoat fit him ? 16. It fits him, but it does not become him. 17. Light colours never become him. 18. Is your coat too tight for you ? 19. It is not too tight for me, it is by far too wide. 20. Whose house is that ? 21. It is my father's and brother's. 22. Whose books have you brought this morning ? 23. I have brought my brother's and my sister's. 24. Whose dresses are those ? 25. They are my mother's, my sister's, and my cousin's. 26. Are not those German books yours ? 27. They are not mine, they are my friend's. 28. Are those pens yours or mine ? 29. They are neither yours nor mine, they are my brother's. 30. Does this hat fit you ? 31. Yes, Sir, it fits me, but it does not become me. 32. Is your hat too small ? 33. It is too large (*grand*). 34. Are your gloves too large ? 35. They are too small, I cannot put them on.

SECTION XLVIII.

1. The verb *falloir* [3. ir.], *to be necessary*, is always used impersonally. See table, § 64.

Il faut, il a fallu.

It is necessary, it was or has been necessary.

Il faut étudier tous les jours.

It is necessary to study every day.

2. As *falloir* has always an impersonal pronoun for subject, the English subject of *must, to be obliged, etc.*, is represented in French by one of the pronouns *me, te, lui, nous, vous, leur*, which is used as indirect object and placed before the verb :—

Il me faut écrire un thème. *I must write an exercise.*
Où nous faut-il aller? *Where must we go?*

For another and more frequently used construction of this verb, see § 73, R. 1.

3. *Falloir* is used in the signification of *to want, to need, to be under the necessity of having* :—

Il me faut un livre. *I need a book.*
Il lui faut de l'argent. *He is in want of money.*

4. When *must* is used in the last acceptance, and has for subject a noun, the latter, which in the corresponding French sentence is indirect object, is preceded by *à* :—

Il faut un livre à ma sœur. *My sister must have a book (needs a book).*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Pour apprendre une langue il faut étudier.	<i>To learn a language it is necessary to study.</i>
Il faut aller à l'église et à l'école.	<i>It is necessary to go to church and to school.</i>
Il faut rester à la maison.	<i>It is necessary to remain at home</i>
Il me faut lire un bon livre.*	<i>I must read a good book.</i>
Il lui faut aller voir sa mère.	<i>She must go and see her mother.</i>
Que nous faut-il faire?	<i>What must we do?</i>
Que leur faut-il lire?	<i>What must they read?</i>
Que leur faut-il?	<i>What do they want, or need?</i>
Il leur faut de l'argent ou du crédit.	<i>They need or must have money or credit.</i>
Vous faut-il cinquante francs?	<i>Do you want or must you have fifty francs?</i>
Il me faut cinquante-cinq francs.	<i>I must have or I need fifty-five francs.</i>
Combien d'argent faut-il à votre père?	<i>How much money does your father want?</i>
Il lui en faut beaucoup.	<i>He wants much (of it).</i>
Nous avons ce qu'il [R.3] nous faut.	<i>We have what we want.</i>

EXERCISE 91.

Aller trouver, <i>to go to a person.</i>	Davantage, <i>more.</i>	Fort, <i>very, very much.</i>
Centime, <i>m. 100th part of a franc.</i>	Désir-er, 1. <i>to wish, to desire.</i>	Modiste, <i>milliner.</i>
Chirurgien, <i>m. surgeon.</i>	Dette, <i>f. debt.</i>	Ouvrage, <i>m. work.</i>
Combien? <i>how much? how many?</i>	Envoy-er, 1. <i>ir. [§ 50 (2)], to send.</i>	Pay-er, 1. <i>pec. [§ 50 (2)], to pay.</i>
	Fin-ir, 2. <i>to finish.</i>	Peine, <i>f. trouble.</i>
		Quand, <i>when.</i>

1. Que faut-il faire aujourd'hui? 2. Aujourd'hui il faut travailler. 3. A-t-il fallu beaucoup travailler pour finir l'ouvrage à temps? 4. Il a fallu travailler toute la journée. 5.

* Another form of this and of the following sentences will be found Section 21, 1, 2.

Quand faut-il écrire à notre ami? 6. Il faut lui écrire aujourd'hui. 7. Me faut-il aller trouver mon père? 8. Il vous faut aller le trouver, il désire vous parler. 9. A-t-il besoin de quelque chose? 10. Il lui faut des livres, des plumes, et de l'encre. 11. Ne lui faut-il pas aussi de l'argent? 12. Il lui en faut beaucoup pour payer ses dettes. 13. Vous faut-il encore quelque chose? 14. Il ne me faut plus rien, j'ai tout ce qu'il me faut. 15. Ne faut-il pas du papier à votre sœur? 16. Il ne lui en faut pas davantage.* 17. Que faut-il envoyer au chirurgien? 18. Il faut lui envoyer de l'argent, il en a grand besoin. 19. La modiste a-t-elle tout ce qu'il lui faut? 20. Elle n'a pas tout ce qu'il lui faut. 21. Combien vous faut-il? 22. Il me faut cinq francs. 23. Ne vous faut-il pas davantage? 24. Il ne me faut pas davantage. 25. Que lui faut-il pour sa peine? 26. Il demande un franc vingt-cinq centimes.

EXERCISE 92.

1. What must we do? 2. You must bring your book and learn your lesson. 3. Is it necessary to write to your brother to-day? 4. It is not necessary to write to him. 5. Has it been necessary to speak to your father? 6. It has been necessary to speak to him. 7. Is it necessary to go to D. to-day? 8. It is necessary to go there (*y*). 9. Must I go to your sister? 10. You must go to her, she wishes to speak to you. 11. How much money must your brother have? 12. He must have ten francs fifty centimes. 13. How many books does your sister want? 14. She must have many books, she reads (*lit*) much. 15. What will you send to the surgeon? 16. We must send him our horse; his own (*le sien*) is ill. 17. Must he not have paper? 18. He must have some; he has letters to write. 19. Must he have much? 20. He must have a quire (*main, f.*). 21. Do you want anything more? (*See No. 13, in the French exercise above.*) 22. I need something more. 23. I need nothing more. 24. Must you have one hundred francs? 25. I must have ten dollars. 26. What does the surgeon want? 27. He must have money to (*pour*) pay his debts. 28. Has the tailor all that he wants? 29. He has not all that he wants. 30. The milliner has received all that she wants. 31. What must you have for your trouble? 32. How much do you want? 33. How much do we want? 34. What must I do? 35. You must write a letter. 36. What must she write? 37. She must write four pages. 38. She must go to church.

SECTION XLIX.

1. The verb **seoir** [3. ir. Sect. 47, R. 3], is also used impersonally:—

Il ne vous sied pas de parler ainsi. *It does not become you to speak thus.*

2. The verb **convenir** [2. ir. *see* § 64], *to suit*, is at times used impersonally. It then signifies *to be suitable, advisable, &c.*:—

Il convient de lui écrire. *It is advisable to write to him.*

* This adverb, in modern usage, is not employed with a noun.

3. The irregular verb **valoir** [see table, § 64] corresponds in signification to the English expression, *to be worth* :—

Cette maison vaut cinq mille francs. *That house is worth five thousand francs.*

4. **Ne rien valoir** means *to be good for nothing* ; **ne pas valoir grand'chose**, *to be worth little, not to be good for much*.

Ce drap ne vaut rien. *That cloth is good for nothing.*
Notre maison ne vaut pas grand'chose. *Our house is not good for much.*

5. **Être riche de . . .** means *to be worth, to possess* ; when a person is the nominative of the verb, **valoir** is never used in this sense.

Cette personne est riche de cinq mille piastres. *That person is worth five thousand dollars.*

6. **Valoir mieux**, used impersonally, means *to be better* ; **valoir la peine**, *to be worth the while* :—

Il vaut mieux travailler que d'être oisif. *It is better to labour than to be idle*

Cela ne vaut pas la peine de parler quand on n'a rien à dire. *It is not worth the while to speak when one has nothing to say.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Il ne vous sied pas de nous faire des reproches. *It does not become you to reproach us.*

Il ne vous convient pas de parler de la sorte. *It is not suitable for you to speak so.*

Il ne nous convient pas d'y aller. *It does not suit us to go there.*

Combien votre jardin vaut-il ? *How much is your garden worth ?*

Il vaut beaucoup plus que le vôtre. *It is much more valuable than yours.*

Il ne vaut pas autant que le mien. *It is not worth as much as mine.*

Notre maison ne vaut rien. *Our house is good for nothing.*

Votre habit ne vaut pas grand'chose. *Your coat is not good for much.*

Cela ne vaut pas la peine. *That is not worth the while.*

Ce château peut valoir cent mille francs. *That villa may be worth one hundred thousand francs.*

De combien votre oncle est-il riche ? *How much is your uncle worth ?*

Il est riche de deux cent mille francs. *He is worth two hundred thousand francs.*

Ne vaut-il pas mieux lire que jouer ? *Is it not better to read than to play ?*

EXERCISE 93.

Assur-er, 1. *to assure*. Couteau, m. *knife*. Pouvoir, 3. *ir. to be*

Au juste, *precisely*. Marché, m. *market*. *able*.

Autre chose, *something else*. Mérit-er, 1. *to deserve*, Reproch-er, 1. *to reproach*.

Cass-er, 1. *to break*. Montre, f. *watch*. Tout au plus, *at most*.

Certaine, f. *about a hundred*. Négligence, f. *neglect*. Va, *from aller, to go*.

Chaine, f. *chain*. Négociant, *merchant*. Vingtaine, f. *about twenty*.

1. Vous sied-il de nous reprocher notre négligence? 2. Il me sied de vous faire des reproches quand vous le méritez. 3. Vous convient-il d'aller trouver mon frère? 4. Il ne me convient pas d'aller le trouver, j'ai autre chose à faire. 5. Combien ce champ peut-il valoir? 6. Il peut valoir une vingtaine [§ 27 (2)] de mille francs. 7. Valez-vous mieux que votre frère? 8. Mon frère vaut beaucoup mieux que moi. 9. Ce couteau ne vaut-il pas plus que le vôtre? 10. Le mien est meilleur, il vaut davantage. 11. Combien votre montre vaut-elle? 12. Elle ne vaut pas grand'chose, elle ne va pas bien. 13. De combien le négociant est-il riche? 14. Je ne puis vous le dire au juste, il est riche d'une centaine de mille francs. 15. Ne vaut-il pas mieux rester ici que d'aller au marché? 16. Il vaut mieux aller au marché. 17. Votre chaîne d'or vaut-elle plus que la mienne? 18. Elle vaut tout autant. 19. Elle ne vaut pas grand'chose, elle est cassée. 20. Cela vaut-il cinquante francs? 21. Cela vaut tout au plus deux francs. 22. Avez-vous demandé au marchand ce que cela vaut? 23. Je ne le lui ai pas demandé. 24. Il m'assure que cela vaut une centaine de francs.

EXERCISE 94.

1. How much is my house worth? 2. It is worth about twenty thousand francs. 3. Is that horse worth as much as this one? 4. This horse is worth two hundred dollars, and that one three hundred. 5. Is it worth the while to write to your brother? 6. It is not worth the while. 7. Is it worth the while to go out when one does not wish to walk? 8. It is not (*n'en*) worth the while. 9. Does it suit you to write to my brother to-morrow? 10. It does not suit me to write to him. 11. Does it become you to reproach me with my neglect? 12. It becomes me to blame (*blâmer*) you when you deserve it. 13. What is that man worth? 14. I cannot tell you exactly, about fifty thousand francs. 15. Is that cloth good? 16. No, Sir, it is good for nothing. 17. Is your gun worth as much as mine? 18. Yes, Sir, it is worth more. 19. Will you go to my father's? 20. No, Sir, I have something else to do. 21. Is it better to go to market early than late? 22. It is better to go early. 23. How much may your horse be worth? 24. It is not worth much, it is very old. 25. Is your watch better than mine? 26. It is not worth much, it does not go. 27. Is that book worth two francs? 28. It is worth one, at most. 29. Have you asked your sister what that book is worth? 30. I have not. [Sect. 24, R. 12. Sect. 46, R. 4.] 31. What must I do? 32. You must speak to your father. 33. Must he have money? 34. He must have some. 35. Has he not sold his horse? 36. He has sold it, but it was not worth much.

SECTION L.

1. When the verbs **prendre** [4. ir. *see* § 64], *to take*; **voler**, *to rob, to steal*; **acheter**, *to buy*; **demander**, *to ask for*; **payer**, *to pay*, are followed by one object only, or by several objects in

the same relation, these objects, if nouns, must not be separated from the verb by a preposition; if pronouns, they take the form of the direct object, *le, la, les* :—

Avez-vous pris le livre ?	<i>Have you taken the book ?</i>
Avez-vous payé le libraire ?	<i>Have you paid the bookseller ?</i>
Avez-vous demandé votre argent ?	<i>Have you asked for your money ?</i>
L'avez-vous demandé ?	<i>Have you asked for him ?</i>

2. When the verbs above mentioned are accompanied by several objects holding different relations, the object representing the thing will be direct, and come under the above rule, and that representing the person, will, if a noun, be preceded by the preposition *à*, and, if a pronoun, assume the form of indirect object :—

J'ai pris le livre à mon frère.	<i>I have taken the book from my brother.</i>
J'ai payé le livre au libraire.	<i>I have paid the bookseller for the book.</i>
Je le lui ai payé, &c.	<i>I have paid him for it.</i>

3. *Demander* is used also in the sense of *to inquire for, to ask for* :—

J'ai demandé ce monsieur.	<i>I asked for that gentleman.</i>
---------------------------	------------------------------------

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Vous a-t-on volé vos livres ?	<i>Has any one stolen your books from you ?</i>
On me les a volés [Sect. 35, 1, 2].	<i>They have been stolen from me.</i>
A-t-on payé les souliers au cordonnier ?	<i>Has the shoemaker been paid for the shoes ?</i>
On ne les lui a pas encore payés.	<i>He has not yet been paid for them.</i>
Qu'a-t-on pris à votre père ?	<i>What has been taken from your father ?</i>
On lui a pris son argent.	<i>His money has been taken from him.</i>
Ne vous a-t-on rien payé ?	<i>Has nothing been paid you ?</i>
On m'a payé presque tout.	<i>I have been paid almost all.</i>
J'ai acheté des livres au libraire.	<i>I bought books from the bookseller.</i>
Qui avez-vous demandé ?	<i>Whom have you asked for ?</i>
J'ai demandé mon frère aîné.	<i>I inquired for my eldest brother.</i>
Avez-vous demandé de l'argent à votre ami ?	<i>Have you asked your friend for money ?</i>
Je ne lui en ai pas demandé.	<i>I have not asked him for any.</i>

EXERCISE 95.

Chapelier, m. <i>hatter</i> .	Loyer, m. <i>rent</i> .	Renseignements, m. p. <i>information</i> .
Crayon, m. <i>pencil</i> .	Pantoufle, f. <i>slipper</i> .	
Demeur-er, l. <i>to dwell</i> .	Paysan, m. <i>peasant</i> .	Revenu, m. <i>income</i> .
Fenêtre, f. <i>window</i> .	Propriétaire, m. <i>landlord</i> .	Tout, e, <i>all</i> .
Frapp-er, l. <i>to knock</i> .	lord.	Voyageur, m. <i>traveller</i> .
Légume, m. <i>vegetable</i> .	Rend-re, 4. <i>to return</i> .	

1. Que vous a-t-on pris ? 2. On m'a pris mes livres, mes crayons et mon canif. 3. Savez-vous qui vous les a pris ? 4. Je ne connais pas celui qui me les a pris, mais je sais qu'il demeure ici. 5. Avez-vous demandé vos livres ? 6. Je les ai

demandés à mon cousin. 7. Vous les a-t-il rendus? 8. Il me les a payés. 9. Vous a-t-on volé beaucoup de fruit cette année? 10. On m'a volé des légumes, mais on ne m'a point volé de fruit. 11. Avez-vous payé votre chapeau au paysan? 12. Je ne le lui ai pas payé, je l'ai payé au chapelier. 13. À qui avez-vous demandé des renseignements? 14. J'en ai demandé au voyageur. 15. Savez-vous qui vient de frapper à la porte? 16. C'est M. L., qui vous demande. 17. Qui avez-vous demandé? 18. J'ai demandé votre frère. 19. Votre frère a-t-il payé toutes ses dettes? 20. Il ne les a pas encore payées, parce qu'il n'a pas reçu ses revenus. 21. Lui avez-vous payé ce que vous lui avez acheté? 22. Je le lui ai payé. 23. Ne leur avez-vous pas payé votre loyer? 24. Je le leur ai payé. 25. Ils nous ont payé notre maison.

EXERCISE 96.

1. Have you paid your landlord? 2. I have paid him my rent. 3. Have you paid him for the windows which you have broken? 4. I have paid him for them. 5. Has the hatter paid for all his hats? 6. He has not paid for them, he has bought them on credit (*à crédit*). 7. Do you pay what you owe, every day? 8. I pay my butcher every week. 9. Have you paid him for his meat? 10. I have paid him for it. 11. For whom did you inquire this morning? 12. I inquired for your brother. 13. Why did you not inquire for my father? 14. I know that your father is in England. 15. Has the hatter been paid for his hats? 16. He has been paid for them. 17. Has your money been taken from you? 18. My hat has been stolen from me. 19. Have you asked your brother for your money? 20. I have asked him for it, but he cannot return it to me. 21. Has he no money? 22. He has just paid all his debts, and he has no money left (*de reste*). 23. Have you asked your father for money? 24. I have not asked him for any, I know that he has none. 25. From what bookseller have you bought your books? 26. I bought them from your bookseller. 27. Are you wrong to pay your debts? 28. I am right to pay them. 29. Who is inquiring for me? 30. The physician is inquiring for you. 31. Who knocks? 32. Your shoemaker knocks.

SECTION LI.

THE PAST DEFINITE. (§ 116.)

1. The past definite may be called the narrative or historical tense of the French. It is used to express an action entirely past, definite and complete in itself. The time may or may not be specified, but every portion of it must be elapsed.

Mon frère partit hier pour Paris. *My brother left yesterday for Paris.*

Aménophis résolut de faire de son fils un conquérant. *Aménophis resolved to make his son a conqueror.*

2. The student will bear in mind that the past indefinite

[Sect. 41] may be used for the past definite. The past definite, however, may never be used for the indefinite. In conversation the indefinite is preferred to the definite, as the latter would appear too formal [§ 117 (3)]:—

3. The past definite may generally be rendered in English by the perfect. The past definite can never be rendered in English by the participle present of the verb preceded by *was*.

J'allai à l'église hier matin. *I went or did go to church yesterday morning.*

4. TERMINATIONS OF THE PAST DEFINITE OF THE FOUR CONJUGATIONS. See Sect. 22, and § 60.

Je	chant	-ai	fin	-is	reç	-us	rend	-is
	<i>sang</i>		<i>finished</i>		<i>received</i>		<i>rendered</i>	
Tu	parl	-as	chér	-is	aperç	-us	vend	-is
	<i>spokest</i>		<i>cherishedst</i>		<i>perceivedst</i>		<i>soldest</i>	
Il	donn	-a	fourn	-it	perç	-ut	tend	-it
	<i>gave</i>		<i>furnished</i>		<i>collected</i>		<i>tended</i>	
Nous	cherch	-âmes	pun	-imes	conç	-ûmes	entend	-imes
	<i>sought</i>		<i>punished</i>		<i>conceived</i>		<i>heard</i>	
Vous	port	-âtes	sais	-ites	d	-ûtes	perd	-ites
	<i>carried</i>		<i>seized</i>		<i>owed</i>		<i>lost</i>	
Ils	aim	-èrent	un	-irent	déc	-urent	mord	-irent
	<i>loved, liked</i>		<i>united</i>		<i>deceived</i>		<i>bit.</i>	

5. It will be seen that the terminations of the second and fourth conjugations are alike.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

On nous parla de vous hier.	<i>They spoke to us of you yesterday.</i>
Le banquier nous donna de l'argent l'année dernière.	<i>The banker gave us money last year.</i>
Le banquier nous a donné de l'argent.	<i>The banker has given us money.</i>
Le professeur nous parla de vous l'année dernière.	<i>The professor spoke to us about you last year.</i>
Il nous a parlé de ses amis et des nôtres.	<i>He spoke to us of his friends and of ours.</i>
Pendant notre voyage, il nous raconta ses aventures.	<i>During our journey he related to us his adventures.</i>
Il nous a raconté l'histoire de sa vie.	<i>He related to us the history of his life.</i>

EXERCISE 97.

Ainé, e, <i>elder, eldest.</i>	Pendant, <i>during.</i>	Se couch-er, l. ref. to
Avec, <i>with.</i>	Pri-er, l. to beg.	<i>go to bed.</i>
Derni-er, ère, <i>last.</i>	Propriétés, f. p. <i>prop-</i>	Séjour, m. <i>stay.</i>
Habillement, m. <i>dress.</i>	<i>erty.</i>	Se lev-er, l. ref. to rise.
Lorsque, <i>when.</i>	Remerci-er, l. to thank.	Semaine, f. <i>week.</i>
Neuf, ve, <i>new.</i>	S'échapper, l. ref. to	Soldat, m. <i>soldier.</i>
Ordinairement, <i>gener-</i>	<i>escape.</i>	Tard, <i>late.</i>
<i>ally.</i>		Trop tôt, <i>too soon.</i>

1. Le banquier reçut-il beaucoup d'argent la semaine dernière? 2. Il en reçut beaucoup. 3. Aussitôt que vous aper-

cûtes votre frère, ne lui parlâtes-vous pas? 4. Dès que je l'aperçus, je lui parlai. 5. Avez-vous déjà porté vos habillements neufs? 6. Je ne les ai pas encore portés. 7. Quand il vous donna de l'argent hier, le remerciâtes-vous? 8. Je le remerciai et je le priai de vous remercier. 9. Avez-vous trouvé vos livres? 10. Je ne les ai pas encore trouvés. 11. Lorsque vous vîntes nous voir ne finîtes-vous pas vos affaires avec mon père? 12. Je les finis alors et je le payai. 13. N'avez-vous pas vu votre sœur aînée pendant votre séjour à Lyon? 14. Je ne l'ai pas vue. 15. Ne vous couchâtes-vous pas trop tôt hier au soir? 16. Je me couchai tard. 17. A quelle heure vous êtes-vous levé ce matin? 18. Je me suis levé à cinq heures; je me lève ordinairement de bonne heure. 19. Ne cherchâtes-vous pas à vous échapper de votre prison l'année dernière? 20. Je n'ai jamais cherché à m'échapper. 21. Avez-vous vendu vos propriétés? 22. Je ne les ai pas vendues. 23. Qu'avez-vous donné au soldat? 24. Je ne lui ai rien donné. 25. Pendant son séjour à B., nous lui donnâmes tout ce qu'il voulut.

EXERCISE 98.

1. What did you receive last week? 2. We received fifty francs from your friend, and twenty-five from your brother. 3. Did you take your son to church with you yesterday? 4. I did not take him there (*y*). 5. What did you lose last year? 6. We lost our money, our clothes, and our horses. 7. Have you looked (*cherchés*) for them? 8. I looked for them, but did not find them. 9. Did they speak of your brother yesterday? 10. They spoke of him and of you. 11. What did the physician give you? 12. He gave me nothing. 13. At what hour did your sister rise yesterday? 14. She rose at five o'clock. 15. Did you rise early this morning? 16. We rose at half-past six. 17. Has your cousin sold all his property? 18. He has not sold it, he has given it to his eldest sister. 19. Has the traveller related his adventures to you? 20. He related them to me. 21. Did that man try (*cherché*) to speak to your father? 22. He tried to speak to him. 23. Did the professor speak of your brother during his stay at your house? 24. He spoke of him. 25. Has your friend worn his new coat? 26. He has not worn it yet. 27. Have you thanked your brother? 28. I have thanked him. 29. What have you given to your eldest sister? 30. I have given her nothing, I have nothing to give her. 31. When your brother gave you a book last year, did you thank him? 32. I did not thank him. 33. Is it late? 34. It is not late, it is only six. 35. Is it fine weather or bad weather? 36. It is very fine weather.

SECTION LII.

1. The terminations of the past definite of irregular verbs are more or less irregular, and, in a few instances, the *stem* [Sect. 22] of the verb is mutilated or altered: —

AVOIR, <i>to have.</i>	ÊTRE, <i>to be.</i>	VOIR, <i>to see.</i>	LIRE, <i>to read.</i>
J' e-us	f-us	v-is	l-us
Tu e-us	f-us	v-is	l-us
Il e-ut	f-ut	v-it	l-ut
Nous e-umes	f-ûmes	v-îmes	l-ûmes
Vous e-ûtes	f-ûtes	v-îtes	l-ûtes
Ils e-urent	f-urent	v-îrent	l-urent

2. **Avoir** and **être**, it will be perceived, take in this tense a new stem, **e-us, f-us; être** and **lire**, though belonging to the 4th conjugation, take the terminations of the 3rd, and **voir**, a verb of the 3rd, takes the terminations of the 2nd and of the 4th.

3. In other instances, the stem of the verb is, as stated in No. 1 of this Section, mutilated, altered, or some letter is added to it. This may be seen in the verbs:—

VENIR, <i>to come.</i>	PRENDRE, <i>to take.</i>	CRAINdre, <i>to fear.</i>	CONNAÎTRE, <i>to know.</i>	CONDUIRE, <i>to conduct.</i>
Je v-ins	pr-is	craign-is	conn-us	conduis-is
Tu v-ins	pr-is	craign-is	conn-us	conduis-is
Il v-int	pr-it	craign-it	conn-ut	conduis-it
Nous v-inmes	pr-îmes	craign-îmes	conn-umes	conduis-îmes
Vous v-întes	pr-îtes	craign-îtes	conn-utes	conduis-îtes
Ils v-inrent	pr-îrent	craign-îrent	conn-urent	conduis-îrent

4. Like **venir** are conjugated all verbs ending in **enir**; like **craindre, connaître, and conduire**, those ending in **indre, âtre, and uire**; and like **prendre**, those composed of this verb and a prefix; as, **comprendre, surprendre, &c.**

5. We would at all times refer the student to the table of irregular verbs, § 64, for those tenses of the irregular verbs with which he is not familiar.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Ne conduisîtes-vous point votre fils en Espagne l'année dernière?	<i>Did you not take your son to Spain last year?</i>
Je l'y conduisis et je l'y laissai.	<i>I took him there and left him there.</i>
Aussitôt que vous vîtes votre frère, ne le reconnûtes-vous pas?	<i>As soon as you saw your brother, did you not recognize him?</i>
Je le reconnus aussitôt que je l'aperçus.	<i>I recognized him as soon as I perceived him.</i>
Le pharmacien ne vint-il pas vous voir?	<i>Did not the apothecary come to see you?</i>
Il vint me voir; il fut bien étonné de trouver chez moi un de ses anciens amis.	<i>He came to see me; he was much astonished to find one of his old friends at my house.</i>
Ne prîtes-vous pas congé de vos amis, hier?	<i>Did you not take leave of your friends yesterday?</i>
Je pris congé d'eux, et je les priai de m'écrire.	<i>I took leave of them, and begged them to write to me.</i>

EXERCISE 99.

Accompagn-er, 1. to accompany.	De mon mieux, <i>as well as I could.</i>	Peintre, m. <i>painter.</i>
À la fin, <i>at last.</i>	Dès que, <i>as soon as.</i>	Sans, <i>without.</i>
Amicalement, <i>kindly.</i>	Écolier, m. <i>scholar.</i>	Secour-ir, 2. ir. to succour.
Arrivée, f. <i>arrival.</i>	Histoire, f. <i>history.</i>	Se dépêch-er, 1. ref. to make haste.
Attend-re, 4. to wait for.	Inform-er, 1. to inform.	Se hât-er, 1. ref. to hasten.
Au secours, <i>to the assistance.</i>	Lu, from lire, 4. ir., to read.	S'ennuy-er, 1. pec. to become weary.
Congé, m. <i>leave.</i>	Notaire, m. <i>notary.</i>	
Cour-ir, 2. ir. to run.		

1. Nos écoliers s'ennuyèrent-ils hier d'attendre si longtemps? 2. Ils furent obligés d'attendre si longtemps, qu'à la fin ils perdirent patience. 3. Ne reçûtes-vous point votre parent amicalement lorsqu'il vint vous voir? 4. Je le reçus de mon mieux. 5. Ne lûtes-vous pas la lettre de votre frère avant hier? 6. Je la lus et je l'envoyai à mon oncle. 7. Ne courûtes-vous pas au secours de votre frère aussitôt que vous le vîtes en danger? 8. Je me hâtai de le secourir. 9. Ne vous êtes-vous pas dépêchés de venir? 10. Nous nous sommes dépêchés. 11. Aussitôt que vous eûtes aperçu mon frère ne m'informâtes-vous pas de son arrivée? 12. Je vous en informai. 13. A quelle heure votre sœur est-elle venue aujourd'hui? 14. Elle est venue à midi. 15. Vos compagnons vinrent-ils hier vous prier de les accompagner? 16. Ils vinrent me voir, mais ils me quittèrent sans me parler de leur voyage. 17. Ne peignîtes-vous pas un tableau l'année dernière? 18. Je peignis un tableau d'histoire. 19. Le peintre italien a-t-il fini son portrait? 20. Il le finit hier. 21. Il l'a fini ce matin. 22. Dès que j'eus reçu cette nouvelle, j'envoyai chercher le notaire. 23. Ce jeune homme a-t-il pris congé de son père? 24. Il a pris congé de lui. 25. Il prit congé de lui hier.

EXERCISE 100.

1. Did the notary accompany you yesterday? 2. He accompanied me as far as (*jusque chez*) your brother's. 3. Did your companion take leave of you yesterday? 4. He took leave of me this morning. 5. Did you read yesterday the book which I have lent you? 6. I read it the day before yesterday (*avant-hier*). 7. At what time did the painter come this morning? 8. He came at half-past nine. 9. Has he finished your father's portrait? 10. He painted all day yesterday, but the portrait is not yet finished. 11. Did you not run to your father's relief when you saw him in danger? 12. I hastened to succour him. 13. What did you do when you came? 14. As soon as I came I sent for my brother. 15. Did you take your sister to Germany last year? 16. I took her there this year. 17. Did you take your children to school yesterday? 18. I took them to my brother's. 19. Do you paint an historical picture? 20. I painted last year an historical picture. 21. Did your

sister beg you to accompany her? 22. She begged me to accompany her. 23. Did you send for the notary as soon as you heard from your father? 24. I sent for him. 25. When did the notary take leave of you? 26. He took leave of me this morning at nine. 27. Has the apothecary finished his letter? 28. He has not yet finished it. 29. Were you not astonished yesterday to see that lady? 30. I was not astonished to see her. 31. Did you make haste to read your book last night (*hier au soir*)? 32. I made haste to read it. 33. Have you finished it? 34. I have not yet finished it.

SECTION LIII.

THE IMPERFECT (§ 115).

1. The imperfect or simultaneous past tense may be called the descriptive tense of the French. The action which it represents, or the situation which it describes, is imperfect of itself. This tense leaves the beginning, duration, and end of an action undetermined. It may often be rendered in English by the past tense of *to be*, and the participle present of the leading verb [§ 115, 116]:—

J'écrivais ce matin quand vous	<i>I was writing this morning when</i>
êtes entré.	<i>you came in.</i>
Je passais hier quand elle m'a	<i>I was passing yesterday when</i>
appelé.	<i>she called me.</i>

2. The imperfect is also used to express an action which is customary or often repeated. It may then be rendered in English by the word *used* placed before the infinitive of the leading verb:—

L'année dernière, j'allais tous les	<i>Last year, I went (used to go)</i>
jours à l'école.	<i>every day to school.</i>
Quand nous demeurions à la cam-	<i>When we were (used to be) in the</i>
pagne, nous nous couchions or-	<i>country, we used to go to bed</i>
динаirement à neuf heures.	<i>at nine o'clock.</i>

3. The imperfect can seldom be rendered in English by the past tense which takes *did* * as an auxiliary. The past definite never corresponds in meaning to the English imperfect composed of the past tense of *to be*, and the participle present. It cannot be rendered by the infinitive of the leading verb preceded by *used*.

J'allais à la chasse hier matin	<i>I was going a hunting yesterday</i>
quand nous nous rencontrâmes.	<i>morning when we met (did</i>
	<i>meet).</i>
J'allai à la chasse hier matin.	<i>I went (did go) a hunting yester-</i>
	<i>day morning.</i>

4. The imperfect is formed from the participle present, by changing *ant* into *ais*, &c. [§ 62].

* Except when, in interrogative sentences, *did* is employed, instead of *used*, expressed or understood.

5. TERMINATIONS OF THE IMPERFECT TENSE OF THE FOUR CONJUGATIONS.

Je	chant	-ais	fin	-issais	rec	-evais	rend	-ais
<i>I</i>	<i>was singing</i>		<i>was finishing</i>		<i>was receiving</i>		<i>was rendering</i>	
Tu	parl	-ais	cher	-issais	aperç	-evais	vend	-ais
<i>Thou</i>	<i>wast speaking</i>		<i>wast cherishing</i>		<i>wast perceiving</i>		<i>wast selling</i>	
Il	donn	-ait	fourn	-issait	perc	-evait	tend	-ait
<i>He</i>	<i>was giving</i>		<i>was furnishing</i>		<i>was collecting</i>		<i>was tending</i>	
Nous	cherch	-ions	pun	-issions	conc	-evions	entend	-ions
<i>We</i>	<i>were seeking</i>		<i>were punishing</i>		<i>were conceiving</i>		<i>were hearing</i>	
Vous	port	-iez	sais	-issiez	d	-eviez	perd	-iez
<i>You</i>	<i>were carrying</i>		<i>were seizing</i>		<i>were owing</i>		<i>were losing</i>	
Ils	aim	-aient	un	-issaient	déc	-evaient	mord	-aient
<i>They</i>	<i>were loving</i>		<i>were uniting</i>		<i>were deceiving</i>		<i>were biting</i>	

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Je chantais quand on m'apporta votre lettre.	<i>I was singing when they brought me your letter.</i>
J'aimais autrefois à lire les poètes anglais.	<i>I used to like formerly to read the English poets.</i>
J'étais dans votre chambre lors- que vous êtes entré.	<i>I was in your room when you came in.</i>
Je parlai hier toute la matinée.	<i>I spoke yesterday the whole morning.</i>
Je parlais hier à votre père, lorsque votre ami nous ren- contra.	<i>I was speaking to your father when your friend met us yester- day.</i>
Je cherchais votre père.	<i>I was looking for your father.</i>

EXERCISE 101.

Autrefois, <i>formerly.</i>	Écolier, <i>m. scholar.</i>	Presque pas, <i>almost</i>
Brun, <i>e, brown.</i>	Mérit-er, <i>l. to deserve.</i>	<i>none.</i>
Chambre, <i>f. room.</i>	Noir, <i>e, black.</i>	Retrouv-er, <i>l. to find</i>
Crayon, <i>m. pencil.</i>	Pantoufle, <i>f. slipper.</i>	<i>again.</i>
Demeur-er, <i>to live,</i>	Parchemin, <i>m. parch-</i>	Thème, <i>m. exercise.</i>
<i>dwell.</i>	<i>ment.</i>	Vert, <i>e, green.</i>
De nouveau, <i>again.</i>		

1. De qui parliez-vous ce matin quand je suis venu vous trouver? 2. Ma cousine parlait de son frère et je parlais du mien. 3. N'aimiez-vous pas mieux le bœuf que le mouton, autrefois? 4. J'aimais le bœuf, mais je n'ai jamais aimé le mouton. 5. Ne vendiez-vous pas beaucoup de livres, lorsque vous demeuriez à Paris? 6. J'en vendais beaucoup, parce que j'étais libraire. 7. Le libraire a-t-il vendu beaucoup de crayons ce matin? 8. Il a vendu beaucoup de crayons aujourd'hui. 9. Vendiez-vous beaucoup de parchemin lorsque vous étiez libraire? 10. Je n'en vendais presque pas. 11. Votre frère portait-il un habit vert lorsqu'il demeurait à Londres? 12. Il portait un habit brun et des pantoufles noires. 13. Que cherchiez-vous? 14. Je cherchais mon livre. 15. Depuis quand l'aviez-vous perdu? 16. Je l'avais perdu depuis hier. 17. L'avez-vous retrouvé? 18. Je l'avais retrouvé, mais je l'ai perdu de nouveau. 19. Ce boulanger vous fournissait-il de bon pain? 20. Il nous en fournissait d'excellent. 21. Pu-

nissiez-vous souvent vos écoliers? 22. Je les punissais quand ils le méritaient. 23. Où étiez-vous ce matin quand je vous cherchais? 24. J'étais dans ma chambre. 25. Je finissais mon thème.

EXERCISE 102.

1. Who was at your house this morning? 2. My friend G. was there, and was looking for you. 3. Did you speak to my father yesterday? 4. I was speaking to him when they brought me your letter. 5. Did your father use to wear a white hat when he lived in London? 6. He used to wear a black hat, and my brother wore a black coat. 7. Were you singing when my father came? 8. No, Sir, I was finishing my exercise. 9. Had you lost your pencil this morning? 10. I had lost it, and was looking for it when you spoke to me. 11. You used to like reading (*la lecture*), did your sister (used to) like it also? 12. She liked it also. 13. What song were you singing this morning? 14. I was singing an Italian song. 15. Have you been afraid to speak to me? 16. I have never been afraid to speak to you. 17. Have you brought my book? 18. I have not brought it.

SECTION LIV.

THE IMPERFECT (*continued*).

1. The imperfect of the indicative of every French verb, regular or irregular, ends in **ais, ais, ait, ions, iez, aient**.

2. No verb of the first conjugation, **er**, is irregular in this tense.

3. The only irregularity found in the imperfect indicative of the irregular verbs of the second conjugation, **ir**, is that, **iss** is not inserted between the stem and the ending: as, **ven-ir, je ven-ais; cour-ir, je cour-ais; cueill-ir, je cueill-ais**.

4. The irregular verbs of the third conjugation, **oir**, change this termination into **ais**, &c., like the regular verbs of the same; as, **sav-oir, je sav-ais; av-oir, j'av-ais**. Exceptions: **se-oir, to become; voir, to see**; and their compounds, and **déchoir** [*see* § 64].

5. The changes which the stem of the irregular verbs of the fourth conjugation undergoes, in this tense, are too various to admit of a complete classification. We, however, offer the following:—

PRENDRE, <i>to take.</i>	ÉCRIRE, <i>to write.</i>	CRAINdre, <i>to fear.</i>
Je pren -ais, etc.	écriv -ais, etc.	craign -ais, etc.
CONNAÎTRE, <i>to know.</i>	CONDUIRE, <i>to conduct.</i>	
Connaiss -ais, etc.	Conduis -ais, etc.	

6. Like **prendre** and **écrire** are conjugated, in this tense, those verbs in which **prendre** and **crire** appear in composition: as, **comprendre, je comprenais; souscrire, je souscrivais**.—Like **craindre** and **connaître**, those ending in **indre** and **aitre**: **teindre, je teignais; paraître, je paraissais**.—Like **conduire**

those ending in *ire* : *as, lire, je lisais ; faire, je faisais ; luire, je luisais ; dire, je disais, &c.*

7. *Mettre* and its compounds, and *être* are regular in this tense.

8. The participle present, from which the French grammarians derive the imperfect, presents of course the same irregularities : *as, venant, valant, prenant, écrivant, craignant, connaissant, conduisant*. Exceptions : *avcir, ayant ; savoir, sachant*.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

De quoi notre ami avait-il peur ?	<i>Of what was our friend afraid ?</i>
Il n'avait peur de rien.	<i>He was afraid of nothing.</i>
N'aviez-vous pas besoin de mon frère ?	<i>Did you not want my brother ?</i>
Nous avions besoin de lui.	<i>We wanted him.</i>
Le marchand n'avait-il pas besoin d'argent ?	<i>Did not the merchant want money ?</i>
Il en avait grand besoin.	<i>He had great need of it.</i>
Quelle voiture conduisiez-vous ?	<i>What carriage were you driving ?</i>
Pour qui me preniez-vous ?	<i>For whom were you taking me ?</i>
Je venais vous trouver quand je vous rencontrais.	<i>I was coming to you when I met you.</i>
A qui écriviez-vous ce matin ?	<i>To whom were you writing this morning ?</i>
J'écrivais à ma sœur et à mon frère.	<i>I was writing to my sister and to my brother.</i>

EXERCISE 103.

Autrement, <i>otherwise</i> .	Pêche, <i>f. fishing</i> .	Teind-re, <i>4. ir. to dye</i> .
Cass-er, <i>1. to break</i> .	Peind-re, <i>4. ir. to paint</i> .	Teinturier, <i>m. dyer</i> .
Chasse, <i>f. hunting</i> .	Rencontr-er, <i>1. to meet</i> .	Toile, <i>f. linen cloth</i> .
Di-re, <i>4. ir. to say</i> .	Reven-ir, <i>2. ir. to re-</i>	Val-oir, <i>3. ir. to be</i>
Moins (au), <i>at least</i> .	<i>turn</i> .	<i>worth</i> .
Montre, <i>f. watch</i> .	Sav-oir, <i>3. ir. to know</i> .	Ven-ir, <i>2. ir. to come</i> ,
Mort, <i>e, dead</i> .	Se tromper, <i>1. to be</i>	<i>to have just.*</i>
Offens-er, <i>1. to offend</i> .	<i>mistaken</i> .	Vite, <i>quickly</i> .
Oubli-er, <i>1. to forget</i> .		

1. Pourquoi n'écriviez-vous pas plus vite ce matin ? 2. Parce que j'avais peur de me tromper. 3. Ne craigniez-vous pas d'offenser cette dame ? 4. Je craignais de l'offenser, mais je ne pouvais faire autrement ? 5. Que peigniez-vous ce matin ? 6. Je peignais un tableau d'histoire. 7. Qu'est-ce que votre teinturier teignait ? 8. Il teignait du drap, de la soie et de la toile. 9. De quelle couleur les teignait-il ? 10. Il teignait le drap en noir, et la soie et la toile en vert. 11. Conduisiez-vous le jeune Polonais à l'école lorsque je vous ai rencontré ? 12. Je conduisais mon fils aîné à l'église. 13. Que lisiez-vous ? 14. Je lisais des livres que je venais d'acheter. 15. Ne saviez-vous pas que ce monsieur était mort ? 16. Je l'avais oublié. 17. Combien la montre que vous avez cassée valait-elle ? 18. Elle

* In the sense of *to have just*, *venir* is always followed by *de* and a verb in the infinitive, and, in this acceptation, is only used in the present and imperfect of the indicative.

valait au moins deux cents francs. 19. Ne valait-il pas mieux rester ici que d'aller à la chasse? 20. Il valait beaucoup mieux aller à l'école. 21. Quo vous disait votre ami? 22. Il me disait que son frère est revenu d'Espagne. 23. N'alliez-vous pas à la chasse tous les jours lorsque vous demeuriez à la campagne? 24. J'allais souvent à la pêche. 25. Mon frère allait tous les jours à l'école quand il était ici.

EXERCISE 104.

1. Were you afraid this morning when you came to our house? 2. I was afraid. 3. Of what were you afraid? 4. I was afraid of the horse. 5. Was not your friend afraid of falling? (*de tomber. See Sect. 20, R. 2. 4.*) 6. He was not afraid of falling, but he was afraid of making a mistake (*de se tromper. See 2. in Exercise above*). 7. Were you taking your son to school? 8. I was conducting him to school. 9. What colour was the dyer dyeing the silk? 10. He was dyeing some red and some green. 11. Was he dyeing his linen cloth black or green? 12. He was neither dyeing it black nor green, he was dyeing it pink (*rose*). 13. What was the gentleman reading? 14. He was reading a letter which he had just received. 15. Were you cold when you came here? 16. I was cold, hungry, and thirsty. 17. Were you not ashamed of your conduct (*conduite*)? 18. I was ashamed of it. 19. Whither were you going when I met you? 20. I was going to your house. 21. Were you driving your brother's carriage? 22. I was driving my own (*la mienne*). 23. Were you writing to me or to my father? 24. I was writing to your friend's cousin.

SECTION LV.

THE PLUPERFECT AND THE PAST ANTERIOR (§ 118, 119).

1. The pluperfect is composed of the imperfect of the auxiliary, and of the past participle of the leading verb: **j'avais parlé**, *I had spoken*; **j'étais venu**, *I had come*.

2. This tense describes an action or situation which took place before another, but *without depending upon it* :—

J'avais déjeuné quand il entra. I had breakfasted when he came in.

3. It is also used to express a habit, an act often repeated, if it used to take place after another :—

Dès que j'avais fini ma tâche, je m'en allais. As soon as I had finished my task I used to go away.

4. Finally, it is employed to represent an action entirely completed, which took place at a time entirely elapsed, and, in this sense, is the equivalent of the corresponding English tense :—

J'avais désiré voyager. I had desired to travel.

5. The past anterior is formed from the past definite of the auxiliary, and the past participle of the leading verb: **J'eus parlé**, *I had spoken*; **je fus venu**, *I had come*.

6. The past anterior expresses generally a momentary action, which took place before another action. The latter immediately follows the former, and *depends upon it*. The action expressed by this tense is not a customary one. The past anterior is often preceded by *à peine, scarcely* ; *dès que, aussitôt que, as soon as* ; *quand, lorsque, when* [§ 119].

Dès que j'eus fini ma tâche, je m'en allai. *As soon as I had finished my task I went away.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Aviez-vous eu soin de vos effets ?	<i>Had you taken care of your things ?</i>
J'en avais eu soin.	<i>I had taken care of them.</i>
N'aviez-vous pas eu besoin de moi ?	<i>Had you not wanted me ?</i>
J'avais eu besoin de vous et de votre frère.	<i>I had wanted you and your brother.</i>
N'aviez-vous pas eu l'intention de me parler ?	<i>Had you not intended to speak to me ?</i>
Dès que vous eûtes fini votre lettre, ne la portâtes-vous pas à la poste ?	<i>As soon as you had finished your letter did you not carry it to the post-office ?</i>
Dès que vous aviez fini vos lettres, ne les portiez-vous pas à la poste ?	<i>As soon as your letters were finished, did you not take them to the post-office ?</i>
Dès que vous fûtes arrivé, ne commençâtes-vous pas à écrire ?	<i>As soon as you had arrived, did you not commence writing ?</i>
Dès que vous étiez arrivé, ne commençiez-vous pas à écrire ?	<i>As soon as you used to arrive, did you not commence writing ?</i>

EXERCISE 105.

Arrêt-er, 1. <i>to stop.</i>	Malade, <i>ill.</i>	Retrouv-er, 1. <i>to find</i>
Bal, m. <i>ball.</i>	Musicien, m. <i>musician.</i>	<i>again.</i>
Bourse, f. <i>purse.</i>	Oubli-er, 1. <i>to forget.</i>	Se couch-er, 1. ref. <i>to go to bed.</i>
Dangereusement, <i>dangerously.</i>	Part-ir, 2. <i>to set out.</i>	Se lev-er, 1. ref. <i>to rise.</i>
Dîner, m. <i>dinner.</i>	Perd-re, 4. <i>to lose.</i>	Sort-ir, 2. ir. <i>to go out.</i>
Égar-er, 1. <i>to mislay.</i>	Remont-er, 1. <i>to wind up.</i>	Spectacle, m. <i>play.</i>
Invit-er, 1. <i>to invite.</i>		

1. Ne saviez-vous pas où le musicien était allé ? 2. Je savais qu'il était allé à Paris. 3. Ne vous avait-on pas dit que votre frère était mort ? 4. On m'avait dit qu'il était dangereusement malade. 5. Ne vous couchiez-vous pas ordinairement dès que vous aviez fini vos leçons ? 6. Dès que je les avais finies, j'allais au spectacle. 7. Dès que vous eûtes fini vos leçons, que fîtes-vous hier au soir ? 8. Aussitôt que je les eus finies, j'allai au bal. 9. Cette petite fille n'avait-elle pas envie de dormir ? 10. Elle avait plus envie de dormir que d'étudier. 11. Qu'aviez-vous fait de (*with*) votre livre quand je vous le demandai ? 12. Je l'avais égaré. 13. Je l'avais oublié dans le jardin. 14. Pourquoi votre montre était-elle arrêtée ? 15. Parce que j'avais oublié de la remonter. 16. L'horloger ne l'avait-il pas remontée ? 17. Il avait oublié de le faire. 18. N'aviez-vous pas perdu votre bourse ? 19. Je l'avais perdue,

mais je l'ai retrouvée. 20. Votre cousin était-il parti? 21. Il n'était pas encore parti. 22. Était-il sorti? 23. Il était sorti avec ma mère. 24. Où était-il allé? 25. Il était allé chez mon frère, qui l'avait invité à dîner.

EXERCISE 106.

1. Had you not intended to speak to my brother? 2. I had intended to speak to him, but he was gone. 3. Did your sister go to bed last evening as soon as she had read (*lu*) her book? 4. She went to bed as soon as she had read it. 5. Were you told that your sister was ill? 6. I was told that she had been dangerously ill. 7. Did you know what you had done with your pen? 8. I knew that I had mislaid it. 9. How many of your books have you mislaid? 10. I had mislaid five, but my brother has found them. 11. Where had you left them? 12. I had left them in the garden. 13. Was your brother's watch stopped? 14. It was stopped. 15. Why was it stopped? 16. He had forgotten to wind it up. 17. Had he not lost his key? (*clef*, f.) 18. He had not lost it. 19. Was the dyer gone? 20. He was not yet gone, he intended to leave at five. 21. Had you spoken to him when I came yesterday? 22. I had spoken to him. 23. Had you told him that my sister is here? 24. I had told him. 25. Is he still here? 26. No, Sir, he is gone, he went this morning at six.

SECTION LVI.

1. We have given [Sect. 4, R. 4, and § 76 (4)] a rule for the place of the noun, subject of an interrogative sentence. To avoid confusing the student, we have hitherto refrained from introducing another construction which is often used by the French instead of that given in the rule. When an interrogative sentence commences with *où*, *where*; *que*, *what*; *quel*, *which*; *combien*, *how much*, *how many*; and *quand*, *when*: the noun may be placed immediately after the verb. This construction is similar to that of the English interrogative sentence when the verb is an auxiliary [§ 76 (5)]:—

Où sont nos amis et nos parents? *Where are our friends and relations?*
Que fait votre correspondant? *What is your correspondent doing?*

2. When there are in a French sentence two objects of equal length, the direct should precede the indirect [§ 76 (7)].

Avez-vous donné les jouets à l'enfant? *Have you given the child the play-things?*
Avez-vous donné cette lettre à l'homme? *Have you given the man that letter?*

3. The indirect object precedes the direct, when the latter is followed by a relative pronoun, or by other words qualifying it, and rendering it much longer than the indirect [§ 76 (8)].

The indirect object should also precede the direct, when the sentence would otherwise be equivocal [§ 76 (9)]:—

Avez-vous donné à l'enfant les jouets que vous lui aviez promis? *Have you given the child the play-things which you had promised him?*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Quel âge a cette demoiselle? *How old is that young lady?*
 Que veulent dire ces messieurs? *What do those gentlemen mean?*
 Où sont allés messieurs vos frères? *Where are your brothers gone?*
 Combien d'enfants a ce monsieur? *How many children has that gentleman?*
 Avez-vous payé le blé à votre marchand? *Have you paid your merchant for the corn?*
 J'ai payé mon habit au tailleur. *I paid the tailor for my coat.*
 N'aviez-vous pas demandé cela à l'enfant? *Had you not asked the child for that?*

EXERCISE 107.

Accompagn-er, 1. <i>to accompany.</i>	Chaîne, f. <i>chain.</i>	Derni-er, ère, <i>last.</i>
Ainé, e, <i>eldest.</i>	Chapeau, m. <i>hat,</i>	Près, <i>near, nearly.</i>
Associé, m. <i>partner.</i>	<i>bonnet.</i>	Rend-re, 4. <i>to return.</i>
Aubergiste, m. <i>land-</i>	Cinquante, <i>fifty.</i>	Serrurier, m. <i>lock-</i>
<i>lord.</i>	Clef, f. <i>key.</i>	<i>smith.</i>
Bouteille, f. <i>bottle.</i>	Commis, m. <i>clerk.</i>	Serviette, f. <i>napkin.</i>

1. Où étaient vos parents l'année dernière? 2. Ils étaient en Angleterre. 3. Où sont restés les messieurs qui vous accompagnaient ce matin? 4. Ils sont restés chez leurs associés. 5. Que lisaient vos amies lorsque vous les avez quittées? 6. Elles lisaient les nouvelles qu'elles venaient de recevoir. 7. Que dit monsieur votre père? 8. Il ne dit rien. 9. Quel âge a ce monsieur? 10. Il a près de cinquante ans. 11. Quel âge ont vos enfants? 12. L'ainé a dix ans, et le plus jeune a six ans. 13. Avez-vous demandé votre chaîne d'or à ce monsieur? 14. Je la lui ai demandée. 15. Avez-vous rendu au commis l'argent qu'il vous avait prêté? 16. Je le lui ai rendu. 17. Aviez-vous envie d'envoyer vos clefs au serrurier? 18. J'avais envie de les lui envoyer, car elles sont cassées. 19. Cela valait-il la peine d'envoyer ces bouteilles à l'aubergiste? 20. Cela valait la peine de les lui envoyer, car il n'en avait pas. 21. Avez-vous demandé des serviettes à votre père? 22. Je n'ai pas voulu lui en demander.

EXERCISE 108.

1. What was the locksmith saying to you? 2. He was saying that he has brought my key. 3. How many letters have you taken to the post-office? 4. I have taken seven, three for you, and four for my father. 5. Where is the gentleman who has brought that letter? 6. He lives at my father's, do you wish to speak to him? 7. I wished to send him a letter which I brought from England. 8. Have you returned to that man the money which he had lent you? 9. I have returned

it to him. 10. Did you wish to send your brother the key of your room? 11. I had a wish to send it to him. 12. Was it worth the while to give your brother that book? 13. It was worth the while to give it to him, for (*car*) he wanted it. 14. Was it worth the while to send these bottles to the druggist (*pharmacien*)? 15. It was worth the while to send them to him. 16. Where is the landlord? 17. He is in England. 18. How many children has the locksmith? 19. He has ten. 20. How many books has the physician? 21. He has five hundred volumes. 22. Have you given the gentleman that letter? 23. I have forgotten to give it to him.

SECTION LVII.

1. The French avoid placing the verb at the end of such sentences as the following, when the subject is a noun :—

Dites-moi où demeure M. H. *Tell me where Mr. H. lives.*
 Je ne sais où est mon père. *I do not know where my father is.*
 Savez-vous où est George? *Do you know where George is?*

2. In speaking of a state, condition, or action, commenced in the past, the French use the present of the indicative when such state or action is still going on, when they mention it :—

Combien de temps y a-t-il qu'il *How long has he been here?*
 est ici?
 Il y a deux heures qu'il écrit. *He has been writing these two hours.*
 Il y a un mois qu'il demeure à *He has lived in Paris one month.*
 Paris.
 Il y a deux ans qu'il voyage. *He has been travelling these two years.*

3. When, however, the state or action has ceased when it is mentioned, the past is used in French, in the same manner as in English :—

Combien de temps avez-vous de- *How long did you live in L.?*
 meuré à L.?
 Combien de mois avez-vous appris *How many months did you learn*
 l'allemand? *German?*
 Il y a un mois que je ne l'ai vu. *It is a month since I saw him.*

4. Combien y a-t-il Combien de milles y a-t-il..... Quelle distance y a-t-il? answer to the English expressions, *How far How many miles is it..... What is the distance?*

Combien y a-t-il de Paris à Londres? *How far is it from Paris to London?*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Combien de temps y a-t-il que *How long have you had that*
 vous avez cette maison? *house?*
 Il y a deux ans que nous l'avons. *We have had it these two years.*
 Combien de temps avez-vous eu *How long did you have that house?*
 cette maison?
 Nous l'avons eue dix ans. *We had it ten years.*
 Combien de temps y a-t-il que *How long has your brother been*
 votre frère apprend le grec? *learning Greek?*

Il y a six ans qu'il l'apprend. *He has been learning it six years.*
 Quelle distance y a-t-il de Calais à Boulogne ? *How far is it from Calais to Boulogne ?*
 Il y a huit lieues de Calais à Boulogne. *It is eight leagues from Calais to Boulogne.*

EXERCISE 109.

Affiche, <i>f. bill.</i>	Demi, <i>e. half.</i>	Morceau, <i>m. piece.</i>
An, <i>m. année, f. year.</i>	Fatigué, <i>e. tired.</i>	Né, <i>from naître, 4.</i>
Attend-re, <i>4. to expect,</i>	Imprimeur, <i>m. printer.</i>	<i>to be born.</i>
<i>to wait for.</i>	Lieue, <i>f. league.</i>	Verger, <i>m. orchard.</i>
Compagnie, <i>f. company.</i>	Maintenant, <i>now.</i>	Vienne, <i>Vienna.</i>
Copenhague, <i>Copen-</i>	Mois, <i>m. month.</i>	
<i>hagen.</i>		

1. Combien de temps y a-t-il que M. L. demeure à Paris ?
 2. Il y a dix ans qu'il y demeure. 3. N'a-t-il pas demeuré à Lyon ? 4. Il y a demeuré autrefois. 5. Pouvez-vous me dire où est le fils du capitaine ? 6. Il y a un an qu'il est en Angleterre. 7. Savez-vous où demeure M. B. ? 8. Il demeurerait autrefois à Rouen ; je ne sais pas où il demeure maintenant. 9. Y a-t-il longtemps que vous êtes ici ? 10. Il y a plus de deux mois que nous sommes ici. 11. Combien de temps y a-t-il que vous avez ce verger ? 12. Il y a un an que nous l'avons. 13. Savez-vous combien il y a de Paris à Vienne ? 14. Il y a trois cent six lieues de Paris à Vienne, et deux cents lieues de Vienne à Copenhague. 15. Y a-t-il longtemps que la compagnie est venue ? 16. Il y a plus de deux heures qu'elle est ici. 17. Y a-t-il longtemps que vous avez lu cette affiche ? 18. Il y a plus de trois heures que je l'ai lue. 19. N'y a-t-il pas plus d'une demi-heure que votre sœur lit ? 20. Il y a si longtemps qu'elle lit, qu'elle en est fatiguée. 21. Y a-t-il longtemps que vous attendez ce morceau de musique ? 22. Il y a plus d'un an que je l'attends.

EXERCISE 110.

1. Do you not know where my father lives ? 2. I know where he lives, but I have no time to go to his house to-day. 3. How long has the physician lived in Paris ? 4. He has lived there ten years. 5. How long did he live in England ? 6. He lived in England six years and a half. 7. Can you tell me where the locksmith lives ? 8. He lives at my brother's. 9. Have you been waiting long for this book ? 10. I have been waiting for it more than a year. 11. How long has your son been learning Greek ? 12. He has been learning it these two years. 13. How long has your brother had this orchard ? 14. He has had it more than six months. 15. How far is it from Paris to Lyons ? 16. It is one hundred and sixteen leagues from Paris to Lyons. 17. Is it farther (*plus loin*) from Lyons to Geneva than from Lyons to Turin ? 18. It is farther from Lyons to Turin than from Lyons to Geneva. 19. How long did your father live in Germany ? 20. He lived in Germany two years, and in England six months. 21. How long did you live in Rome ? 22. We lived there more than a year. 23.

Have you been learning German more than one year? 24. I have been learning it more than four years.

SECTION LVIII.

1. **Changer** [1. see § 50 (1)], used in the sense of *to change*, *to leave one thing for another*, is followed by the preposition *de*; **changer d'habit, de chapeau, etc.**, *to put on another coat, hat, &c.*; **changer d'avis**, *to change one's mind*; **changer de maison**, *to move, to change houses*; **changer de place, changer de pays, changer de climat**, *to go to another place, country, climate*; **changer de nom**, *to change one's name*. The student will perceive that the noun following **changer**, is not preceded by a possessive adjective, like the noun of the English sentence, but by the preposition *de* :—

Voulez-vous changer d'habit? *Will you change your coat?*
Ce monsieur a changé de nom. *That gentleman has changed his name.*

2. **Changer contre**, means *to exchange for*; **changer pour**, *to change for, to get change for* :—

Voulez-vous changer votre chapeau contre le mien? *Will you exchange your hat for mine?*
Changez ce billet pour de l'argent. *Change that note for silver.*

3. **Tarder** means *to tarry, to be long in coming*. **Tarder**, used impersonally, and preceded by an indirect object, means *to long, to wish for* :—

Votre sœur tarde bien à venir. *Your sister is very long coming.*
Il me tarde de la voir. *I long to see her.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

N'avez vous pas changé d'appartement?	<i>Have you not taken another apartment?</i>
Nous avons changé de maisons.	<i>We have changed houses.</i>
Votre frère a changé de conduite.	<i>Your brother has changed his conduct.</i>
Contre quoi avez-vous changé votre cheval?	<i>For what have you exchanged your horse?</i>
J'ai besoin de monnaie, pouvez-vous me changer cette pièce de vingt francs?	<i>I want change, can you change me this twenty franc piece?</i>
Ce garçon a beaucoup tardé.	<i>The boy tarried very much.</i>
Il nous tardait d'arriver.	<i>We longed to arrive.</i>
Il leur tardait de revoir leurs amis.	<i>They longed to see their friends again.</i>
Il me tarde de revoir la France.	<i>I long to see France again.</i>

EXERCISE 111.

Air, m. <i>air</i> .	Guinée, f. <i>guinea</i> .	Passé, e, <i>past, last</i> .
Avis, m. <i>mind, meaning</i> .	Jeune, <i>young</i> .	Pays, m. <i>country</i> .
Blanc, che, <i>white</i> .	Maître, m. <i>master</i> .	Rentrer, l. <i>to come in again</i> .
Combat, m. <i>combat</i> .	Manteau, m. <i>cloak</i> .	Vie, f. <i>life, conduct</i> .
Conduite, f. <i>conduct</i> .	Monnaie, f. <i>change</i> .	Visage, m. <i>countenance, face</i> .
Gris, e, <i>grey</i> .	Mouillé, e, <i>wet</i> .	
	Parce que, <i>because</i> .	

1. Cet homme n'a-t-il pas changé de vie? 2. Il a changé de conduite. 3. Cette grande maison n'a-t-elle pas changé de maître? 4. Elle a changé de maître; le capitaine G. vient de l'acheter. 5. Vous êtes mouillé, pourquoi ne changez-vous pas de manteau? 6. Parce que je n'en ai pas d'autre. 7. Votre cousine ne change-t-elle pas souvent d'avis? 8. Elle en change bien souvent. 9. Pendant le combat, ce jeune soldat n'a-t-il pas changé de visage? 10. Il n'a point changé de visage. 11. Ce malade ne devrait-il pas changer d'air? 12. Le médecin lui recommande de changer de pays. 13. Où est votre cheval gris? 14. Je ne l'ai plus, je l'ai changé contre un blanc. 15. Avec qui l'avez-vous changé? 16. Je l'ai changé avec le jeune homme qui demeurait ici le mois passé. 17. Le marchand peut-il me changer cette pièce de quarante francs? 18. Il ne saurait (*cannot*) vous la changer, il n'a pas de monnaie. 19. Avez-vous la monnaie d'une guinée (*change for a guinea*)? 20. Combien de schellings y a-t-il dans une guinée? 21. Il y en a vingt et un. 22. Votre petit garçon ne tarde-t-il pas à rentrer? 23. Il tarde beaucoup. 24. Ne vous tarde-t-il pas d'aller en Italie? 25. Il me tarde d'y aller.

EXERCISE 112.

1. Why do you not change your coat? 2. For a very good reason (*raison*, f.), because I have no other. 3. Has your father changed houses? 4. No, Sir, but we intend to do so (*de le faire*) to-morrow. 5. Has that child changed his conduct? 6. He has changed his conduct, he is very good now (*maintenant*). 7. Was not your brother afraid; did not his countenance change? 8. His countenance changed, but he was not afraid. 9. Have you not changed rooms (*chambre*, f.)? 10. I have not changed rooms, my room is very good. 11. Do you not long to be in France? 12. I long to be there. 13. Does not your mother tarry too long? 14. She is very long in coming. 15. Have you changed the forty franc piece? 16. I have not changed it yet? 17. Why have you not changed it? 18. Because your father has no change. 19. Have you the change for a guinea? 20. No, Sir, I have only twelve shillings. 21. How many cents are there in a dollar? 22. There are one hundred. 23. With whom have you exchanged your horse? 24. I have exchanged it with my brother. 25. I have exchanged it for a white one.

SECTION LIX.

1. We have given, in Section 9, rules for forming the plural of nouns, but have, in accordance with our plan of not presenting too many difficulties at once, deferred until the present Section the rules for the formation of the plural of compound nouns.

2. When a noun is composed of two substantives, or of a substantive and an adjective, both take the mark of the plural: **un chef-lieu, des chefs-lieux**, a chief place, chief places; **un chat-tigre, des chats-tigres**, a tiger-cat, tiger-cats [§ 10 (1) (3)].

3. When, however, two nouns are connected by a preposition, the first only takes the mark of the plural: **un chef-d'œuvre, des chefs-d'œuvre**, *a master-piece, master-pieces* [§ 10 (2)].

4. In words composed of a noun and a verb, preposition or adverb, the noun only takes the mark of the plural: **passedroit, passe-droits**, *injustice, injustices* [§ 10 (6)].

5. Words composed of two verbs, or of a verb, an adverb, and a preposition, are invariable: **un passe-partout, des passe-partout**, *master-key, master-keys* [§ 10 (8)].

6. We have seen [Sect. 3, R. 4] that the name of the material always follows the name of the object, and that both are united by the preposition **de**. The name of the profession or occupation also follows the noun representing the individual, and the same preposition **de** connects the two: **un maître d'armes**, *a fencing-master*; **un maître de dessin**, *a drawing-master*; **un marchand de farine**, *a dealer in flour* [§ 76 (12), § 80 (4)].

7. The name of a vehicle, boat, mill, &c., always precedes the noun describing the power by which it is impelled, or the purpose to which it is adapted; the name of an apartment, that of the use to which it is appropriated. The connecting preposition is **à**: **un moulin à vapeur**, *a steam-mill*; **un bateau à vapeur**, *a steamboat*; **un moulin à eau**, *a water-mill*; **la salle à manger**, *the dining-room* [§ 76 (13), § 80 (5)].

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Lille et Arras sont les chefs-lieux des départements du Nord et du Pas-de-Calais.	<i>Lille and Arras are the chief places of the departments of the North and of the Pas-de-Calais.</i>
Les chemins de fer et les bateaux à vapeur sont très nombreux en Amérique.	<i>Railroads and steamboats are very numerous in America.</i>
Cette maison contient un salon, une salle à manger, une cuisine, et plusieurs chambres à coucher.	<i>That house contains a drawing-room, a dining-room, a kitchen, and several bed-rooms.</i>
Les moulins à vent sont plus communs en France que les moulins à eau ou à vapeur.	<i>Windmills are more common in France than water or steam-mills.</i>

EXERCISE 113.

Armes, f. p. <i>fencing</i> .	Dessin, m. <i>drawing</i> .	S'ennuyer, 2. ref. to provide one's self with.
Bâtir, 2. <i>to build</i> .	Engager, 1. <i>to engage</i> .	Vapeur, f. <i>vapour, steam</i> .
Bouteille, f. <i>bottle</i> .	Faire bâtir, 2. <i>to have built</i> .	
Cabriolet, m. <i>gig</i> .		
Chat-huant, m. <i>screech-owl</i> .	Ordinaire, <i>usual</i> .	Voile, f. <i>sail</i> .
	Roue, f. <i>wheel</i> .	Voiture, f. <i>carriage</i> .
Chauve-souris, f. <i>bat</i> .		Voyager, 1. <i>to travel</i> .

1. Faut-il un passeport pour voyager en France? 2. Il en faut un. 3. Les Anglais se munissent-ils de passeports pour voyager en Angleterre? 4. On n'a pas besoin de passeport en Angleterre. 5. Aimez-vous à voyager en chemin de fer? 6. J'aime mieux voyager en chemin de fer que sur les chemins

ordinaires. 7. Avez-vous apporté vos passe-partout? 8. Je n'ai point de passe-partout, je n'ai que des clefs ordinaires. 9. Votre frère est-il venu par un bateau à vapeur? 10. Il est venu par un bateau à voiles. 11. Avez-vous une voiture à quatre chevaux? 12. Non, Monsieur, nous n'avons qu'un cabriolet à un cheval. 13. Votre frère a-t-il bâti un moulin à vapeur? 14. Il a fait bâtir deux moulins, l'un à vent et l'autre à eau. 15. Votre compagnon a-t-il engagé un maître d'armes? 16. Non, Monsieur, il a déjà un maître de dessin et un maître de danse. 17. Combien de chambres à coucher avez-vous? 18. Nous en avons deux. 19. Avez-vous une bouteille de vin? 20. Non, Monsieur, mais j'ai une bouteille à vin (*wine-bottle*) [§ 81]. 21. Voyez-vous les chats-huants? 22. Non, mais je vois les chauves-souris. 23. J'ai une voiture à quatre roues.

EXERCISE 114.

1. Is your father in England? 2. No, Sir, he is in France with my brother. 3. Have they taken passports? 4. Yes, Sir, they have taken two. 5. Is it necessary to have a passport to travel in America? 6. No, Sir, but it is necessary to have one to travel in Italy. 7. Is there a steamboat from Calais to Dover (*Douvres*)? 8. There are several. 9. Is there a railroad from Paris to Brussels (*Bruxelles*)? 10. There is one from Paris to Brussels, and one from Paris to Tours. 11. Has your brother bought a wind-mill? 12. No, Sir, but he has built a steam-mill. 13. Are there many wind-mills in America? 14. No, Sir, but there are many water and steam-mills. 15. Does your cousin learn drawing? 16. He does not learn it, he cannot find a drawing-master. 17. Is the fencing-master in the dining-room? 18. No, Sir, he is in the drawing-room. 19. Is your cousin in his bed-room? 20. No, Sir, he is out (*sorti*). 21. How many rooms are there in your house? 22. Five: a kitchen, a dining-room, a drawing-room, and two bed-rooms. 23. Are there screech-owls here? 24. Yes, Sir, and bats too. 25. Have you seen those master-pieces? 26. Yes, Sir, I have seen them. 27. Have you sent them to the chief place of the department? 28. I have sent them there. 29. Have you a two-horse gig? 30. I have a four-horse one. 31. Has your brother a two-wheel carriage? 32. He has a two-seat carriage (*à deux places*).

SECTION LX.

THE TWO FUTURES, SIMPLE AND ANTERIOR (§ 120).

1. The future of every verb in the French language ends with *ai, as, a, ons, ez, ont*.

2. This tense, in all the regular verbs, as also in the irregular verbs not mentioned in the next lesson, is formed from the present of the infinitive by adding to it the endings of the present indicative of the verb *avoir* (R. 1, *above*), without any change in the first or in the second conjugation, but after suppressing *oi* in the third, and *e* in the fourth, as will be seen below:—

3. CONJUGATION OF THE FUTURE SIMPLE OF THE REGULAR VERBS.

Je chanter -ai	finir -ai	recevrr -ai	rendr -ai
<i>shall or will sing</i>	<i>finish</i>	<i>receive</i>	<i>render</i>
Tu parler -as	chérir -as	apercevr -as	vendr -as
<i>shalt or will speak</i>	<i>cherish</i>	<i>perceive</i>	<i>sell</i>
Il donner -a	fournir -a	percevr -a	tendr -a
<i>will or shall give</i>	<i>furnish</i>	<i>collect</i>	<i>tend</i>
Nous chercher -ons	punir -ons	concevr -ons	entendr -ons
<i>shall or will seek</i>	<i>punish</i>	<i>conceive</i>	<i>hear</i>
Vous porter -ez	saisir -ez	devr -ez	perdr -ez
<i>shall or will carry</i>	<i>seize</i>	<i>owe</i>	<i>lose</i>
Ils aimer -ont	unir -ont	décevr -ont	mordr -ont
<i>shall or will love</i>	<i>unite</i>	<i>deceive</i>	<i>bite</i>

4. The future anterior is merely the past participle of the leading verb, conjugated with the future of one of the auxiliaries, *avoir*, *être* :—

J'aurai fini ; je me serai flatté. *I shall have done ; I shall have flattered myself.*

5. The student, when rendering English into French, should be careful to distinguish *will*, taken as an auxiliary, from the same word employed as a leading verb. In this latter case it is always equivalent to the verb *to wish*, or *to be willing*, and should not be rendered by the future of the verb, but by the present of *vouloir* :—

Ne voulez-vous pas lui écrire ? *Will you not (are you not willing to) write to him ?*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Quand parlerez-vous à ce monsieur ?	<i>When will you speak to that gentleman ?</i>
Vous fournira-t-il des provisions ?	<i>Will he furnish you provisions ?</i>
Ils ne recevront pas leurs revenus.	<i>They will not receive their income.</i>
Ne vendrez-vous pas vos propriétés ?	<i>Will you not sell your property ?</i>
Que voulez-vous ?	<i>What do you wish to have ?</i>
Que veut lire votre frère ?	<i>What will your brother read ?</i>
Apporterez-vous des pommes ?	<i>Will you bring apples ?</i>
Nous amènerons nos enfants.	<i>We will bring our children.</i>
Vous apporterez des légumes.	<i>You will bring vegetables.</i>

EXERCISE 115.

Abreuvoir, m. <i>watering-place.</i>	Château, m. <i>villa.</i>	Men er, 1. [§ 50 (6)] <i>to take to, to lead.</i>
Appel-er, 1. [§ 50 (4)] <i>to call.</i>	Colporteur, m. <i>pedlar, hawker.</i>	Récolt-er, 1. <i>to gather in a crop, to harvest.</i>
Après-midi, f. <i>after-noon.</i>	Donner à manger, <i>to feed.</i>	Sem-er, 1. [§ 50 (6)] <i>to sow.</i>
Avoine, f. <i>oats.</i>	Écurie, f. <i>stable.</i>	Se promen er, 1. ref. [§ 50 (6)] <i>to walk or ride for pleasure.</i>
Blé, m. <i>wheat.</i>	Foin, m. <i>hay.</i>	
Cachet-er, 1. [§ 50 (4)] <i>to seal.</i>	Gel er, 1. [§ 50 (5)] <i>to freeze.</i>	

1. Mènerez-vous vos enfants à l'école? 2. Je les mènerai à l'école et à l'église. 3. Le jardinier apportera-t-il des légumes au marché? 4. Il y en apportera. 5. Où mènerez-vous ce cheval? 6. Je le mènerai à l'écurie. 7. Lui donnerez-vous à manger? 8. Je lui donnerai du foin et de l'avoine. 9. Lui donnerez-vous de l'eau? 10. Je le mènerai à l'abreuvoir. 11. Paierez- [§ 50 (2) *note*] vous ce que vous devez? 12. Ne voulez-vous pas vous promener? 13. Je me promènerai cette après-midi. 14. Vous promènerez-vous à pied ou à cheval? 15. Je me promènerai à cheval, et ma sœur se promènera en voiture. 16. Marcherez-vous beaucoup dans votre voyage à Paris? 17. Nous ne marcherons pas du tout. 18. N'appellerez- [§ 50 (4)] vous pas le colporteur? 19. Je ne l'appellerai pas. 20. N'achèterez- [§ 50 (5)] vous pas ce château? 21. Nous l'achèterons si nous pouvons. 22. Ne gèlera-t-il pas [§ 50 (5)] cette nuit? 23. Je ne le crois pas, il fait trop chaud. 24. Ne sèmerez- [§ 50 (6)] vous pas tout le blé que vous récolterez? 25. Je n'en sèmerai qu'une partie, je vendrai le reste. 26. Je cachetterai mes lettres et je les porterai à la poste.

EXERCISE 116.

1. Will not the gentleman call his children? 2. He will call his children and his sisters. 3. Will you not bring your children? 4. I cannot bring them. 5. Will you not take a ride this afternoon? 6. We will ride in a carriage to-morrow. 7. Will you not buy my father's horses? 8. I shall not buy them; I have no money. 9. Will you not call the pedlar? 10. I do not wish to call him; I do not wish to buy anything. 11. Will you pay the tailor? 12. I will pay him for my coat. 13. Will it not freeze to-morrow? 14. It will freeze to-morrow; it is very cold. 15. Will you not sow oats in this field (*champ*)? 16. I will not sow oats; I will sow wheat there. 17. Will you take your sister to school? 18. I will take her there this afternoon. 19. Will you not take your son to market? 20. I will not take him there. 21. Will not the gardener take his horse to the watering-place? 22. He will take him there. 23. Will you give oats to your horse? 24. I will give him hay. 25. Will you bring your son with you? 26. I will bring him to-morrow. 27. Will he bring his horse? 28. He will bring his horse and carriage. 29. Why do you carry that little child? 30. He is too ill *to* (*pour*) walk. 31. Will your brother sell his property? 32. He will only sell part of it. 33. Will not your servant carry the letter to the post-office? 34. I will seal it and give it to him. 35. Will you feed my horse? 36. I will feed him and give him some water.

SECTION LXI.

IRREGULARITIES OF THE FUTURE.

1. The two irregular verbs of the first conjugation, *aller*, *to go*, and *envoyer*, *to send*, make in the future *j'irai*, *j'enverrai* [*see* § 64].

2. All the verbs of the second conjugation, which end in *enir*, change that termination into *iendrai*, &c., for the future: *as, tenir, to hold, venir, to come; je tiendrai, je viendrai. Acquérir, to acquire; conquérir, to conquer; requérir, to require; mourir, to die; and courir, to run, and its compounds, suppress the i of the infinitive in the future: j'acquerrai, je mourrai, je courrai. Cueillir, to gather, and its compounds, change the i preceding the r into e: je cueillerai.*

3. In the third conjugation, *s'asseoir, to sit down, and secir, to sit, make je m'assiérai* and je siérai. Falloir, to be necessary, vouloir, to be willing, and valoir, to be worth, make il faudra, je voudrai, and je vaudrai. Voir, to see, and revoir, to see again, make je verrai, je reverrai. Pouvoir, to be able, makes je pourrai, and pourvoir, to provide, je pourvoirai. Savoir, to know, and avoir, to have, make je saurai, and j'aurai.*

4. *Etre, to be, faire, to make, and its compounds, are the only verbs of the fourth conjugation which are irregular in the future: je serai, je ferai, &c.*

5. The futures, simple and anterior, are used in French after an adverb of time, in cases similar to those in which the English use the present and perfect of the indicative, when futurity is implied:—

Quand vous verrez ces messieurs... *When you see those gentlemen...*
Dès que vous aurez reçu cette lettre..... *As soon as you have received this letter.....*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Irez-vous en France cette année ?	<i>Shall you go to France this year ?</i>
Nous irons en France et en Italie.	<i>We shall go to France and Italy.</i>
Nous vous enverrons chercher.	<i>We shall send for you.</i>
Ne viendrez-vous pas nous trouver ?	<i>Will you not come to us ?</i>
Ne nous assiérons-nous pas ?	<i>Shall we not sit down ?</i>
Quand ils viendront, j'aurai ma lettre.	<i>When they come, I shall have my letter.</i>
Cela vaudra-t-il la peine d'y aller ?	<i>Will that be worth the while to go there ?</i>
Cet habit ira-t-il bien ?	<i>Will that coat fit well ?</i>
Il faudra leur envoyer de l'argent.	<i>It will be necessary to send them money.</i>

EXERCISE 117.

Avec, <i>with.</i>	Lentement, <i>slowly.</i>	Permett-re, 4. ir. <i>to permit.</i>
Bientôt, <i>soon.</i>	March-er, 1. <i>to walk, to go on foot.</i>	Plaisir, m. <i>pleasure.</i>
Connait-re, 4. ir. <i>to know.</i>	Moi-même, <i>myself.</i>	Prêt-er, 1. <i>to lend.</i>
Demeure, f. <i>dwelling.</i>	Où, <i>where.</i>	Sort-ir, 2. ir. <i>to go out.</i>
Fraise, f. <i>strawberry.</i>	Part-ir, 2. ir. <i>to set out, to leave.</i>	
Guitare, f. <i>guitar.</i>		

1. Ne viendrez-vous pas nous voir demain ? 2. J'irai vous

* This verb has two other forms for the future, viz., *j'asseyerai, &c., and j'asseoirai, &c., which, however, are rarely met with.*

voir, si le temps le permet. 3. N'enverrez-vous pas chercher le médecin, si votre fils est malade? 4. Je l'irai chercher moi-même. 5. Quand je serai fatigué, je marcherai plus lentement. 6. Quand vous connaîtrez sa demeure irez-vous le voir? 7. J'irai le voir aussitôt que je saurai où il demeure. 8. Ne le verrez-vous pas aujourd'hui? 9. Je le verrai cette après-midi. 10. Ne pourrez-vous point nous accompagner? 11. Je le ferai avec beaucoup de plaisir. 12. Ne leur enverrez-vous point des fraises? 13. Je leur en enverrai quand les miennes seront mûres. 14. Ne faudra-t-il pas leur écrire bientôt? 15. Quand nous aurons reçu des nouvelles de leur parent, il faudra leur écrire. 16. Que ferons-nous demain? 17. Nous irons à la chasse. 18. N'irez-vous pas chez votre père? 19. Nous irons certainement. 20. Quand votre guitare sera arrivée, la prêterez-vous? 21. Je ne pourrai la prêter. 22. À quelle heure partirez-vous demain? 23. Je partirai à cinq heures du matin. 24. Ne sortirez-vous pas ce soir? 25. Je ne sortirai pas, et je me coucherai de bonne heure.

EXERCISE 118.

1. Will you send for the physician? 2. I will send for him this afternoon. 3. Will not the little girl go and fetch apples? 4. She will send for some. 5. Will you not sit down when you are tired? 6. We will not sit down, we have no time. 7. What will your brother do when he is tired? [R. 5.] 8. He will do what (*ce qu'*) he can. [R. 5.] 9. Will it be worth the while to (*de*) write to him? 10. It will not be worth the while, for (*car*) he will not come. 11. Will it not be necessary to speak to the merchant? 12. It will not be necessary to speak to him. 13. Will it be necessary for us to take passports? 14. It will be necessary (*il le faudra*). 15. Will not your little boy walk more slowly when he is tired? 16. When he is tired, he will sit down. 17. What will your sister do to-morrow? 18. She will go to church and to school. 19. Will she not come here? 20. She will not be able to come. 21. Will you walk or go on horseback? (*Irez-vous à pied ou à cheval?*) 22. I shall go on horseback. 23. Why do you not go in a carriage? 24. Because my carriage is in London. 25. When will you see them? 26. I shall see them as soon as I can. 27. Will they come to our house to-morrow? 28. They will do so with much pleasure. 29. When you see that gentleman, will you speak to him? 30. I will not speak to him. 31. When you have written your letters what will you do? 32. I shall come to your house. 33. When you have read that book, will you send it to me? 34. I will send it to you. 35. Will you send it to-day? 36. I will send it to-morrow. 37. They will come to you to-morrow. 38. Will you gather those beautiful flowers? 39. Yes, madam, I shall gather them to-morrow. 40. I shall be at your father's to-night, at half-past seven. 41. The tailor will make your coat, and will send it to you in a week.

SECTION LXII.

THE TWO CONDITIONALS (§ 121).

1. The conditional present is formed from the infinitive by adding to the latter the terminations of the imperfect indicative of the verb *avoir*, viz., *ais, ais, ait, ions, iez, aient*.

2. Every verb in the French language, regular and irregular, has in this tense the above terminations.

3. CONJUGATION OF THE CONDITIONAL PRESENT OF THE REGULAR VERBS.

Je chanter -ais	finir -ais	recev ^r -ais	rendr -ais
<i>should or would sing</i>	<i>finish</i>	<i>receive</i>	<i>render</i>
Tu parler -ais	cherir -ais	apercevr -ais	vendr -ais
<i>shouldst or wouldst speak</i>	<i>cherish</i>	<i>perceive</i>	<i>sell</i>
Il donner -ait	fournir -ait	percevr -ait	tendr -ait
<i>would or should give</i>	<i>furnish</i>	<i>collect</i>	<i>tend</i>
Nous chercher -ions	punir -ions	concevr -ions	entendr -ions
<i>should or would seek</i>	<i>punish</i>	<i>conceive</i>	<i>hear</i>
Vous porter -iez	saisir -iez	devr -iez	perdr -iez
<i>would or should carry</i>	<i>seize</i>	<i>owe</i>	<i>lose</i>
Ils aimer -aient	unir -aient	décevr -aient	mordr -aient
<i>should or would love</i>	<i>unite</i>	<i>deceive</i>	<i>bite</i>

4. The irregularities of the conditional appear not in the terminations, but in the *stem* of the verb. They are precisely the same as those of the future. These irregularities will be found in the preceding section, and need not be repeated here.

5. The conditional past is formed from the conditional present of one of the auxiliaries *avoir*, *être*, and the past participle of the leading verb [§ 121 (2)]:—

J'aurais écrit, je me serais flatté. *I should have written, I should have flattered myself.*

6. The two futures and the two conditionals should not be used after the conjunction *si* (*if*). But in such case, the present and the imperfect of the indicative should be used:—

S'il peut quitter son père, il viendra. *If he can leave his father, he will come.*

Si j'étais à votre place, j'irais. *If I were in your place, I would go.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Nous irions à la chasse, si nous avions le temps.	<i>We would go hunting if we had time.</i>
Je lirais, si j'avais des livres ici.	<i>I would read if I had books here.</i>
J'aimerais mieux aller à pied qu'à cheval.	<i>I would prefer walking to riding.</i>
Votre mère se porterait mieux à Paris.	<i>Your mother would be better in Paris.</i>
Nous nous passerions facilement de ce livre.	<i>We might easily do without that book.</i>
Ne vaudrait-il pas mieux lui écrire?	<i>Would it not be better to write to him?</i>

Ne faudrait-il pas lui écrire ?

Would it not be necessary to write to him?

Je m'assiérais, si j'étais fatigué.

I would sit down if I were tired.

Cet habit m'irait bien, s'il était assez large.

That coat would fit me well if it were broad enough.

EXERCISE 119.

Interromp-re, 4. ir. *to interrupt.* Peut-être, *perhaps.*

S'ennuy-er, 1. ref. [§49]

to be or become weary.

Invit-er, 1. *to invite.* amuse one's self.

Se port-er, 1 ref. *to be*

Mett-re, 4. ir. *to put* S'approch-er, 1. ref. *to come near.*

or do.

Mouill-er, 1. *to wet.* S'éloign-er, 1. ref. *to be mistaken.*

Se tromp-er, 1. ref. *to*

Ôt-er, 1. *to take off.* go from.

Voyage, m. *journey.*

1. Quel habit mettriez-vous, si vous alliez à la chasse? 2. Je mettrais un habit vert. 3. N'ôteriez-vous pas vos bottes, si elles étaient mouillées? 4. Je les ôterais, et je les ferais sécher. 5. Si vous aviez froid, ne vous approcheriez-vous pas du feu? 6. Je m'en approcherais certainement. 7. Votre petit garçon ne s'en éloignerait-il pas, s'il avait trop chaud? 8. Il s'en éloignerait bien vite. 9. Vous ennuierez-vous ici? 10. Je ne m'ennuierais pas, je m'amuserais à lire. 11. Ne vous tromperiez-vous pas, si vous faisiez ce calcul? 12. Je me tromperais peut-être, si j'étais interrompu. 13. Viendriez-vous si on vous invitait? 14. Je viendrais avec beaucoup de plaisir. 15. Ne vous porteriez-vous pas mieux, si vous lisiez moins? 16. Je me porterais beaucoup mieux. 17. Ne faudrait-il pas lui parler de votre affaire? 18. Il faudrait lui en parler. 19. Combien d'argent vous faudrait-il? 20. Il me faudrait mille francs, si je faisais ce voyage. 21. Ne vaudrait-il pas mieux lui parler que de lui écrire? 22. Il vaudrait mieux lui écrire. 23. Si vous étiez à ma place, que feriez-vous? 24. Si j'étais à votre place, je lui paierais ce que je lui dois. 25. Si j'avais le temps, je porterais volontiers vos lettres à la poste.

EXERCISE 120.

1. Would you not read if you had time? 2. I would read two hours every day if I had time. 3. What coat would your brother put on if he went to church? 4. He would put on a black coat. 5. Would you put on a black hat? 6. I would put on a straw hat (*chapeau de paille*) if it was warm. 7. Would you not draw [Sect. 39, 6] near the fire if you were cold? 8. We would draw near it. 9. Would you not take off your coat? 10. I would take it off, if it were wet. 11. Would you go to my father's if he invited you? 12. I would go to his house and to your brother's, if they invited me. 13. Would you put on your boots if they were wet? 14. If they were wet, I would not put them on. 15. How much money would you want, if you went to England? 16. We would want three thousand francs. 17. Would you not be better if you lived (*demeurer*) in the country? 18. I should not be better. 19. Would it not be better to write to your brother? 20. It would be better to write to him. 21. Would you read the book if I

lent it to you? 22. I would certainly read it. 23. If you were in his place, would you go to school? 24. If I were in his place, I would go. 25. If you were in my place, would you write to him? 26. I would write to him every day. 27. Would your sister be mistaken? 28. She would not be mistaken, she is very attentive. 29. If you rose every morning at five, would you be better? 30. I should not be better. 31. Would you prefer going on foot? 32. I would prefer going on horseback. 33. Would you not sit down? 34. I would sit down if I were tired.

SECTION LXIII.

1. The verb **faire** (4. ir.) is used in the formation of a number of idiomatic sentences. (See Sect. 32, R. 3, 4.) **Faire faire**, *to have made, to bespeak*; **faire raccommoder**, *to have mended*; **faire la cuisine**, *to cook*; **faire cuire**, *to cook, to bake*; **faire bouillir**, *to boil*; **faire rôtir**, *to roast*; **faire chauffer**, *to warm* (in speaking of food); **faire bonne chère**, *to live well* :—

Nous avons fait faire des habits. *We have had clothes made.*
 Vous avez fait raccommoder vos gilets. *You have had your waistcoats mended.*

2. The past participle of **faire** never varies, when it precedes an infinitive :—

Les livres que vous avez fait venir. *The books which you have sent for.*

3. **Faire peur**, *to frighten*; **faire attention**, *to pay attention*; **faire tort**, *to injure*; **faire mal**, **faire du mal**, *to hurt*, require à before a noun :—

Nous avons fait peur à ces enfants. *We have frightened those children.*
 Vous leur avez fait mal. *You have hurt them.*

4. The last example will show that, when a noun preceded by à, expressed or understood, is replaced by a pronoun, that pronoun will take the form of an indirect object (*dative*).

5. In speaking of the parts of the body, the French use the article **le**, **la**, **les**, &c., instead of the possessive adjective [§ 77 (9)] and, in this case, express possession by means of a reflexive [Sect. 37, R. 1] or other personal pronoun :—

Vous m'avez fait mal à la main. *You have hurt my hand.*
 Le bras lui fait mal. *His arm hurts or pains him.*
 Il s'est coupé un doigt. *He has cut one of his fingers.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Ferez-vous raccommoder vos souliers?	<i>Will you have your shoes mended?</i>
Je ferais faire un habit si j'avais de l'argent.	<i>I could bespeak a new coat if I had money.</i>
Il ne sait pas faire la cuisine.	<i>He does not understand cooking.</i>
Avez-vous fait cuire votre viande?	<i>Have you cooked your meat?</i>

Ferez-vous chauffer votre bouillon ?	<i>Will you warm your broth ?</i>
Vous lui avez fait mal au coude.	<i>You have hurt his elbow.</i>
Vous m'avez fait mal au pied.	<i>You have hurt my foot.</i>
Vous avez fait peindre votre maison.	<i>You have had your house painted.</i>

EXERCISE 121.

Bât-ir, 2. <i>to build.</i>	Gravure, f. <i>engraving.</i>	Poignet, m. <i>wrist.</i>
Bouillon, m. <i>broth.</i>	Maçon, m. <i>mason.</i>	Tête, f. <i>head.</i>
Bras, m. <i>arm.</i>	March-er, 1. <i>to step,</i>	Tout à l'heure, <i>by-and-by.</i>
Cuisinier, m. <i>cook.</i>	<i>tread.</i>	
Épaule, f. <i>shoulder.</i>	Où, <i>where.</i>	Travail, m. <i>work, labour.</i>
Gigot de mouton, m. <i>leg of mutton.</i>	Pied, m. <i>foot.</i>	

1. Quand ferez-vous bâtir une maison ? 2. J'en ferai bâtir une l'année prochaine, si je reçois mon argent. 3. Avez-vous fait bouillir ce gigot de mouton ? 4. Je l'ai fait rôtir. 5. Le cuisinier a-t-il fait chauffer votre bouillon ? 6. Il ne l'a pas encore fait chauffer, mais il le fera chauffer tout à l'heure. 7. N'avez-vous pas fait venir des livres ? 8. Nous n'en avons pas fait venir, mais nous avons fait venir des gravures. 9. N'avez-vous pas fait peur à ces petites filles ? 10. Nous leur avons fait peur. 11. Ferez-vous attention à votre travail ? 12. J'y ferai attention. 13. Avez-vous fait mal à cette petite fille ? 14. Je ne lui ai pas fait mal. 15. N'avez-vous pas fait mal à ce chien ? 16. Je lui ai fait mal. 17. Où avez-vous fait mal à votre fils ? 18. Je lui ai fait mal au bras et à la main. 19. Ne lui avez-vous pas fait mal au pied ? 20. Je lui ai fait mal à l'épaule. 21. A qui ce maçon a-t-il fait mal ? 22. Il n'a fait mal à personne. 23. Vous ai-je fait mal au pied ? 24. Vous m'avez marché sur le pied et vous m'avez fait mal. 25. La tête, l'épaule, le bras, le poignet et la main me font mal [R. 5].

EXERCISE 122.

1. Will you have your coat mended ? 2. I will not have it mended. 3. Will your brother have his house painted ? 4. He will have it painted next year. 5. Will you not have a coat made ? 6. I would have one made if I had money. 7. Have you hurt your brother ? 8. I have hurt him, I have trodden on his foot. 9. Does his arm pain him ? 10. Yes, Sir, his shoulder, arm, and wrist pain him. 11. Will not your son pay attention to his work ? 12. He will pay attention to it, he has nothing else (*rien autre chose*) to do. 13. Have I hurt your hand or your elbow ? 14. You have hurt my fingers (*doigts*). 15. Does your cook understand cooking ? 16. He understands cooking. 17. Has the cook roasted that leg of mutton ? 18. He has boiled it. 19. Has he not warmed it ? 20. He has not had time to warm it. 21. Has the physician sent for engravings ? 22. He has sent for books. 23. Have you hurt his elbow ? 24. I have not hurt his elbow, but his hand. 25. Have I not hurt your fingers ? 26. You have hurt

my wrist. 27. Where have you hurt your son? 28. I have not hurt him. 29. Would the cook boil that meat if he had time? 30. He would not boil it, he would roast it. 31. When will he warm your broth? 32. He will warm it by-and-by, if he has time. 33. If you had trodden on my foot, would you not have hurt me? 34. I should certainly have hurt you, if I had trodden on your foot.

SECTION LXIV.

1. **Faire connaissance**, *to become or get acquainted*, requires the preposition *avec* before its object. **Faire un mille, faire un voyage, faire un tour de promenade**, mean *to go, or travel a mile, to go on a journey, to take a walk* :—

Nous avons fait vingt milles à cheval. *We travelled twenty miles on horseback.*

2. **Faire ses adieux, faire des emplettes, faire des progrès, faire des questions, faire du feu**, correspond in signification to the English expressions, *to bid farewell, to make purchases, to improve, to ask questions, to make a fire* :—

J'ai fait mes adieux à mes parents. *I bid farewell to my relations.*

Avez-vous fait du feu dans ma chambre? *Have you made a fire in my room?*

3. **Faire sortir** means, *to send out, or to order out*; **faire entrer, to let in, to bid come in**; **faire attendre, to keep waiting** :—

Vous les avez fait entrer dans ma chambre. *You made them come into my room.*

Vous avez fait attendre mon père. *You kept my father waiting.*

4. **Faire son possible, to do one's best**, requires the preposition *pour*. **Faire semblant, to pretend, faire usage, to make use**, are followed by *de* :—

Nous avons fait notre possible pour réussir. *We have done our best to succeed.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Nous avons fait connaissance avec eux. *We became acquainted with them.*

Vous avez fait vingt lieues en dix heures. *You travelled twenty leagues in ten hours.*

Nous ferons un tour de promenade. *We shall take a walk.*

Je lui ai fait plusieurs questions. *I asked him several questions.*

Ils nous ont fait leurs adieux. *They have bid us farewell.*

Vous nous avez fait attendre. *You kept us waiting.*

Cet enfant fait semblant de dormir. *That child pretends to be asleep.*

Vous faites semblant de lire. *You pretend to be reading, or do as if you were reading.*

Nous ferons notre possible pour le voir. *We will do our best to see him.*

EXERCISE 123.

Aise, <i>glad</i> .	Faire l'aumône, <i>to give</i>	Quart, <i>m. quarter</i> .
Aliment, <i>m. food</i> .	<i>alms</i> .	Rarement, <i>seldom</i> .
Crédit, <i>m. credit</i> .	Laiss-er, <i>l. to leave, let</i> .	Réuss-ir, <i>2. to succeed</i> .
Demand-er, <i>l. to ask</i> .	Mendiant, <i>m. beggar</i> .	Riz, <i>m. rice</i> .
Dorm-ir, <i>2. ir. to sleep</i> .	Négociant, <i>m. mer-</i>	Se fâch-er, <i>l. ref. to</i>
Étude, <i>f. study</i> .	<i>chant</i> .	<i>become angry</i> .

1. Seriez-vous bien aise de faire connaissance avec ce monsieur? 2. J'en serais bien aise. 3. Ce cheval fait-il une lieue en un quart d'heure? 4. Il a fait ce matin une liene en douze minutes. 5. Leur avez-vous fait des questions? 6. Je leur en ai fait.* 7. Quelles questions leur avez-vous faites? 8. Je leur ai demandé s'ils avaient fait des emplettes. 9. Vos élèves font-ils des progrès dans leurs études? 10. Ils n'en font pas beaucoup, ils viennent rarement à l'école. 11. Si vous étiez chez vous, feriez-vous semblant de dormir? 12. Je ne ferais certainement pas semblant de dormir. 13. Pourquoi ne faites-vous pas entrer ce mendiant? 14. Ma mère vient de lui faire l'aumône. 15. Le négociant fait-il usage de son crédit? 16. Il en fait usage. 17. De quels aliments ce malade fait-il usage? 18. Il fait usage de riz et de bouillon. 19. Faites-vous votre possible pour réussir? 20. Je fais tout mon possible. 21. Avez-vous fait entrer ces enfants, ou les avez-vous fait sortir? 22. Je les ai laissés où ils étaient. 23. Vous avons-nous fait attendre? 24. Vous nous avez fait attendre plusieurs heures. 25. Si vous faisiez attendre ces dames, elles se fâcheraient.

EXERCISE 124.

1. Does that child pretend to read? 2. He pretends to read. 3. Does not that gentleman pretend to sleep? 4. He does not pretend to sleep, he sleeps really (*réellement*). 5. Will you take a walk this morning? 6. I would do so with pleasure, if I had time. 7. Have you become acquainted with the physician? 8. I have not yet become acquainted with him. 9. How many questions have you asked (*à*) the child? 10. I asked him many questions. 11. Have you asked him if he had studied his lesson? 12. I did not ask him. 13. Will not that little girl do her best to learn her lesson? 14. She will do her best to learn it. 15. Of what food do you make use when you are ill? 16. We make use of bread and rice. 17. Have you forgotten to bid farewell to your mother? 18. I had not forgotten it; I intended to go to her house this afternoon. 19. With whom have you become acquainted? 20. With the bookseller. 21. Do you not keep those ladies waiting? 22. I do not keep them waiting, they are not ready (*prêtes*). 23. Do I keep you waiting? 24. You do not keep me waiting. 25. Have you left your children in your room? 26. I have not done so (*le*). 27. Have you sent them out? 28. I have not sent them out, I have let them remain where they were.

* See Sect. 42, 11, and § 135 (7).

29. Have you made purchases this morning? 30. I have made none, I have no money. 31. Has the servant made a fire in my room? 32. He has made one. 33. Will you do your best to come to-morrow? 34. I will do my best to come early. 35. We travelled yesterday forty leagues in sixteen hours.

SECTION LXV.

1. **Faire** is also used in the sense of *playing the part of*, or *pretending to be* :—

Il fait le grand seigneur. *He plays the great lord.*

2. **Faire** also means *to matter*, *to concern*, *to help* :—

Cela ne fait rien. *That is no matter.*

Cela ne vous fait rien. *That is nothing to you, does not concern you.*

Qu'est-ce que cela nous fait ? *What is that to us?*

Je ne puis qu'y faire. *I cannot help it.*

3. **Se faire mal** conjugated reflectively, means *to hurt one's self*. **Se faire** is used reflectively in the sense of the English verbs, *to become*, *to turn*. It is, also, used with the signification of the words *cause*, *have*, *get*, &c. **Se faire**, as all reflective verbs, takes **être** as its auxiliary [§ 45, Sect. 47] :—

Je me suis fait médecin. *I have become a physician.*

Je me suis fait faire une paire de bottes. *I have had a pair of boots made for me.*

Je me suis fait raser. *I have had my beard shaved.*

Nous nous sommes fait couper les cheveux. *We have had our hair cut.*

Je me suis fait mal au doigt. *I have hurt my finger.*

4. Besides the instances mentioned [Sect. 33, R. 5], **faire** is used impersonally in many idiomatic expressions :—

Il fait jour ; il fait nuit. *It is daylight ; it is night.*

Il fait de la boue ; il fait de la poussière. *It is muddy ; it is dusty.*

Il fait clair de lune ; il fait obscur. *It is moonlight ; it is dark.*

Il fait bon ici ; il fait cher ici. *It is comfortable here ; it is dear here.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Ce jeune homme fait le savant. *That young man plays the learned man.*

Cela ne me fait rien. *That is nothing to me.*

Que pouvons-nous y faire ? *What can we do to it ?*

Mon frère s'est fait orfèvre. *My brother has turned goldsmith.*

Pourquoi vous faites-vous raser ? *Why do you get shaved ?*

Je me ferai couper les cheveux. *I will have my hair cut.*

Je me suis fait bâtir une maison. *I have had a house built for me.*

Nous nous sommes fait mal à la tête. *We have hurt our heads.*

Il commence à se faire tard. *It is beginning to grow late.*

Fait-il cher vivre à Paris ? *Is it dear living in Paris ?*

Il fait beaucoup de boue. *It is very muddy.*

EXERCISE 125.

Absolument, <i>absolu- tely.</i>	Denrées, f. p. <i>provi- sions.</i>	Ouvrier, m. <i>workman.</i>
Artisan, m. <i>mechanic.</i>	Étudiant, m. <i>student.</i>	Peintre, m. <i>painter.</i>
Bijoutier, m. <i>jeweller.</i>	Fou, folle, <i>fool, sim- pleton.</i>	Personne, m. <i>nobody.</i>
Bon marché, <i>cheap.</i>		Tanneur, m. <i>tanner.</i>
Chagriné, e, <i>grieved.</i>	Impertinent, e, <i>im- pertinent.</i>	Vigneron, m. <i>vine- dresser.</i>
		Vitrier, m. <i>glazier.</i>

1. Pourquoi cet ouvrier fait-il le malade ? 2. Il fait le malade parce qu'il n'a pas envie de travailler. 3. Cet étudiant ne fait-il pas le savant ? 4. Il ne fait pas le savant, il fait le fou. 5. Sied-il à ce jeune homme de faire le maître ici ? 6. Il ne sied à personne de faire l'impertinent. 7. Cela fait-il quelque chose ? [R. 2.] 8. Cela ne fait absolument rien. 9. Cela peut-il faire quelque chose à ces vignerons ? 10. Cela ne leur fait rien du tout. 11. N'êtes-vous pas bien chagrinés de cela ? 12. Nous en sommes bien fâchés, mais nous ne pouvons qu'y faire. 13. Votre associé ne s'est-il pas fait bijoutier ? 14. Non, Monsieur, il s'est fait peintre. 15. Cet artisan ne s'est-il pas fait vitrier ? 16. Il s'est fait tanneur, et son frère s'est fait soldat. 17. La modiste ne s'est-elle pas fait couper les cheveux ? 18. Elle se les est fait couper. 19. Ne vous levez-vous pas aussitôt qu'il fait jour ? 20. Oui, Monsieur, je me lève de très bonne heure. 21. Ne fait-il pas clair de lune ? 22. Il fait très clair, mais il ne fait pas clair de lune. 23. Fait-il bon vivre en Amérique ? 24. Il fait très bon vivre en Amérique, les denrées y sont à bon marché.

EXERCISE 126.

1. Does not that gentleman play the learned man ? 2. He plays the lord and fool at the same time (*à la fois*). 3. Does not that boy pretend to be ill ? 4. He pretends to be ill, he does not wish to study his lessons. 5. When you have no wish to work, do you pretend to be ill ? 6. I never pretend to be ill. 7. Is it muddy to-day ? 8. It is not muddy, it is dusty. 9. Will it be moonlight this evening ? 10. It will not be moonlight, it will be very dark. 11. Is it comfortable here ? 12. It is very comfortable. 13. Is it too warm or too cold ? 14. It is neither too warm nor too cold here. 15. Will you have your hair cut ? 16. I had my hair cut yesterday morning. 17. Will you not go home, it is beginning to grow late ? 18. Is it not very dark out ? (*dehors*.) 19. It is not dark, it is moonlight. 20. Has not the glazier turned goldsmith ? 21. He has not turned goldsmith, he has turned soldier. 22. Does that concern your brother ? 23. That does not concern him. 24. Are you not sorry for that ? 25. I am sorry for it, but I cannot help it. 26. Why do you get shaved ? 27. Because I cannot shave myself. 28. Have you not hurt those children ? 29. I have not hurt them. 30. Have you hurt your arm ? 31. No, Sir, but I have hurt my head. 32. Has not your sister hurt her hand ? 33. She has hurt her hand, and my mother

has hurt her elbow. 34. Have you not hurt your head? 35. I have not hurt my head, but I have hurt my hand.

SECTION LXVI.

1. **Avoir mal** means *to have a pain or ache, a sore*. When used in relation to one of the limbs, it means generally, *to have a sore, a bruise, a cut, &c.* The name of the part of the body is preceded by the preposition *à* and the article [See Sect. 63, R. 5, § 77 (9)]:—

N'avez-vous pas mal au doigt? *Have you not a sore finger!*
Je n'ai pas mal à la tête. *My head does not ache.*

2. **Avoir une douleur**, or **des douleurs**, corresponds to the English *to have a pain or pains*:—

J'ai une douleur au bras. *I have a pain in my arm.*

3. The construction mentioned in Rule 1 is used after **avoir**, taken in the sense of **tenir**, *to hold*, and after **avoir froid** and **avoir chaud** [Sect. 63, R. 5]:—

Vous avez les armes à la main. *You have your arms in your hands.*
J'ai chaud aux mains et aux pieds. *My hands and feet are warm.*

4. The article **le**, &c., is used before words indicating moral and physical properties, in cases where the English use *a* or *an*, or omit the article. When, however, an adjective precedes the noun, **un**, **une**, or **de**, **des**, are used:—

Cette dame a l'esprit juste. *That lady has a correct mind.*
Votre sœur a les yeux noirs. *Your sister has black eyes.*

5. A noun expressing a moral or physical property, which, in the individual is single, is not put in the plural in French, even when referring to a number of individuals:—

Ces dames ont l'esprit juste. *Those ladies have correct minds.*
Ces garçons se sont fait mal à la tête. *Those boys have hurt their heads.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

N'avez-vous pas mal au pied?	<i>Have you not a sore foot?</i>
Cette demoiselle a mal à la tête.	<i>That young lady has the headache.</i>
N'avez-vous pas mal aux dents?	<i>Do not your teeth ache?</i>
Mon frère a mal aux dents.	<i>My brother has the toothache.</i>
Mon cousin a mal au côté.	<i>My cousin has a pain in his side.</i>
Il a des douleurs de poitrine.	<i>He has pains in his chest.</i>
Qu'avez-vous à la main?	{ <i>What have you in your hand?</i>
	{ <i>What is the matter with your hand?</i>
Je n'ai rien à la main.	{ <i>I have nothing in my hand.</i>
	{ <i>Nothing is the matter with my hand.</i>
J'ai chaud aux mains et froid aux pieds.	<i>My hands are warm and my feet cold.</i>
Vos sœurs ont le goût délicat.	<i>Your sisters have a delicate taste.</i>
Ces messieurs ont le nez aquilin.	<i>Those gentlemen have Roman noses.</i>

EXERCISE 127.

Bleu, e, <i>blue</i> .	Mal de gorge, m. <i>sore throat</i> .	Noir, e, <i>black</i> .
Bouche, f. <i>mouth</i> .		Pied, m. <i>foot</i> .
Dent, f. <i>tooth</i> .	Mal d'oreille, m. <i>ear-ache</i> .	Presque, <i>almost</i> .
Doigt, m. <i>finger</i> .	Mémoire, f. <i>memory</i> .	Teint, m. <i>complexion</i> .
Gorge, f. <i>throat</i> .	Nièce, f. <i>niece</i> .	Visage, m. <i>face</i> .
		Yeux, <i>from</i> <i>œil</i> , <i>eyes</i> .

1. Ce jeune homme a-t-il mal à la gorge? 2. Oui, Monsieur, il y a deux jours qu'il a mal à la gorge. 3. Avez-vous souvent mal à la tête? 4. J'ai mal à la tête presque tous les jours. 5. N'avez-vous pas mal au bras? 6. J'ai mal au bras et à la main. 7. Votre sœur a-t-elle mal à l'oreille? 8. Oui, Madame, elle a mal à l'oreille et mal aux dents. 9. N'avez-vous pas froid à la tête? 10. Non, Monsieur, mais j'ai froid aux doigts. 11. N'avez-vous pas froid au visage? 12. Non, Monsieur, je n'y ai pas froid. 13. Ce monsieur a-t-il le nez aquilin? 14. Il a le nez aquilin et la bouche grande. 15. Cette demoiselle a-t-elle de belles dents? 16. Elle a de belles dents et de beaux yeux. 17. Ce petit garçon a-t-il les pieds petits? 18. Il a les pieds petits et les mains grandes. 19. Votre nièce n'a-t-elle pas les yeux bleus? 20. Non, Monsieur, elle a les yeux noirs. 21. Vos écoliers se sont-ils fait mal au visage? 22. Ils se sont fait mal à la poitrine. 23. Vos filles ont-elles une bonne mémoire? 24. Elles ont la mémoire excellente. 25. Ces Italiennes n'ont pas le teint frais.

EXERCISE 128.

1. What is the matter with your hand? 2. I have had a sore hand these ten days. 3. Has your brother sore fingers? 4. He has sore fingers and a sore hand. 5. What has your brother in his hand? 6. He has a pen in his hand. 7. Has your little boy a sore throat? 8. He has a sore throat. 9. Has not your eldest sister the toothache? 10. She has not the toothache, but she has a sore finger. 11. Why does not the soldier walk? 12. He cannot walk, he has a sore foot. 13. Have you not sore feet? 14. My feet are not sore. 15. If your finger were sore would you write? 16. If I had sore fingers I should not write. 17. If your brother had the headache would he study his lesson? 18. He could not study his lesson if he had the headache. 19. Has not that gentleman pains in his chest? 20. He has pains in his chest and in his side. 21. Has your little girl black eyes or blue eyes? 22. She has black eyes and a fresh complexion. 23. Has not your daughter the toothache? 24. She has the toothache and the ear-ache. 25. Are not your hands and feet cold? 26. My hands are cold, but my feet are warm. 27. Have not those ladies aquiline noses? 28. They have aquiline noses and a fair complexion (*le teint beau*). 29. Has your sister large hands? 30. No, Sir, my sister has small hands. 31. Have not those little girls hurt their heads? 32. They have not hurt their heads, they have hurt their faces. 33. That little boy has black hair (*cheveux*).

SECTION LXVII.

1. **Avoir beau**—**Vous avez beau**, corresponds in signification to the English expression, *it is in vain for you to, you may do, say, &c., what you like*. It must be followed by the infinitive :—

Vous avez beau dire, il ne viendra pas. *It is in vain for you to speak, you may say what you like, he will not come.*

2. **Épouser, marier**, *to marry*, have, in French, a different meaning. **Marier**, conjugated actively, can only have as its nominative the person performing the ceremony, or giving one or both of the parties in marriage : **épouser** takes, as its nominative, the contracting parties only, and must always be followed by a direct object. **Se marier**, *to get married*, and **marier**, conjugated passively, take the same nominative as **épouser** :—

M. L. a marié sa fille avec M. G. *Mr. L. has married his daughter to Mr. G.*

M. G. a épousé la fille de M. L. *Mr. G. has married Mr. L.'s daughter.*

M. G. et Mlle. L. sont mariés. *Mr. G. and Miss L. are married.*

Mon frère va se marier. *My brother is going to be married.*

3. **Un de mes amis** is equivalent to the English, *a friend of mine* :—

Votre ami a épousé une de mes amies. *Your friend has married a friend of mine.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Ils ont beau dire et beau faire, ils ne l'empêcheront pas de se marier. *Whatever they may say or do, they will not prevent his marrying.*

Vous avez beau lui faire des remontrances. *It is in vain for you to remonstrate with him.*

L'évêque de B. a marié ma sœur. *The Bishop of B. has married my sister.*

Le capitaine G. a épousé ma cousine. *Captain G. has married my cousin.*

Quand il se mariera, il nous invitera à la noce. *When he marries, he will invite us to the wedding.*

Votre cousine est mariée avec mon cousin. *Your lady cousin is married to my cousin.*

Votre cousine a épousé un de mes cousins. *Your lady cousin has married a cousin of mine.*

Le colonel a épousé une de mes sœurs. *The colonel has married a sister of mine.*

EXERCISE 129.

Aîné, e, <i>elder, eldest.</i>	Dev-oir, 3. ir. <i>to owe,</i>	Parent, e, <i>relation.</i>
Archevêque, m. <i>arch-bishop.</i>	<i>to be about.</i>	Princesse, f. <i>princess.</i>
Cadet, te, <i>younger.</i>	Époux, pl. <i>couple :</i>	Prochain, e, <i>next.</i>
	<i>man and wife.</i>	Régiment, m. <i>regiment</i>
Demoiselle, f. <i>young lady.</i>	Évêque, m. <i>bishop.</i>	Sav-oir, 3. ir. <i>to know.</i>
	Infanterie, f. <i>infantry.</i>	Vieillard, <i>old man</i>

1. Votre nièce ne va-t-elle pas se marier ? 2. Elle se mariera l'année prochaine. 3. Qui épousera-t-elle ? 4. Elle épousera le fils aîné du général M. 5. Savez-vous qui a marié ces deux époux ? 6. L'archevêque de Paris les a mariés. 7. N'a-t-il pas aussi marié Mlle. L. ? 8. Il l'a mariée avec M. G. 9. Qui madame votre fille a-t-elle épousé ? 10. Elle a épousé M. L., capitaine au 25^{ème} régiment d'infanterie. 11. Ce vieillard n'a-t-il pas tort de se marier ? 12. Il n'a pas tort de se marier, mais il a tort d'épouser cette demoiselle. 13. Quand ces princesses vont-elles se marier ? 14. Elles se marieront le mois prochain. 15. Qui les mariera ? 16. L'évêque d'Arras les mariera. 17. Qui doivent elles épouser ? 18. L'aînée doit épouser M.W., et la cadette M. G. 19. Le capitaine G. n'a-t-il pas épousé une de vos parentes ? 20. Oui, Monsieur, il a épousé une de mes cousines. 21. Qui est cette demoiselle ? 22. C'est une de mes sœurs. 23. N'avez-vous pas un de mes livres ? 24. J'ai un de vos livres et une de vos plumes. 25. Je viens de parler à une de vos sœurs.

EXERCISE 130.

1. Is your brother going to marry Miss L. ? 2. Yes, Sir, it is in vain for us to speak to him, he will marry her. 3. Will not your father marry your sister to Mr. G. ? 4. No, Sir, he will marry her to Mr. L. 5. Is Captain H. married ? 6. No, Sir, he is not yet married, but he will be married next year. 7. Whom does he intend to marry ? 8. He intends to marry a cousin of mine, who is at my brother's. 9. Who will marry them ? 10. My eldest brother intends to marry them. 11. Is your youngest sister married ? 12. No, Sir, she is not married. 13. Is she going to be married ? 14. She will marry when she is [Sect. 61, 5] old enough (*assez âgée*). 15. Whom did Colonel J. marry ? 16. He married a sister of mine. 17. How long have they been married [Sect. 57, 2] ? 18. They have been married two years. 19. Is not that young lady wrong to get married ? 20. She is wrong to marry ; she is too young. 21. Who married General S. and Miss N. ? 22. The Bishop of Arras married them. 23. Did not the Archbishop of York marry that couple ? 24. The Archbishop of Paris married them. 25. Will not your aunt marry ? 26. She will not marry. 27. Is not your sister at home ? 28. No, Sir, she is with (*chez*) an aunt of mine. 29. Is your brother at your house ? 30. No, Sir, he is with one of my relations. 31. Is he married ? 32. He is not married. 33. Is Captain H. married ? 34. He was married last week. 35. He married Miss H.

SECTION LXVIII.

DIMENSION, WEIGHT, ETC.

1. The verb *avoir* is used in expressing the size of an object. The preposition *de* precedes the noun of dimension. When there is no verb in the sentence the preposition must be placed before the number, and again before the noun of dimension :—

Cette muraille a dix pieds de hauteur.	<i>That wall is ten feet high.</i>
Ce puits a cent pieds de profondeur.	<i>That well is one hundred feet deep.</i>
Une table de quatre pieds de longueur.	<i>A table four feet long.</i>

The verb **être** is also used, in which case the preposition **de** precedes the number :—

Cette table est longue de quatre pieds.	<i>This table is four feet long.</i>
---	--------------------------------------

2. In sentences where sizes are compared, and the verb **être** is used, the preposition **de** is placed before the number expressing the excess :—

Vous êtes plus grand que moi de deux pouces.	<i>You are taller than I by two inches.</i>
--	---

3. When the price of an article is mentioned, the definite article is used before the noun expressing the measure, weight, &c. When the remuneration, or rent, &c., for a definite space of time is mentioned the preposition **par** (*per*) is used :—

Le beurre se vend un franc la livre.	<i>Butter is sold [at] a franc per pound.</i>
Il gagne six francs par jour.	<i>He earns six francs per day.</i>

4. The same preposition is used when we speak of the number of times any occurrence takes place in a given space of time :—

Je vais à la poste deux fois par jour.	<i>I go to the post-office twice a day.</i>
--	---

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

La canelle se vend deux francs la livre.	<i>Cinnamon is sold [at] two francs a pound.</i>
Cette soie vaut six francs le mètre.	<i>That silk is worth six francs a metre.</i>
Ce clocher a cinq cents pieds de hauteur.	<i>That steeple is five hundred feet high.</i>
Cet étang a huit pieds de profondeur.	<i>That pond is eight feet deep.</i>
Une chambre de quinze pieds de longueur, sur dix-huit de largeur, et huit de hauteur.	<i>A room fifteen feet long by eighteen feet broad and eight feet high.</i>
De quelle taille est votre frère ?	<i>How tall is your brother ?</i>
Sa taille est de cinq pieds huit pouces.	<i>His height is five feet eight inches.</i>
Notre ami est-il grand ou petit ?	<i>Is our friend tall or short ?</i>
Il est de taille moyenne.	<i>His height is middling.</i>
Votre maison est plus haute que la mienne de cinq pieds.	<i>Your house is higher than mine by five feet.</i>
Je vais à l'école deux fois par jour.	<i>I go to school twice a day.</i>
Il nous paie huit francs par semaine.	<i>He pays us eight francs a week.</i>

EXERCISE 131.

Bon marché, <i>cheap</i> .	Grandeur, f. <i>size</i> .	Mètre, m. <i>metre</i> (39 ³⁷ / ₁₀₀
Cassonade, f. <i>brown sugar</i> .	Hauteur, f. <i>height</i> .	<i>English inches</i>), <i>yard</i> .
Écossais, e, <i>Scotch</i> .	Largeur, f. <i>breadth</i> .	Pouce, m. <i>inch</i> .
Épaisseur, f. <i>thickness</i> .	Longueur, f. <i>length</i> .	Profondeur, f. <i>depth</i> .
Étoffe, f. <i>stuff</i> .	Loyer, m. <i>rent</i> .	Semaine, f. <i>week</i> .
		Taille, f. <i>height, size</i> .

1. Votre maison est-elle grande ? 2. Elle a cinquante pieds de long et vingt-cinq de large. 3. Combien de longueur votre jardin a-t-il ? 4. Il a vingt-cinq mètres de longueur et douze de largeur. 5. De quelle grandeur est ce livre ? 6. Il a dix-huit pouces de longueur, treize de largeur et trois d'épaisseur. 7. Votre maison est-elle plus longue que celle-ci ? 8. Elle est plus longue de deux pieds. 9. Quelle profondeur a ce puits ? 10. De quelle hauteur est ce clocher ? 11. Il a trois cent cinquante-trois pieds de hauteur. 12. De quelle taille est cet officier ? 13. Il est de haute taille. 14. De combien cet Écossais est-il plus grand que son frère ? 15. Il est plus grand de toute la tête. 16. N'êtes-vous pas de beaucoup plus grand que moi ? 17. Je suis plus grand que vous de trois pouces. 18. Combien cette étoffe se vend-elle le mètre ? 19. Elle se vend trois francs le mètre. 20. La cassonade ne se vend-elle pas cher ? 21. Elle se vend à bon marché. 22. Combien de lettres écrivez-vous par semaine ? 23. Je n'en écris que six par semaine. 24. Combien payez-vous par semaine pour votre loyer ? 25. Je ne paie que dix francs par semaine.

EXERCISE 132.

1. How large is your father's garden ? 2. It is twenty-five yards long and ten broad. 3. Is your cousin's house large ? 4. It is fifty-six feet long and forty broad. 5. Is your house larger than mine ? 6. It is larger than yours by ten feet. 7. Do you know how deep that well is ? 8. It is twenty-five feet deep and six feet broad. 9. How much is that cloth sold a metre ? 10. It is sold [at] sixteen francs a metre. 11. How much do you receive a week for your work ? 12. I receive fifty francs a week for my work. 13. How much does your friend pay a month for his board (*pension, f.*) ? 14. He pays seventy francs a month. 15. Are you taller than your cousin ? 16. I am taller than he by the whole head. 17. Is not your nephew taller than your son ? 18. He is taller than my son by three inches. 19. How large is this room ? 20. It is sixty feet long by forty. 21. What size is your brother ? 22. He is tall, he is taller than I. 23. How many books do you read a week ? 24. I read ten volumes a week. 25. How much is butter sold per pound ? 26. Butter is sold [at] two francs per pound. 27. Do you know how much your son earns a day ? 28. He earns as much as yours, he earns ten francs a day. 29. How much is that silk worth a metre ? 30. It is worth six francs a metre. 31. Our friend's stature is middling. 32. Do you go to church twice a day ? 33. I go to church once a day. 34. Does your

son go to the post-office every day? 35. He goes thither six times a day.

SECTION LXIX.

1. *Mettre* (4. ir.) forms, in French, many idiomatic expressions. *Mettre à même de*, to enable; *mettre pied à terre*, to alight, to land; *mettre le pied*, to set one's foot; *mettre à la porte*, to turn out of doors; *mettre au fait de*, to acquaint with; *mettre à l'abri*, to shelter; *mettre à l'ombre*, to put in the shade; *mettre un habit à l'endroit, à l'envers*, to put on a coat right side out, wrong side out, &c.:—

Nous l'avons mis à même de We enabled him to know the
connaître la vérité. truth.

Il a mis cet insolent à la porte. He turned that insolent person out
of doors.

2. *Mettre* conjugated reflectively, i.e., *se mettre*, means to place one's self, to dress one's self; *se mettre à table*, to sit down to table; *se mettre en colère*, to become angry, to put one's self into a passion:—

Il se met à l'ombre, au soleil. He places himself in the shade, in
the sun.

3. *Se mettre*, followed by an infinitive, means to commence, to begin:—

Ils se mirent à pleurer. They commenced weeping.

À l'anglaise, à la française, are used elliptically for à la mode anglaise, à la mode française, after the English fashion, after the French fashion.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Ce cavalier a mis pied à terre. That horseman has alighted from
his horse.

Vous n'osez mettre le pied chez You dare not set your foot inside
lui. his house.

Mettez ces enfants à l'abri de la Shelter those children from the
pluie. rain.

Vous avez mis votre manteau à You have put your cloak inside
l'envers. out.

Ce monsieur se met toujours à That gentleman always dresses
l'anglaise. after the English fashion.

Hier nous nous mîmes à table à Yesterday we sat down to table at
dix heures. ten o'clock.

Pourquoi vous mettez-vous à Why do you go into the shade?
l'ombre?

Ces enfants se mirent à rire. Those children commenced laugh-
ing.

Pourquoi ne vous mettez-vous Why do you not set yourself to
pas à l'ouvrage? work?

Je vais me mettre en pension. I will commence boarding.

Nous allons nous mettre en We are going to commence our
voyage. journey.

EXERCISE 133.

À l'italienne, *after the Italian fashion*. Défend-re, 4. *to forbid*. Étudi-er, 1. *to study*.
 Effets, m. p. *things*. Mise, f. mettre, *dressed*.
 A merveille, *exceedingly well*. Entr-er, 1. *to come in*. Pluie, f. *rain*.
 Étourdi, e, *giddy per-* Ri-re, 4. *ir. to laugh*.
 Couvert, *See Sect. 32, 1.* son. Tablier, *apron*.

1. Avez-vous défendu à cet homme de mettre le pied chez vous? 2. Je le lui ai défendu. 3. Avez-vous mis ces effets à l'abri de la pluie? 4. Je les ai mis à l'abri de la pluie et du vent. 5. Avez-vous mis votre frère au fait de cette affaire? 6. Je ne l'en ai pas mis au fait. 7. Ne l'avez-vous pas mis à même d'étudier? 8. Je l'ai mis à même de s'instruire, s'il le désire. 9. Voulez-vous mettre cela de côté? 10. Je vais le mettre au soleil. 11. Votre ami n'a-t-il pas voulu entrer? 12. Il n'a point voulu mettre pied à terre. 13. Votre teinturier n'a-t-il pas mis son tablier à l'envers? 14. Non, Monsieur, il l'a mis à l'endroit. 15. N'avez-vous pas mis cet étourdi à la porte? 16. Nous lui avons fermé la porte au nez (*in his face*). 17. À quelle heure vous mettrez-vous à table? 18. Aussitôt que le couvert sera mis [Sect. 61, 5]. 19. Cet homme se met-il bien? 20. Il se met toujours à l'anglaise ou à l'italienne. 21. Ces enfants ne se mirent-ils pas à pleurer? 22. Au lieu de se mettre à pleurer, ils se mirent à rire. 23. Pourquoi ne vous mettez-vous pas à écrire? 24. Il est temps de se mettre à table. 25. Ces Siciliennes sont-elles bien mises? 26. Elles sont mises à merveille.

EXERCISE 134.

1. Did the gentleman alight this morning? 2. No, Sir, he would not alight, he had no time. 3. Have you put that insolent person out of doors? 4. No, Sir, but I forbade him to set his foot in my house. 5. Did you shelter those little children from the rain? 6. I sheltered them from the rain and the wind. 7. Have you enabled your son to study medicine (*la médecine*)? 8. I enabled him to study medicine, if he wishes to do so. 9. Have you put on your coat inside out? 10. I have not put it on inside out, but right side out. 11. Did you put yourself in a passion? 12. No, Sir, I did not become angry. 13. Did you sit down to table at four o'clock yesterday? 14. We sat down to table at six o'clock. 15. Do you intend to commence boarding? 16. I intend to board with Mr. L. (*chez M. L.*). 17. When do you commence your journey? 18. We commence our journey to-morrow morning. 19. Did your son commence laughing? 20. No, Sir, he commenced weeping. 21. Why do you not commence working? 22. Because I am going to commence reading. 23. Does that lady dress after the English fashion? 24. She dresses after the Italian fashion. 25. Are those ladies well dressed? 26. They are extremely well dressed. 27. Will you not place yourself in the shade? 28. I will place myself in the sun, I am very cold. 29. Is your coat inside out? 30. No, Sir, it is right

side out. 31. Is this the right side of this cloth (*Vendroit*)? 32. It is the wrong side (*Venvers*). 33. Are you not dressed after the English fashion? 34. I am dressed after the Italian fashion. 35. You are well dressed.

SECTION LXX.

THE IMPERATIVE.

1. CONJUGATION OF THE IMPERATIVE OF THE REGULAR VERBS:—

	Chant	-e	fin	-is	reç	-ois	rend	-s
	<i>sing</i>		<i>finish</i>		<i>receive</i>		<i>render</i>	
Qu'il	parl	-e	chér	-isse	aperç	-oive	vend	-e
	<i>let him speak</i>		<i>let him cherish</i>		<i>let him perceive</i>		<i>let him sell</i>	
Donn	-ons	fourn	-issons	perc	-evons	tend	-ons	
	<i>let us give</i>	<i>let us furnish</i>		<i>let us collect</i>		<i>let us tend</i>		
Cherch	-ez	pun	-issez	conç	-evez	entend	-ez	
	<i>seek</i>	<i>punish</i>		<i>conceive</i>		<i>hear</i>		
Qu'ils	port	-ent	sais	-issent	d	-oivent	perd	-ent
	<i>let them carry</i>	<i>let them seize</i>		<i>let them owe</i>		<i>let them lose</i>		

2. The second person singular, and the first and second persons plural of the imperative are the same as the first person singular, and the first and second persons plural of the present of the indicative. The pronouns are dropped:—

Je parle, parle ; je finis, finis. I speak, speak ; I finish, finish.

3. Exceptions:—Those persons of the imperative of *avoir*, *to have*, are: *aie, ayons, ayez*; of *être*, *to be*, *sois, soyons, soyez*; of *savoir*, *to know*, *sache, sachons, sachez*; and *aller*, *va, and vas* before *y* and *en*.

4. *Vouloir* has only the second person plural, *veuillez*, *have the goodness to . . .*

5. The French imperative has no third persons. The English form *let him, let her, let them*, is rendered in French by the third persons of the present subjunctive:—

Qu'il parle. *Let him speak.* Qu'ils entrent. *Let them come in.*
Qu'elle finisse. *Let her finish.* Qu'elles sortent. *Let them go out.*

6. *À droite, à gauche*, correspond in signification to the English *to the right, to the left*:—

Allez à droite ; à gauche. Go to the right ; to the left.

7. For the place of the pronouns in connection with the imperative, see Sect. 26, R. 1, 4; Sect. 27, R. 1, 2, 3, 4.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Prenons la première rue à droite.	<i>Let us take the first street to the right.</i>
Ne cherchez plus à le tromper.	<i>Seek no longer to deceive him.</i>
Sachons nous contenter du nécessaire.	<i>Let us know how to content ourselves with necessaries.</i>
Faites bien attention à ce que vous dites.	<i>Pay great attention to what you say.</i>

Dites toujours la vérité.	<i>Always tell the truth.</i>
Allons ! Messieurs, dépêchez-vous.	<i>Come ! gentlemen, make haste.</i>
Tenez, Monsieur, voilà votre argent.	<i>Here, Sir, here is your money.</i>
Veuillez accepter ce présent.	<i>Be so kind as to accept this present.</i>

EXERCISE 135.

Clef, f. <i>key.</i>	Rapport-er, 1. <i>to bring</i>	Sans faute, <i>without</i>
Crayon, m. <i>pencil.</i>	<i>back.</i>	<i>fail.</i>
Institutrice, f. <i>teacher.</i>	Remett-re, 4. <i>ir. to</i>	Se serv-ir, 2. <i>ref. to use.</i>
Obé-ir, 2. <i>to obey.</i>	<i>deliver.</i>	Tiers, m. <i>third.</i>
Partie, f. <i>part.</i>	Renvoy-er, 1. <i>to send</i>	Verrez, 3. <i>ir. from voir,</i>
Précepteur, m. <i>tutor.</i>	<i>back.</i>	<i>to see.</i>
Promett-re, 4. <i>ir. to</i>		
<i>promise.</i>		

1. Envoyez chercher le médecin, votre petit garçon est malade. 2. Nous l'avons déjà envoyé chercher. 3. Vous n'avez pas besoin de votre crayon, prêtez-le-moi [Sect. 26, R. 4; Sect. 27, R. 4]. 4. Je ne puis vous le prêter, je m'en sers. 5. Donnez-le-moi ou me le prêtez (§ 97 (7)). 6. Je l'ai promis à votre institutrice. 7. Si vous ne le lui avez pas dit, dites-le-lui aussitôt que possible. 8. Ne le lui dites pas encore. 9. Parlez-lui-en [§ 40, 17] la prochaine fois que vous le verrez. 10. Ayez patience, mon ami, votre père ne tardera pas à venir. 11. Obéissez à votre précepteur. 12. Je lui obéis toujours. 13. Donnez-lui-en une bonne partie. 14. Je lui en ai déjà donné plus des deux tiers. 15. Avez-vous porté cette clef au serrurier ? 16. J'ai oublié de la lui remettre. 17. Portez-la-lui sans faute cette après-midi. 18. Veuillez me dire où demeure M. G. 19. Prenez la première rue à gauche ; il demeure dans la deuxième maison à droite. 20. Allons, Mesdemoiselles, dépêchons-nous. 21. Menez-les-y le plus tôt possible. 22. Ne me les rapportez pas. 23. Renvoyez-les-moi demain. 24. Portons-les-y. 25. Ne les y portons pas. 26. Prêtez-les-lui, mais ne les lui donnez pas.

EXERCISE 136.

1. Give a book to the young man. 2. I have already given him one, and he does not read it. 3. Lend it to him, if you will not give it to him. 4. I will not lend it to him. 5. Make haste, young ladies, it is ten o'clock. 6. Have the goodness to give me a pen. 7. I have given one to your brother. 8. Obey your father, and speak to your sister. 9. Will you not send for the letter ? 10. I will send for it. 11. Send for it as soon as you can. 12. Do not do so (*le*), but write to my cousin. 13. Come, children (*mes enfants*), learn your lesson. 14. Give him some [§ 40, 17], or lend him some [§ 97, (7)]. 15. Do not make haste, we have (*le*) time. 16. Have patience, my child, the merchant will soon come. 17. Send it to him, if you cannot give it to him. 18. Write to him this afternoon without fail. 19. I would write to him if I had time. 20. Let us take the first street to the left. 21. Take the second street

to the right. 22. Pay attention to what your brother says. 23. Let us tell the truth. 24. Let us read that book to-day. 25. Pay your debts as soon as possible. 26. Let us obey our tutor. 27. Take the key to him. 28. Bring me back the books which I have lent you. 29. Do not bring them back to me, read them. 30. Let us have patience, we shall soon have money. 31. Let us speak to them, they are at my father's. 32. Tell them that I intend to write to them to-morrow morning. 33. Go to church this afternoon. 34. Bring me back my letters. 35. Do not carry them there, but bring them to me as soon as possible.

SECTION LXXI.

1. A verb following another verb in the imperative, is put in the infinitive (according to general rule, Sect. 20, 2). The conjunction, which often comes between the two verbs in English, is not used in French:—

Allez parler au musicien.	<i>Go and speak to the musician.</i>
Allez faire votre ouvrage.	<i>Go and do your work.</i>
Courez voir ces messieurs.	<i>Run and see those gentlemen.</i>

2. **Prendre garde**, *to take care, to take heed*, when followed by another verb in the infinitive, means *to take care not to*:—

Prenez garde de tomber.	<i>Take care not to fall.</i>
-------------------------	-------------------------------

3. **Prendre le deuil**, means *to go into mourning*; **prendre la peine**, *to take the trouble*; **prendre les devants**, *to go on before*; **prendre un parti**, *to take a determination*; **prendre du café, du thé, &c.**, *to take coffee, tea, &c.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Envoyez chercher le tapissier.	<i>Send for the upholsterer.</i>
Allez chercher votre parapluie.	<i>Go and fetch your umbrella.</i>
Courez voir votre père.	<i>Run and see your father.</i>
Prenons garde de nous blesser.	<i>Let us take care not to hurt ourselves.</i>
Prenez garde de déchirer vos habits.	<i>Take care not to tear your clothes.</i>
N'avez-vous pas pris le deuil?	<i>Have you not put on mourning?</i>
Prenez la peine de vous asseoir.	<i>Take the trouble to sit down.</i>
Prenez du thé ou du café.	<i>Take tea or coffee.</i>
Quel parti avez-vous pris?	<i>What resolution have you taken?</i>

EXERCISE 137.

Attend-re, 4. <i>to expect, to wait for.</i>	Gât-er, 1. <i>to spoil.</i>	Robe, f. <i>dress.</i>
Chocolat, m. <i>chocolate.</i>	Gouverneur, m. <i>governor.</i>	Se tai-re, 4. <i>ir. to be silent.</i>
Courier, m. <i>courier.</i>	Lorsque, <i>when.</i>	Soin, m. <i>care.</i>
Croi-re, 4. <i>ir. to believe.</i>	Port-er, 1. <i>to wear.</i>	Tach-er, 1. <i>to stain, to spot.</i>
Déchir-er, 1. <i>to tear.</i>	Quelquefois, <i>sometimes.</i>	Tomb-er, 1. <i>to fall.</i>

1. Allez voir mon frère, il a quelque chose à vous communiquer. 2. Courez leur dire que je les attends. 3. Mon frère a

pris bien garde de déchirer ses habits. 4. Votre cousine a-t-elle pris garde de tacher sa robe? 5. Elle a pris garde de tomber, car en tombant elle l'aurait gâtée. 6. Ces petites filles ont-elles pris le deuil? 7. Elles viennent de le prendre. 8. Pour qui prenez-vous le deuil? 9. Je prends le deuil pour ma mère. 10. Prenez-vous du thé ou du café le matin? 11. Nous prenons du thé et du café. 12. Ne prenez-vous pas quelquefois du chocolat? 13. Nous n'en prenons que lorsque nous sommes malades. 14. Quel parti le gouverneur a-t-il pris? 15. Il a pris le parti de se taire. 16. Prendrez-vous mon parti (*my part*) ou celui de votre fils? 17. Je prendrai le vôtre, si je crois que vous avez raison. 18. Pourquoi ne prenez-vous pas la peine de lire sa lettre? 19. Parce qu'elle n'en vaut pas la peine. 20. Votre courrier a-t-il pris les devants? 21. Il n'a pu prendre les devants. 22. N'avez-vous pas tort de prendre son parti? 23. Je n'ai pas tort de le prendre. 24. Avez vous pris le thé (*your tea*)? 25. Nous n'avons pas pris (*our*) le thé, nous avons pris le café?

EXERCISE 138.

1. Has your brother taken care not to spoil his hat? 2. He has taken care not to spoil it, he has only one. 3. Go and speak to your sister, she calls you (*appelle*). 4. Will you not take a cup (*tasse*) of tea? 5. I have just taken my tea. 6. What have you said to your little girl? 7. I have told her to take care not to tear her dress. 8. Let us take care not to tear that book. 9. My son has just brought it. 10. Has he taken his tea? 11. He has not yet taken tea, it is too early. 12. At what hour do you take tea at your house? 13. We take tea at six o'clock. 14. Do you take tea or coffee for breakfast (*à votre déjeuner*)? 15. We take coffee. 16. Is your courier gone on before? 17. He has not been able to go on before. 18. What resolution have you taken? 19. I have taken the resolution to study my lesson. 20. Have you taken care not to tear your books? 21. I have taken care not to stain them. 22. What has your brother determined? 23. He has determined to remain silent. 24. Have you taken my part? 25. I have taken my brother's part. 26. Are you right to take his part? 27. I am right to take his part, because he is right. 28. Are you not afraid to take his part? 29. I am not afraid to take his part. 30. Will you take your sister's part or mine? 31. I will take my sister's part. 32. Go and read your book, you do not know your lesson. 33. I know my lesson, and I know also that you are my friend. 34. Let us go to our father, he wants us.

SECTION LXXII.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. All the French verbs, regular and irregular, end in this tense with *e*, *es*, *e*, *ions*, *iez*, *ent* :—

2. CONJUGATION OF THE PRESENT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE OF THE REGULAR VERBS.

Que je chant	-e	fin	-isse	rec	-oive	rend	-e
<i>That I may sing</i>		<i>may</i>	<i>finish</i>	<i>may</i>	<i>receive</i>	<i>may</i>	<i>render</i>
Que tu parl	-es	chér	-isses	aperç	-oives	vend	es
<i>That thou mayest speak</i>		<i>mayest</i>	<i>cherish</i>	<i>mayest</i>	<i>perceive</i>	<i>mayest</i>	<i>sell</i>
Qu'il donn	-e	fourn	-isse	perç	-oive	tend	-e
<i>That he may give</i>		<i>may</i>	<i>furnish</i>	<i>may</i>	<i>collect</i>	<i>may</i>	<i>tend</i>
Que nous cherch	-ions	pun	-issions	conc	-evions	entend	-ions
<i>That we may seek</i>		<i>may</i>	<i>punish</i>	<i>may</i>	<i>conceive</i>	<i>may</i>	<i>hear</i>
Que vous port	-iez	sais	-issiez	d	-eviez	perd	-iez
<i>That you may carry</i>		<i>may</i>	<i>seize</i>	<i>may</i>	<i>owe</i>	<i>may</i>	<i>lose</i>
Qu'ils aim	-ent	un	-issent	déc	-oivent	mord	-ent
<i>That they may love</i>		<i>may</i>	<i>unite</i>	<i>may</i>	<i>deceive</i>	<i>may</i>	<i>bite</i>

3. In the first conjugation, the subjunctive is in the singular, similar to the present of the indicative. Exception : *aller* — *je vais, que j'aile*.

4. The first and second persons plural of the subjunctive, in the four conjugations, are the same as the corresponding persons of the imperfect of the indicative. The third person plural is like the corresponding person in the indicative present. Exceptions : *avoir*, subjunctive, *nous ayons, vous ayez, ils aient* ; *savoir*, *nous sachions, vous sachiez, ils sachent* ; *être*, *nous soyons, vous soyez, ils soient* ; *faire*, *nous fassions, vous fassiez, ils fassent* ; *aller*, *ils aillent* ; *vouloir*, *ils veuillent* ; *valoir*, *ils valaient*, etc.

5. The subjunctive is formed from the participle present, by changing *ant* into *e, es, e, ions, iez, ent* : *us, chantant, je chante* ; *finissant, je finisse* ; *rendant, je rende* ; *sachant, je sache* ; *craignant, je craigne*.

6. In the following verbs the *endings* of the Present Subjunctive are formed as stated in No. 5 above, but the root is altered. The student will find them conjugated in the Second Part of this Grammar, § 64 :—

Aacquérir	Concevoir	Mourir	Prendre	Savoir	Venir
Aller	Décevoir	Mouvoir	(and	Tenir (and	(and
Apercevoir	Devoir	Percevoir	its com-	its com-	its com-
Avoir	Être	Pouvoir	pounds)	pounds)	pounds)
Boire	Faire	Pouvoir	Recevoir	Valoir	Vouloir

7. The past of the subjunctive is formed from the subjunctive present of one of the auxiliaries, *avoir, être*, and the past participle of the leading verb [§ 46] :—

Que j'aie parlé, que je sois venu. *That I may have spoken, that I may have come.*

8. A verb is put in the subjunctive, when it is preceded by another verb expressing consent, command, doubt, desire, surprise, will, want, duty, necessity, regret, fear, apprehension, &c. [§ 123 (4)] :—

Je veux que vous lui parliez. *I wish you to speak to him.*

Je désire que vous arriviez à temps. *I wish you to arrive in time.*

9. When the first verb expresses fear or apprehension, the second must be preceded by **ne**, which, however, has no negative sense [§ 123 (5), § 134 (4) (5) (6)]:—

Je crains qu'il ne tombe.

I am afraid lest he fall.

10. After **craindre**, *to fear*; **appréhender**, *to apprehend*; **avoir peur**, *to be afraid*; **trembler**, *to tremble*, **pas** is used in connection with **ne**, when we wish for the accomplishment of the action or occurrence expressed by the second verb [§ 134 (7)]:—

Je tremble qu'il n'arrive pas à temps.

I tremble that he may not arrive in time.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Le médecin veut-il que je boive de l'eau ?

Does the physician wish me to drink water ?

Je consens que vous alliez le voir.

I consent that you go to see him.

Nous doutons que vous arriviez à temps.

We doubt your arriving in time.

Je crains que votre maître ne vous punisse.

I fear lest your master may punish you.

Je crains que votre maître ne vous punisse pas.

I fear that your master may not punish you.

Je m'étonne qu'il ne sache pas cela.

I am astonished that he does not know that.

J'exige que vous lui donniez cela.

I require you to give him that.

Voulez-vous qu'il aille à la chasse ?

Do you wish him to go hunting ?

Que voulez-vous que je dise ?

What do you wish me to (that I should) say ?

J'aime mieux que vous me payiez.

I would rather have you to pay me.

EXERCISE 139.

Artisan, *m. mechanic*. Empêch-er, 1. *to prevent*. Obé-ir, 2. *to obey*.

Atelier, *m. workshop*. Force, *f. strength*. Rempl-ir, 2. *to fulfil*.

Au-dessus, *above*. Fortement, *very much*. Rue, *f. street*.

Bracelet, *m. bracelet*. Magasin, *m. warehouse*. Scierie, *f. saw-mill*.

Déjà, *already*. Malsain, *e, unhealthy*. Tomb-er, 1. *to fall*.

1. Que voulez-vous que nous fassions ? 2. Je désire que vous fassiez attention à vos études. 3. Ne craignez-vous pas que la pluie ne vous empêche de sortir ? 4. Nous craignons fortement que la pluie ne nous empêche de remplir nos engagements. 5. Doutez-vous qu'il soit chez lui maintenant ? 6. Je doute qu'il y soit, il est déjà dix heures. 7. Exigez-vous qu'il parte de bonne heure ? 8. Je m'étonne qu'il ne soit pas déjà parti. 9. Aimez-vous mieux que je vous rende ces bracelets ? 10. J'aime mieux que vous me les payiez. 11. Votre voisin craint-il que son enfant ne sorte ? 12. Il craint qu'il ne tombe dans la rue. 13. Ne désirez-vous pas que vos élèves vous obéissent ? 14. Je souhaite qu'ils m'obéissent et qu'ils obéissent à leurs professeurs. 15. Ne craignez-vous pas que cet artisan ne tombe malade ? 16. Je crains qu'il ne tombe

malade, car son atelier est très malsain. 17. Ne regrettez-vous pas qu'il soit obligé de travailler? 18. Je regrette qu'il soit obligé de travailler au-dessus de ses forces. 19. Ne désirez-vous pas qu'on lui apprenne cette nouvelle? 20. Je désire qu'on la lui apprenne le plus tôt possible. 21. Votre père ne veut-il pas que vous achetiez un magasin? 22. Il veut que j'achète une scierie. 23. Désirez-vous que je vous quitte? 24. Je désire que vous restiez avec moi. 25. Je veux que vous partiez ce matin.

EXERCISE 140.

1. Do you wish me to speak to the mechanic? 2. I wish you to tell him to (*de*) come here to-morrow morning. 3. What do you wish me to do? 4. I wish you to bring me a book. 5. Do you not wish me to read your letter? 6. I wish you to read it and (*que*) give it to my sisters. 7. Does not your sister fear lest the rain may prevent her going out? 8. She fears that the rain may prevent our going out. 9. Do you doubt that your father be at home now? 10. I doubt his being there. 11. Do you require me to do my work now? 12. I wish you to do your work before going out (*avant de sortir*). 13. Do you not regret his being obliged to work? 14. I do not regret his being obliged to work. 15. Are you not astonished that he knows that? 16. I am astonished that he knows all. 17. Do you require me to pay him to-day? 18. I wish you to pay him to-morrow. 19. What would you have me do (*see No. 1 of the above exercise*)? 20. I will have you pay him immediately. 21. Do you fear lest the master punish your son? 22. I fear that he may not punish him. 23. What would you have me say? 24. I would have you say the truth. 25. Does not your father wish you to buy a house? 26. He wishes me to buy a storehouse. 27. Do you wish us to leave you? 28. I wish you to go away to-morrow. 29. Do you wish me to stay with you? 30. I wish you to stay here. 31. Do you wish me to tell him that news? 32. I wish you to tell it to him. 33. Do you wish your children to obey their teacher? 34. I wish them to obey him.

SECTION LXXIII.

USE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.—CONTINUED.

1. A verb preceded by one of the impersonal verbs, *il faut*, it is necessary; *il importe*, it matters, it is important; *il convient*, it is proper, becoming; *il vaut mieux*, it is better; *il plaît*, it pleases, suits; *il se peut*, *il peut se faire*, it may be; *il est juste*, it is just; *il est bon*, it is proper; *il est nécessaire*, it is necessary; *il est important*, it is important; *il est temps*, it is time; *il est indispensable*, it is indispensable; *il est à propos*, it is proper; *il est fâcheux*, it is sad, it is a pity; *il est urgent*, it is urgent, or by another verb or expression implying necessity, will, or propriety, must be put in the subjunctive [§ 123 (7)]:—

Il faut que vous restiez ici. *You must remain here.*
 Il est juste que vous soyez récompensé. *It is just you be rewarded.*

2. The impersonal verb *il est* requires the indicative mood, when it is used affirmatively with one of the adjectives, *sûr, sure ; certain, certain ; vrai, true ; démontré, proved ; incontestable, incontestable ; évident, evident*, and others having a positive and affirmative sense :—

Il est certain qu'il vient ou qu'il viendra. *It is certain that he comes or will come.*

3. When, however, the verb *il est*, used in the above connection, is negative or interrogative, it is followed by either the indicative or the subjunctive mood :—

Il n'est nullement certain qu'il vienne, or qu'il est venu, or qu'il viendra. *It is by no means certain that he will come, or has come.*

4. After certain conjunctions, *afin que, in order that ; quoi-que, although, &c.* [see full list, § 140 (1) (3)], the subjunctive is always used :—

Quoi que vous fassiez, quoi que vous disiez. *Whatever you may do, whatever you may say.*

5. Other important rules on the government of conjunctions will be found in § 73, 140.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Que faut-il que votre sœur fasse ?	<i>What must your sister do ?</i>
Faut-il que je lui écrive ?	<i>Must I write to him ?</i>
Il est nécessaire que vous lui écriviez.	<i>It is necessary for you to write to him.</i>
Il est temps que vous lui donniez son argent.	<i>It is time that you should give him his money.</i>
N'est-il pas fâcheux qu'il soit arrivé si tard ?	<i>Is it not a pity that he arrived so late ?</i>
Il est certain qu'il est arrivé.	<i>It is certain that he is arrived.</i>
Il n'est point certain qu'il se soit blessé, or qu'il s'est blessé.	<i>It is not certain that he has hurt himself.</i>
Restez ici jusqu'à ce qu'il arrive.	<i>Remain here until he comes.</i>
Pourvu que vous finissiez à temps.	<i>Provided that you finish in time.</i>

EXERCISE 141.

Affaire, f. <i>affair.</i>	Nécessaire, m. <i>necessaries.</i>	Régl-er, 1. <i>to regulate.</i>
Ainsi, <i>thus.</i>		Satisfai-re, 4. ir. <i>to satisfy.</i>
Créancier, m. <i>creditor.</i>	Ordre, m. <i>order.</i>	
Emprunt-er, 1. <i>to borrow.</i>	Oubli-er, 1. <i>to forget.</i>	Se couch-er, 1. ref. <i>to retire.</i>
Fourn-ir, 2. <i>to furnish.</i>	Point, m. <i>point, degree.</i>	
Linge, m. <i>linen.</i>	Pourvu que, <i>provided that.</i>	Se lev-er, 1. ref. <i>to rise.</i>
Manqu-er, 1. <i>to want.</i>		Tel, le, <i>such.</i>

1. Que faut-il que je dise ? 2. Il faut que vous disiez ce que vous avez entendu. 3. Ne faut-il pas que je finisse cette histoire ? 4. Il n'est pas nécessaire que vous la finissiez.

5. N'est-il pas à propos que je satisfasse mes créanciers? 6. Il est à propos que vous le fassiez. 7. N'est-il pas juste que je vous paie ce que je vous ai emprunté? 8. Il est juste que vous me le payiez. 9. Se peut-il que votre frère ait oublié sa famille? 10. Il ne se peut pas qu'il l'ait oublié. 11. Est-il certain que votre frère se soit oublié à un tel point? 12. Il est certain qu'il s'est oublié. 13. Il est bien fâcheux qu'il se soit oublié ainsi. 14. Resterez-vous jusqu'à ce que j'aie mis ordre à mes affaires? 15. Je resterai jusqu'à ce que vous les ayez réglées. 16. Ne faudra-t-il pas que je fournisse des provisions à cette famille? 17. Il faudra que vous lui en fournissiez, pourvu que vous en ayez. 18. Ne vaudra-t-il pas mieux que vous lui prêtiez de l'argent, que de la laisser manquer du nécessaire? 19. Il vaudra mieux que nous lui en prêtions. 20. Que faut-il que nous fassions? 21. Il faut que vous portiez ce linge chez moi. 22. N'est-il pas temps que je me couche? 23. Il est temps que vous vous couchiez. 24. Faut-il que je me lève? 25. Il faut que vous vous leviez.

EXERCISE 142.

1. What must our friend do? 2. He must remain at our house until I come. 3. What must our neighbour do? 4. He must put his affairs in order. 5. Is it not right that you should pay your creditors? 6. It is right that I should pay them. 7. Is it time for your little boy to go to school? 8. It is time for him to go to school, it is ten o'clock. 9. Must I write to your correspondent to-day or to-morrow? 10. You must write to him to-morrow morning. 11. Is it not a pity that your brother has torn his cap (*casquette*)? 12. It is a pity that he has torn it. 13. Is it necessary for your mother to finish her letter? 14. It is not necessary that she finish it. 15. Is it certain that your son has forgotten his money? 16. It is certain that he has forgotten it. 17. It is by no means certain that he has forgotten it. 18. Must you furnish money to that mechanic? 19. I must furnish him some, he has none. 20. Whatever you may do you will not succeed (*réussir*). 21. Whatever your brother may say, nobody will believe him (*croire, ir.*). 22. Must I write to you? 23. You must write to me. 24. Do you wish me to be ill? 25. I do not wish you to be ill. 26. Do you require me to tell you that? 27. It is necessary that you tell me all. 28. Do you wish me to go to your house? 29. I wish you to go there. 30. Must I get up? 31. You must rise immediately (*à l'instant*). 32. Must your brother retire? 33. He must go to bed immediately. 34. It is time for him to go to bed, it is twelve o'clock.

SECTION LXXIV.

USE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.—CONTINUED.

1. The verbs *croire*, to believe; *dire*, to say; *espérer*, to hope; *gager* and *parier*, to bet; *penser*, to think; *sentir*, to feel; *voir*,

to see; and others expressing affirmation or something certain and positive, are, when conjugated affirmatively, followed by the indicative present or future [§ 123]:—

Je pense, je crois, je dis qu'il *I think, I believe, I say that he*
viendra. *will come.*

2. The above verbs, when used in the same connection and conjugated negatively or interrogatively, are followed by * either the indicative or the subjunctive [§ 123 (2)]:—

Je ne crois pas qu'il vienne, or *I do not believe he will come.*
qu'il viendra.

3. A verb, preceded by another verb and by a relative pronoun, is put in the subjunctive when there is an idea of uncertainty, and in the indicative when there is certainty [§ 123 (2)]:—

J'ai un homme qui me rendra service. *I have a man who will oblige me.*

J'ai besoin d'un homme qui me rende service. *I want a man who will (may) oblige me.*

4. A verb, preceded by a superlative, relative, or by the words, **le seul, le premier, le dernier**, is put in the subjunctive [§ 123 (6)]:

Voilà le seul chapeau que j'aie. *That is the only hat I have.*

Voilà le meilleur homme que je connaisse. *There is the best man I know.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Je crois que le concert a eu lieu. *I believe that the concert took place.*

Je ne pense pas que notre ami vienne. *I do not think that our friend will come.*

J'espère que vous apprendrez cela par cœur. *I hope that you will learn that by heart.*

Je ne pense pas qu'il puisse apprendre tout cela par cœur. *I do not think that he can learn all that by heart.*

Je crois que ce marchand s'enrichit aux dépens d'autrui. *I believe that this merchant grows rich at the expense of others.*

Je ne crois pas qu'il s'enrichisse à vos dépens. *I do not believe that he enriches himself at your expense.*

Je ne crois pas que vous réussissiez à gagner votre vie. *I do not believe that you will succeed in earning your living.*

J'ai une carafe qui contient un litre. *I have a decanter which holds a litre.*

Je cherche une carafe qui contienne un litre. *I seek a decanter which holds a litre.*

Je vous prête le meilleur chapeau que j'aie, à condition que vous me le rendiez demain. *I lend you the best hat I have, on condition that you will return it to me to-morrow.*

* The student should bear in mind that the subjunctive is essentially the mood of doubt. Its use is not absolutely a matter of grammar, and in the case mentioned in No. 2 above, it would be employed if the speaker had a doubt to express, while he would use the indicative mood if he had not.

EXERCISE 143.

Compt-er, 1. <i>to depend</i> .	Négociant, m. <i>mer-</i>	S'asse-oir, 3. ir. ref.
Cristal, m. <i>crystal</i> .	<i>chant</i> .	<i>to sit down</i> .
Debout, <i>standing</i> .	Parasol, m. <i>parasol</i> .	Sorte, f. <i>kind</i> .
Dur-er, 1. <i>to wear, last</i> .	Portier, m. <i>porter</i> .	Suffi-re, 4. ir. <i>to suffice</i> .
Fort, <i>strong</i> .	Rentr-er, 1. <i>to come</i>	Tanneur, m. <i>tanner</i> .
Litre, m. <i>litre, about</i>	<i>in again</i> .	Tard-er, 1. <i>to tarry</i> .
<i>a quart</i> .		

1. Pensez-vous que ce drap dure longtemps? 2. Je crois qu'il durera bien, car il est fort. 3. Croyez-vous que notre portier tarde à rentrer? 4. Je crois qu'il ne tardera pas. 5. Désirez-vous que nous restions debout? 6. Je désire au contraire que vous vous asseyiez. 7. Croyez-vous que ces étudiants puissent apprendre cinq pages par cœur en deux heures? 8. Je crois que c'est impossible. 9. Espérez-vous que notre ami arrive de bonne heure? 10. J'espère qu'il arrivera bientôt. 11. Quelle sorte de carafe vous faut-il? 12. Il m'en faut une qui contienne un litre. 13. J'en ai une de cristal, qui contient deux litres. 14. Pensez-vous que ce négociant s'enrichisse à vos dépens? 15. Je sais qu'il s'enrichit aux dépens d'autrui. 16. Quel parasol pensez-vous me prêter? 17. Je pense vous prêter le meilleur que j'aie. 18. Le tanneur réussira-t-il à gagner sa vie? 19. Je ne crois pas qu'il y réussisse. 20. Pensez-vous que cet argent suffise à votre père? 21. Je crois qu'il lui suffira. 22. Croyez-vous que ces messieurs comptent sur moi? 23. Je sais qu'ils comptent sur vous. 24. Pensez-vous que le concert ait lieu aujourd'hui? 25. Je crois qu'il n'aura pas lieu.

EXERCISE 144.

1. Do you believe that the concert has taken place? 2. I believe that it has taken place. 3. Do you believe that your sister's dress will wear well? 4. I think that it will wear well, for the silk is very good. 5. Do you believe that our friend will succeed in earning a livelihood? 6. I believe he will succeed in it (*y*), for he is very diligent. 7. Do you think that the tanner grows rich at my expense? 8. I think that he enriches himself at the expense of others. 9. Does the merchant grow rich at my father's expense? 10. He grows rich at your expense. 11. What kind of a house must you have (*vous faut-il*)? 12. I must have a house which has ten rooms. 13. I have a good house which has twelve rooms. 14. What kind of a decanter do you seek? 15. I seek one which holds three litres. 16. I have one which holds two litres, I will lend it to you. 17. What coat will you send me? 18. I will send you the best I have, take care not to stain it. 19. Do you think that the student will learn all that by heart? 20. I do not think that he will learn it. 21. Do you believe (that) he will come? 22. I believe that he will come soon. 23. Do you think that your father depends upon me? 24. I know that he depends upon you. 25. Does not that gentleman depend upon me? 26. I think that he depends upon your

brother. 27. Will the porter soon come in again? 28. I hope that he will not tarry long. 29. Will you not lend me your umbrella? 30. I will lend it to you with pleasure. 31. Does my brother remain standing? 32. He does not wish to sit down. 33. Do you wish me to sit down? 34. I wish you to remain standing. 35. I wish that he may come.

SECTION LXXV.

THE IMPERFECT AND PLUPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. The terminations of the imperfect of the subjunctive are in all the verbs, regular and irregular, of the four conjugations, **sse, sses, t**, preceded by a vowel with a circumflex accent, **ssions, ssiez, ssent**.

2. CONJUGATION OF THE IMPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE OF THE REGULAR VERBS.

Que je chantas- se	finis - se	reçus - se	rendis - se
<i>That I might sing</i>	<i>might finish</i>	<i>might receive</i>	<i>might render</i>
Que tu parlas - ses	chériss - ses	aperçus - ses	vendis - ses
<i>That thou mightest speak</i>	<i>mightest cherish</i>	<i>mightest perceive</i>	<i>mightest sell</i>
Qu'il donnât - t	fournît - t	perçût - t	tendît - t
<i>That he might give</i>	<i>might furnish</i>	<i>might gather</i>	<i>might tend</i>
Que nous cherchassions - sions	puniss - sions	conçuss - sions	entendiss - sions
<i>That we might seek</i>	<i>might punish</i>	<i>might conceive</i>	<i>might hear</i>
Que vous portassiez - siez	saisiss - siez	duss - siez	perdiss - siez
<i>That you might carry</i>	<i>might seize</i>	<i>might owe</i>	<i>might lose</i>
Qu'ils aimassent - sent	uniss - sent	déçuss - sent	mordiss - sent
<i>That they might love</i>	<i>might unite</i>	<i>might deceive</i>	<i>might bite</i>

3. This tense is formed by adding to the second person singular of the Preterite Indicative the following terminations, viz., **se** for the first person singular, **ses** for the second; **sions** for the first plural, **siez** for the second, **sent** for the third.

4. The third person singular is formed by putting a circumflex accent on the last vowel of the same second person singular of the preterite indicative, and changing its final **s** into **t**. This rule has no exceptions.

Tu allas, j'allasse; tu finis, je finiss. *Thou wentest, I might go; thou finishedst, I might finish.*

5. All the observations made in Sect. 52, on the changes of the stem of the irregular verbs, in the past definite, apply equally to the imperfect of the subjunctive.

6. The pluperfect of the subjunctive is formed from the imperfect of the same mood of one of the auxiliaries **avoir, être**, and the past participle of the leading verb:—

Que j'eusse fini; que je fusse venu. *That I might have finished; that I might have come.*

7. All the rules given on the use of the subjunctive in the three preceding sections, apply, of course, to the imperfect and pluperfect of this mood.

8. In the same manner as the present or future of the indicative of the first part of a sentence governs, under the above mentioned rules, the verb of the second part, in the present or past of the subjunctive; so the imperfect and other past tenses of the indicative, and the two conditionals, govern the verb in the second part of the sentence, in the imperfect or pluperfect of the subjunctive:—

Ne fallait-il pas que je lui parlasse? *Was it not necessary that I should speak to him?*
 Il faudrait que je lui donnasse ce livre. *It would be necessary for me to give him that book.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Voudriez-vous que je donnasse un coup de bâton à cet enfant?	<i>Would you wish me to give that child a blow with a stick?</i>
Je voudrais que vous tirassiez un coup de fusil sur cet oiseau.	<i>I would wish you to fire your gun at that bird.</i>
Exigeriez-vous que nous revinsions de bonne heure?	<i>Would you require us to return early?</i>
Que voudriez-vous que ces hommes fissent?	<i>What would you wish those men to do?</i>
Que vouliez-vous que je fisse?	<i>What did you wish me to do?</i>
Il faudrait que j'eusse mon argent.	<i>It would be necessary for me to have my money.</i>
Je ne voulais pas que vous mourussiez de froid.	<i>I did not wish you to die with the cold.</i>
Elle craignait que vous ne mourussiez de misère et de faim.	<i>She feared lest you might die with want and hunger.</i>
Voudriez-vous que je jetasse un coup d'œil sur ces papiers?	<i>Would you wish me to cast a glance upon these papers?</i>

EXERCISE 145.

Bécasse, f. <i>woodcock.</i>	Ivrogne, m. <i>drunkard.</i>	Retablisement, m. <i>recovery.</i>
Bord, m. <i>shore.</i>	Lièvre, m. <i>hare.</i>	
Charg-er, 1. <i>to load.</i>	Mer, f. <i>sea.</i>	Santé, f. <i>health.</i>
Coup, m. <i>blow.</i>	Perdrix, f. <i>partridge.</i>	Se rend-re, 4. ref. <i>to repair.</i>
Coup de fusil, m. <i>shot.</i>	Poste, m. <i>post.</i>	
Coup d'œil, m. <i>glance.</i>	Ressembl-er, 1. <i>to resemble.</i>	Tir-er, 1. <i>to fire, shoot.</i>
Demi-usé, half-worn.		
Fouet, m. <i>whip.</i>		

1. Voudriez-vous que j'achetasse un habit à demi-usé? 2. Je voudrais que vous en achetassiez un neuf. 3. Voulait-on que ce soldat malade se rendit à son poste? 4. On voulait qu'il se rendit à son régiment. 5. Faudrait-il que je demeurasse au bord de la mer? 6. Il faudrait pour le rétablissement de votre santé, que vous vous rendissiez en Suisse. 7. Ne pensez-vous pas que cet enfant ressemble à sa mère? 8. Je ne pense pas qu'il lui ressemble. 9. À qui ressemble-t-il? 10. Il ressemble à sa sœur aînée. 11. Consentiriez-vous que votre fille épousât cet ivrogne? 12. Voudriez-vous que nous mourussions de misère? 13. Je craignais que ces dames ne

mourussent [§ 123 (5), Sect. 72, 9] de froid. 14. Ne voulez-vous pas tirer sur ce lièvre? 15. Je tirerais sur cette bécasse si mon fusil était chargé. 16. Combien de coups de fusil voudriez-vous que je tirasse? 17. Si vous aviez de la poudre, je voudrais que vous tirassiez sur cette perdrix. 18. Voudriez-vous que je jette un coup d'œil sur cette lettre? 19. Je voudrais que vous la lussiez. 20. Que voudriez-vous que je fisse? 21. Je voudrais que vous fissiez attention à vos études. 22. Faudrait-il que je sortisse? 23. Il faudrait que vous restassiez à la maison. 24. Que voudriez-vous que je fisse à ce cheval? 25. Je voudrais que vous lui donnassiez des coups de fouet.

EXERCISE 146.

1. What would you have me do? 2. I would have you cast a glance upon this letter. 3. Would you wish me to give that dog blows with a stick? 4. I would wish you to give that horse blows with a whip. 5. Would you require us to return at five o'clock? 6. I would require you to return early. 7. Do you think that your brother resembles your father? 8. I do not think he resembles my father. 9. Whom do you think that he resembles? 10. I think he resembles my mother. 11. How many shots have you fired? 12. I have fired five shots at that woodcock. 13. Would you not have me fire at that partridge? 14. I would have you fire at that partridge, if your gun were loaded. 15. Where would it be necessary for me to dwell? 16. It would be necessary for you to dwell on the sea-shore. 17. Would you have me die with hunger? 18. I would not have you die of hunger. 19. Would you have your brother die with cold? 20. I would not have him die with cold or want. 21. What would you have your son do? 22. I would have him learn his lessons. 23. Would you have him learn German? 24. I would have him learn German and Spanish. 25. Have you fired at (*sur*) that hare? 26. I have not fired at that hare. 27. Would it be necessary for me to go out? 28. It would be necessary for you to go out. 29. Would it be necessary for me to remain here? 30. It would be necessary for you to go to church. 31. What did you wish? 32. I wished you to write to me. 33. Did you wish me to buy a coat half worn out? 34. I wished you to buy a good hat.

SECTION LXXVI.

GOVERNMENT OF VERBS (§ 125).

1. Many verbs come together in French without prepositions, which are in English joined by them. Many others are connected in French by prepositions different from those connecting the corresponding verbs in English. No satisfactory general rules can be given on this point. We shall give in the Second Part of these Lessons [§ 126, 127, 128] copious lists of the verbs in general use, with the prepositions which follow them, when they come before other verbs. We have

also hitherto noted the prepositions usually placed after the verbs introduced in our lessons.

2. The student will recollect, that a verb following another verb or a preposition (except **en**) must be in the infinitive when the two verbs have the same subject, or when the object of the first is the subject of the second.*

3. The following verbs, extracted from the list, § 126, although they, in English, take a preposition before another verb, do not take one in French :—

Aller, 1. <i>ir. to go.</i>	Falloir, 3. <i>ir. to be necessary.</i>	Savoir, 3. <i>ir. to know.</i>
Compter, 1. <i>to intend.</i>		†Souhaiter, 1. <i>to wish.</i>
Courir, 2. <i>ir. to run.</i>	Mener, 1. <i>to lead, take.</i>	Valoir mieux, 3. <i>ir. to be better.</i>
Daigner, 1. <i>to dign.</i>	Penser, 1. <i>to think.</i>	
Désirer, 1. <i>to desire.</i>	Pouvoir, 3. <i>ir. to be able.</i>	Venir, 2. <i>ir. to come.</i>
Devoir, 3. <i>to owe.</i>	Préférer, 1. <i>to prefer.</i>	Vouloir, 3. <i>ir. to wish, will.</i>
Envoyer, 1. <i>ir. to send.</i>	Prétendre, 4. <i>to pretend.</i>	
Espérer, 1. <i>to hope.</i>		

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Comptez-vous dîner avec nous ?	<i>Do you intend to dine with us ?</i>
Je vais dîner chez mon père.	<i>I am going to dine at my father's.</i>
N'avez-vous pas donné à manger à ce chien ?	<i>Will you not feed that dog ?</i>
Désirez-vous monter dans ma chambre ?	<i>Do you wish to go up to my room ?</i>
Je préfère descendre chez votre père.	<i>I prefer to go down to your father's.</i>
Demeure-t-il en haut ou en bas ?	<i>Does he live above or below ?</i>
Préférez-vous demeurer au rez-de-chaussée ?	<i>Do you prefer to live on the ground floor ?</i>
Je désire demeurer au premier étage.	<i>I wish to live on the first story.</i>
Nous préférons louer le second étage.	<i>We prefer to take the second story.</i>
Nous espérons louer une chambre au second.	<i>We hope to rent a room on the second story.</i>

EXERCISE 147.

Cabinet, m. <i>closet.</i>	En haut, <i>up stairs, above.</i>	Salle, f. <i>parlour.</i>
Compt-er, 1. <i>to intend, to reckon.</i>	Faisan, m. <i>pheasant.</i>	Touch-er, 1. <i>to touch, play.</i>
Déjeûn-er, 1. <i>to break fast.</i>	Jou-er, 1. <i>to play.</i>	Troisième, <i>third story.</i>
Demain, <i>to-morrow.</i>	Lou-er, 1. <i>to rent, let.</i>	
En bas, <i>down stairs, below.</i>	Pinc-er, 1. <i>to play.</i>	Violon, m. <i>violin.</i>
	Plaisir, m. <i>favour, pleasure.</i>	

1. Combien de chambres comptez-vous louer ? 2. Nous comptons louer une salle au rez-de-chaussée et deux cabinets au troisième. 3. Ne préférez-vous pas louer une chambre à coucher au second ? 4. Nous préférons demeurer au rez-de-

* This rule does not apply to impersonal verbs which may be followed by an infinitive, although their subject is not that of the infinitive. **Je leur dis : il faut partir.** *I told them : we must start.*

† May also take the preposition **de** before an infinitive.

chaussée. 5. Ne pouvez-vous rester à dîner avec nous aujourd'hui? 6. Je vous remercie, je préfère venir demain. 7. M. votre père viendra-t-il demain déjeuner avec nous? 8. Il compte venir demain, de bonne heure. 9. Que voulez-vous leur dire? 10. Je veux les prier de me faire ce plaisir. 11. Comptez-vous faire ce plaisir à mon frère? 12. J'espère le lui faire. 13. Préférez-vous demeurer en haut ou en bas? 14. Nous préférons demeurer en bas. 15. Que pensez-vous faire de ce jeune faisan? 16. Nous pensons l'envoyer à M. votre beau-frère. 17. Ne savez-vous pas jouer du violon? 18. Je sais en jouer. 19. M^{lle}. votre cousine sait-elle toucher du piano? 20. Elle sait toucher du piano et pincer de la harpe. 21. Ne savez-vous pas écrire? 22. Nous savons lire, écrire, et compter. 23. Savez-vous jouer de la guitare? 24. Nous ne savons pas en jouer. 25. Nous souhaitons trouver un appartement au rez-de-chaussée.

EXERCISE 148.

1. Does your brother-in-law intend to rent the ground floor? 2. He intends to rent two rooms on the second story. 3. How many rooms does your son intend to take? 4. He intends to take two rooms on the second story. 5. Does he prefer to live on the second floor? 6. He prefers to live on the ground floor. 7. Does your father wish to come to dinner with us to-morrow? 8. He intends to come to-morrow at two o'clock. 9. Do you prefer to live up stairs or down stairs? 10. I prefer to live up stairs. 11. Does your sister know how to play on the piano? 12. She knows how to play on the piano. 13. Where do you intend to live (*demeurer*)? 14. We intend to live at your father's. 15. Will you go up to my room? 16. I will go down to your father's. 17. Do you wish to live on the ground floor? 18. I wish to live on the second floor. 19. Is it necessary to stay here? 20. It is not necessary to stay here. 21. What do you think of doing with (*de*) your book? 22. I think of giving it to my son. 23. What do you wish me to say to that gentleman? 24. I wish you to beg him to do me a favour. 25. Do you wish to send that pheasant to your mother? 26. I wish to send it to her, she is ill. 27. Cannot your sister play on the violin? 28. She cannot play on the violin, but she can play on the guitar. 29. Does your sister wish to live up stairs? 30. She prefers living down stairs. 31. Will you not do me that favour? 32. I will do it with pleasure. 33. Cannot your brother stay and dine with us to-day? 34. He has promised my father to come and dine with him. 35. Our friend knows how to read, write, and reckon.

SECTION LXXVII.

GOVERNMENT OF VERBS.—CONTINUED.

1. Many verbs in French are joined with other verbs following, by means of the preposition *de*, *of*, where the correspond-

ing verbs in English either take no preposition, or one other than *of*. Besides **avoir besoin**, &c. [Sect. 20. R. 4], the following verbs, extracted from list, § 128, belong to this class :—

Achever, <i>to finish.</i>	Dire, <i>to say.</i>	Prier, <i>to beg.</i>
Avoir tort, <i>to be wrong.</i>	Dispenser, <i>to dispense.</i>	Promettre, <i>to promise.</i>
Brûler, <i>to burn, to long.</i>	Empêcher, <i>to prevent.</i>	Proposer, <i>to propose.</i>
Cesser, <i>to cease.</i>	Éviter, <i>to avoid.</i>	Refuser, <i>to refuse.</i>
Commander, <i>to command.</i>	Jurer, <i>to swear.</i>	Se flatter, <i>to flatter one's self.</i>
Conseiller, <i>to advise.</i>	Manquer, <i>to fail.</i>	Supplier, <i>to entreat.</i>
Défendre, <i>to forbid.</i>	Menacer, <i>to threaten.</i>	Négliger, <i>to neglect.</i>
		Trembler, <i>to tremble.</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Pourquoi n'achevez-vous pas d'apprendre ce métier?	<i>Why do you not finish learning that trade?</i>
Nous brûlons de continuer nos études.	<i>We burn to continue our studies.</i>
Il ne cesse de nous tourmenter.	<i>He does not cease tormenting us.</i>
Me défendez-vous de faire du bien à cet homme?	<i>Do you forbid my doing good to that man?</i>
Ne négligez pas de lui faire une visite.	<i>Do not neglect paying him a visit.</i>
Me promettez-vous de faire une visite à mon ami?	<i>Do you promise me to pay a visit to my friend?</i>
Je vous prie d'aller tout droit chez vous.	<i>I beg you will go straight home.</i>
Je vous conseille de venir par le chemin de fer.	<i>I advise you to come by the railroad.</i>
Ne manquez pas de lui faire mes complimens.	<i>Do not fail to present my compliments to him.</i>
L'avez-vous menacé de le frapper?	<i>Have you threatened to strike him?</i>
J'ai refusé de lui faire crédit.	<i>I refused to give him credit.</i>
Me proposez-vous de lui confier cet argent?	<i>Do you propose to me to trust him with this money?</i>
Je vous conseille de le lui confier.	<i>I advise you to trust him with it.</i>
J'évite de lui reprocher ses fautes.	<i>I avoid to reproach him with his faults.</i>

EXERCISE 149.

Arros-er, 1. <i>to water.</i>	Gard-er, 1. <i>to keep.</i>	Se rend-re, 1. <i>ref. to repair.</i>
Arrosoir, m. <i>watering-pot.</i>	Jardinier, m. <i>gardener.</i>	
Au contraire, <i>on the contrary.</i>	Lendemain, m. <i>next day.</i>	Tout droit, <i>straight.</i>
	Oubli-er, 1. <i>to forget.</i>	Veille, f. <i>eve, day before.</i>
Corrig-er, 1. <i>to correct.</i>	Rend-re, 4. <i>to do, to render.</i>	Voie, f. <i>conveyance, way, or mode of travelling.</i>
Faire part, <i>to communicate</i>		

1. Pourquoi ne cessez-vous pas de lire? 2. J'aurais tort de cesser de lire avant de savoir ma leçon. 3. Avez-vous défendu à votre jardinier d'arroser ces fleurs? 4. Au contraire, je lui avais commandé de les arroser. 5. Pourquoi a-t-il négligé de le faire? 6. Parce qu'il a oublié d'apporter l'arrosoir. 7. Que désire faire M. P.? 8. Il brûle de continuer l'étude de la

médecine. 9. N'avez-vous pas tort de faire des visites à ce monsieur? 10. J'aurais tort de le négliger. 11. N'avez-vous pas refusé de rendre ce service à votre ennemi? 12. J'aurais eu tort de refuser de le lui rendre. 13. Quelle voie nous avez-vous conseillé de prendre? 14. Je vous ai conseillé de prendre la voie du bateau à vapeur. 15. Avez-vous menacé de frapper cet enfant? 16. Je l'ai menacé de le corriger. 17. Avez-vous refusé de vendre des marchandises à mon frère? 18. J'ai refusé de lui en vendre à crédit. 19. Avez-vous dit à mon fils de se rendre à la maison? 20. Je l'ai prié d'y aller tout droit. 21. Vous proposez-vous de venir la veille de Noël? 22. Nous nous proposons de venir le lendemain. 23. Votre compagnon se propose-t-il de garder le secret? 24. Il se propose de faire part de cela à tout le monde.

EXERCISE 150.

1. Have you forbidden my cousin to speak to the gardener? 2. I have not forbidden him to speak to him. 3. Has your mother ordered the gardener to water her roses (*roses*)? 4. She has ordered him to water them. 5. Has he forgotten to do it? 6. He has neglected to do it, he has not forgotten it. 7. What conveyance will you take to go to Paris? 8. I advise you to take the railroad. 9. Have you told (*à*) your son to take the steamboat? 10. No, Sir, I have told him to take the stage (*diligence*, *f.*). 11. Is not your brother wrong to neglect paying a visit to his brother-in-law? 12. He is wrong to neglect it. 13. Does not that young German long to read that letter? 14. He longs to continue his studies. 15. Do you propose to trust him with that money? 16. I propose to trust him with it. 17. Do you neglect to reproach him with his faults? 18. I avoid to reproach him with them. 19. Have you threatened to punish your son? 20. I have threatened to strike him. 21. Do not fail to present my compliments to my sister's friends. 22. I will not fail (*je n'y manquerai pas*). 23. Have you refused to sell him goods? 24. I have refused to sell him goods on credit. 25. Which mode of travelling do you advise me to take? 26. I advise you to take the railroad. 27. Do you forbid him to come? 28. I have forbidden his writing. 29. Have you failed to pay your gardener? 30. I have not failed to pay him. 31. I have forgotten to pay you. 32. Do not neglect to write to me. 33. Tell him to go to my father. 34. Do not cease to work. 35. Tell him to come on Christmas Eve. 36. I have told him to come the day after.

SECTION LXXVIII.

GOVERNMENT OF VERBS.—CONTINUED.

1. Many French verbs govern their object by means of prepositions, while the corresponding English verbs require no preposition before their object. Other French verbs govern their object through prepositions different from those used in

English. We give here a few verbs coming under those two classes, commencing with the first:—

2. Verbs which have a preposition before a noun in French, but have none in English:—

Abuser de, <i>to abuse.</i>	Manquer à, <i>to offend.</i>	S'approcher de, <i>to approach.</i>
Convenir à, <i>to suit.</i>	to fail.	
Déplaire à, <i>to displease.</i>	Médire de, <i>to slander.</i>	Se méfier de, <i>to mistrust.</i>
Obéir à, <i>to obey.</i>		
Désobéir à, <i>to disobey.</i>	Pardonner à, <i>to forgive.</i>	Se servir de, <i>to use.</i>
Douter de, <i>to doubt.</i>	Plaire à, <i>to please.</i>	Se souvenir de, <i>to remember.</i>
Échapper à, <i>to escape.</i>	Ressembler à, <i>to resemble.</i>	
Jourir de, <i>to enjoy.</i>		Survivre à, <i>to survive.</i>

3. Verbs governing their object through different prepositions in the two languages:—

Féliciter de, <i>to congratulate for.</i>	Remercier de, <i>to thank for.</i>	Se passer de, <i>to do without.</i>
Gémir de, <i>to grieve for.</i>	Rire de, <i>to laugh at.</i>	S'informer de, <i>to inquire about.</i>
Louer de, <i>to praise for.</i>	Rougir de, <i>to blush at.</i>	
Penser* à, <i>to think of.</i>	S'affliger de, <i>to grieve for.</i>	Songer à, <i>to think of.</i>
Profiter de, <i>to profit by.</i>		

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

N'avez-vous pas abusé de notre patience?	<i>Have you not abused our patience?</i>
Nous en avons abusé.	<i>We have abused it.</i>
Vous avez désobéi à vos parents.	<i>You have disobeyed your parents.</i>
Vous pardonnerez à vos ennemis.	<i>You will forgive your enemies.</i>
Vous penserez constamment à vos devoirs.	<i>You will think constantly of your duties.</i>
Vous y penserez constamment.	<i>You will think of them constantly.</i>
Ne riez-vous pas de nos erreurs?	<i>Do you not laugh at our mistakes?</i>
Nous n'en rions point.	<i>We do not laugh at them.</i>
Ne ressemble-t-il pas à son père?	<i>Does he not resemble his father?</i>

EXERCISE 151.

Arrangement, m. <i>arrangement.</i>	Conduite, f. <i>conduct.</i>	Peintre, m. <i>painter.</i>
Circonstance, f. <i>circumstance.</i>	Devoir, m. <i>duty.</i>	Prochain, m. <i>neighbour.</i>
Cœur, m. <i>heart.</i>	Faute, f. <i>fault.</i>	
Complaisance, f. <i>kindness.</i>	Malheur, m. <i>misfortune.</i>	Sellier, m. <i>saddler.</i>
	Ne—plus, <i>no more.</i>	S'informer, 1. ref. <i>to inquire.</i>
	Nouvelle, f. <i>news.</i>	Succès, m. <i>success.</i>

1. Cet arrangement vous convient-il? 2. Il ne me convient pas, mais il convient à notre parent. 3. Cela ne déplaît-il pas au peintre? 4. Votre conduite lui déplaît beaucoup. 5. Ne craignez-vous pas d'abuser de la patience de votre ami? 6. Je crains d'en abuser. 7. Ne pensez-vous jamais à vos devoirs? 8. J'y pense tous les jours. 9. Avez-vous pensé à votre frère aujourd'hui? 10. J'ai pensé à lui, et je me suis souvenu de ses bontés. 11. A-t-il eu soin de son père, et lui a-t-il obéi?

* Penser, meaning to have an opinion, requires the preposition *de*:—
Que pensez-vous de lui? *What is your opinion about him?*

12. Il lui obéit constamment. 13. Ne lui a-t-il jamais désobéi? 14. Il lui a désobéi plusieurs fois, mais il gémit de sa faute. 15. Ne les remerciez-vous pas de leur complaisance? 16. Je les en remercie de tout mon cœur. 17. Le sellier vous a-t-il félicité de votre succès? 18. Il m'en a félicité. 19. N'avez-vous pas ri de notre malheur? 20. Nous n'en avons pas ri, nous ne rions jamais des malheurs d'autrui. 21. Ne vous souvenez-vous pas des nouvelles que je vous ai apprises? 22. Je ne m'en souviens plus. 23. Votre père ne vous a-t-il pas défendu de médire de votre prochain? 24. Il me l'a défendu. 25. Nous nous sommes informés de toutes les circonstances de cette affaire.

EXERCISE 152.

1. Have you not abused your friend's kindness? 2. I have not abused his kindness, I have abused his patience. 3. Does not your conduct displease your parents? 4. My conduct does not please them. 5. Why have you not obeyed your father? 6. I have obeyed him (*lui*). 7. Have you not laughed at my mistakes? 8. I have not laughed at your mistakes. 9. Has the young man laughed at the painter's mistakes? 10. He has not laughed at his mistakes. 11. Has your saddler laughed at your cousin's misfortunes? 12. He has not laughed at his misfortunes. 13. Do you ever laugh at the misfortunes of others? 14. We never laugh at our neighbour's misfortunes. 15. Do you remember the lesson which you learnt yesterday? 16. I do not remember it (*en*). 17. Does that young lady resemble her mother? 18. She does not resemble her mother. 19. Have you thanked your friend for his kindness? 20. I have thanked him for it. 21. Has your mother forbidden you to read that book? 22. She has forbidden it (*me l'a*). 23. Why do you not forgive your enemies? 24. I forgive them with all my heart. 25. Do you not think of your duties? 26. I think of them (*y*) every day. 27. Have you congratulated your friend? 28. I have congratulated him on his success. 29. Have you not slandered those gentlemen? 30. I never slander my neighbour. 31. Does that house suit you? 32. It suits me, but it does not suit my father. 33. Does that house suit the painter? 34. It suits him very well, but it is too small for me.

SECTION LXXIX.

COMPLEMENT OF ADJECTIVES (§ 85).

1. The complement of an adjective is generally a noun or a verb completing its signification. This complement is usually connected with the adjective by means of a preposition.

2. That preposition is often different in French from that connecting the corresponding English adjective with its complement.

3. When an adjective follows the verb *être* used impersonally, the preposition *de* connects that adjective with its complement :—

Il est nécessaire de travailler pour vivre. *It is necessary to labour in order to live.*

4. The following adjectives are connected with their complement by prepositions different in French and English :—

Amoureux de, <i>in love with.</i>	Exact à, <i>exact in.</i>	Mécontent de, <i>displeased with.</i>
Bon à, <i>good for.</i>	Fâché de, <i>sorry for.</i>	Poli envers, <i>polite to.</i>
Bon pour, <i>kind towards.</i>	Inquiet de, <i>uneasy about.</i>	Propre à, <i>fit for.</i>
Chéri de, <i>beloved by.</i>	Insolent avec, <i>insolent towards.</i>	Rebelle à, <i>rebellious towards.</i>
Content de, <i>pleased with.</i>	Ivre de, <i>intoxicated with.</i>	Reconnaissant de, <i>grateful for.</i>
Cruel à, <i>cruel towards.</i>	Désolé de, <i>grieved for.</i>	Rempli de, <i>filled with.</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

N'êtes-vous pas content de vos progrès?	<i>Are you not pleased with your progress?</i>
J'en suis fort content.	<i>I am very much pleased with it.</i>
Votre domestique est-il exact à remplir ses devoirs?	<i>Is your servant exact in fulfilling his duties?</i>
Avez-vous rempli de vin cette bouteille?	<i>Have you filled that bottle with wine?</i>
Avez-vous rempli d'argent votre bourse?	<i>Have you filled your purse with money?</i>
Je l'en ai remplie.	<i>I have filled it with it.</i>
Il est très facile de blâmer les actions d'autrui.	<i>It is very easy to blame the actions of others.</i>
Il est glorieux de mourir pour sa patrie.	<i>It is glorious to die for one's country.</i>
Il est plus agréable de voyager en été qu'en hiver.	<i>It is more agreeable to travel in summer than in winter.</i>

EXERCISE 153.

Abattre, 4. <i>ir. to cut down.</i>	Chagriné, e, <i>grieved.</i>	Pommier, m. <i>apple-tree.</i>
Achat, m. <i>purchase.</i>	Encre, f. <i>ink.</i>	Prunier, m. <i>plum-tree.</i>
Arracher, l. <i>to pull up.</i>	Fend-re, 4. <i>to cleave, split.</i>	Roi, m. <i>king.</i>
Aubergiste, m. <i>inn-keeper.</i>	Gloire, f. <i>glory.</i>	Sci-er, l. <i>to saw.</i>
Bois à brûler, m. <i>fire-wood.</i>	Liberté, f. <i>liberty.</i>	Tonneau, cask.
	Nettoy-er, l. <i>to clean.</i>	
	Peuple, m. <i>people.</i>	

1. Ce héros n'était-il pas amoureux de la liberté et de la gloire? 2. Il en était amoureux. 3. Ce roi n'était-il pas chéri de son peuple? 4. Il en était chéri. 5. Ces négociants ne sont-ils pas contents de leur achat? 6. Ils n'en sont pas contents. 7. N'êtes-vous pas chagriné de ne pouvoir nous accompagner? 8. J'en suis désolé. 9. Savez-vous de quoi l'aubergiste a rempli ce tonneau? 10. Il l'a rempli de vin. 11. De quoi ferez-vous remplir cette bouteille, quand vous l'aurez fait nettoyer? 12. Elle est déjà remplie d'encre. 13. N'êtes-vous pas bien fâché d'avoir fait abattre vos pommiers? 14. J'en suis bien content, car ils n'étaient bons à rien. 15. N'est-il pas nécessaire de faire arracher ces pruniers? 16. Il n'est pas nécessaire de les faire arracher. 17. Est-il possible de

fendre ce morceau de bois? 18. Il est possible de le fendre. 19. Êtes-vous exact à nettoyer vos habits? 20. J'y suis très exact. 21. De quoi avez-vous rempli votre bourse? 22. Je l'ai remplie d'argent. 23. Est-il nécessaire de faire scier votre bois à brûler? 24. Il est nécessaire de le faire scier. 25. N'êtes-vous pas reconnaissant des services qu'on vous rend? 26. J'en suis très reconnaissant.

EXERCISE 154.

1. Are you not grieved with having lost your money? 2. I am vexed that I have lost my purse. 3. With what will you fill that bottle? 4. I will have it filled with ink. 5. Is it not necessary to have our wood sawed? 6. It is necessary to have our fire-wood sawed. 7. Your garden is too small, is it not necessary to have some plum-trees pulled out? 8. It is necessary to have some plum-trees cut down. 9. Have you filled your friend's purse with silver? 10. I have filled it with gold. 11. Are all your bottles filled with wine? 12. They are all filled with ink. 13. Are you sorry to have filled your bottles with ink? 14. I am glad to have filled them with ink, for I want ink. 15. Are you pleased with this book? 16. I am pleased with it. 17. Is that land good for anything? 18. It is good for nothing. 19. Is that lady beloved by her children? 20. She is beloved by her friends and by her children. 21. Are you grateful for those services? 22. I am grateful for them. 23. Is it not possible to split that piece of wood? 24. It is not possible to split it. 25. Is it agreeable to travel in winter? 26. It is not so agreeable to travel in winter as in summer. 27. It is easy to blame others. 28. Is it not glorious to die for one's country? 29. It is glorious to live and to die for one's country. 30. Have you filled the inkstand (*encrier*) with it? 31. I have filled it with it. 32. Would it not be necessary to pull up all those trees? 33. It would not be necessary to pull them all up, for my garden is very large. 34. Henry the Fourth (*quatre*) was beloved by his people.

SECTION LXXX.

GOVERNMENT OF PREPOSITIONS, ETC. (§ 135.)

1. Some prepositions govern the nouns which follow them without the aid of other prepositions:—**avant**, *before (at an earlier period)*; **devant**, *before (opposite place)* [§ 138 (1)]; **derrière**, *behind*; **chez**, *at the house of*; **concernant**, *touching*; **excepté**, *except*; **outre**, *besides*; **selon**, *according to*; **voici**, *here is*; **voilà**, *there is*, &c. [§ 135 (1)].

2. Others, being rather prepositional phrases, govern their noun by means of the preposition **de**:—**hors de**, *out of*; **loin de**, *far from*; **à fleur de**, *even with*; **à force de**, *by dint of*; **à l'égard de**, *with regard to*; **à l'insu de**, *without the knowledge of*, *unknown to*; **à raison de**, *at the rate of*; **en deçà de**, *this way of*; **au delà de**, *that way of* [§ 135, 2].

3. Others take à :—**quant à**, *as to* ; **jusqu'à**, *as far as*, &c.
[§ 135, 3].

4. Two or more verbs, adjectives, or prepositions may in French have one object in common, provided they govern it in the same manner or case :—

Nous aimons et nous louons nos enfants.	<i>We love and praise our children.</i>
Ce jardin est utile et agréable à notre père.	<i>That garden is useful and agreeable to our father.</i>
Au dedans ou au dehors du royaume.	<i>Within or without the kingdom.</i>

5. When, however, two or more verbs, adjectives, or prepositions, coming together in the same sentence, do not govern their object in the same manner, they cannot have one object in common. The object must then be repeated, or replaced by a pronoun, or another turn must be given to the sentence. The following sentences could not, therefore, be translated literally into French :—

That man is useful to and loved by his family—I write to and receive letters from my brother—To be exposed to or sheltered from the rain. We must say :—

Cet homme est utile à sa famille, et il en est aimé.	<i>That man is useful to his family, and he is beloved by them.</i>
J'écris des lettres à mon frère, et j'en reçois de lui.	<i>I write letters to my brother, and I receive some from him.</i>
Être exposé à la pluie, ou en être à l'abri.	<i>To be exposed to the rain, or to be sheltered from it.</i>

Utile and aimé, écrire and recevoir, exposé and à l'abri, requiring different prepositions, their object is repeated in the second clause in the form of a pronoun, as seen above.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Nous sommes arrivés avant la bataille.	<i>We arrived before the battle.</i>
Vous vous asseyez toujours devant moi.	<i>You always sit before me.</i>
Les avez-vous placés sur la table ?	<i>Have you placed them upon the table ?</i>
Je les ai placés dessous.	<i>I have placed them under.</i>
Je les ai mis sous la chaise ou dessus.	<i>I have put them under the chair or upon it.</i>
Ils demeurent derrière notre maison.	<i>They live behind our house.</i>
J'ai loué une chambre sur le derrière.	<i>I have rented a back room.</i>
Nous occupons le devant de la maison.	<i>We occupy the front of the house.</i>
Je les ai rencontrés derrière votre jardin.	<i>I met them behind your garden.</i>
Vous avez acheté cette terre à l'insu de votre père.	<i>You have bought that estate without the knowledge of your father.</i>
J'ai payé ce jardinier à raison de deux francs par jour.	<i>I paid the gardener at the rate of two francs per day.</i>

EXERCISE 155.

Assiette, f. <i>plate</i> .	Dessous, <i>under, under</i>	Plat, m. <i>dish</i> .
Coût-er, l. <i>to cost</i> .	<i>it</i> .	Pomme de terre, f.
Dedans, <i>inside, within</i> .	Dessus, <i>above, upon it</i> .	<i>potato</i> .
Dehors, <i>outside, with-</i>	Devant, m. <i>front</i> .	S'enrich-ir, 2. <i>to be-</i>
<i>out</i> .	Hectolitre, m. <i>100 litres</i> .	<i>come rich</i> .
Derrière, m. <i>back</i> .	Hors, <i>out</i> .	Sur, <i>upon, about</i> .

1. N'avez-vous pas fermé la porte de devant? 2. Nous l'avons fermée, mais nous n'avons pas fermé la porte de derrière. 3. Qui est arrivé avant moi? 4. Le monsieur qui est assis devant la fenêtre. 5. Qui demeure derrière votre maison? 6. Il n'y a point de maison derrière la nôtre. 7. Ne pensez-vous pas qu'à force de travailler, il s'enrichira? 8. Je ne erois pas qu'il s'enrichisse, s'il vend ses marchandises à si bon marché. 9. Apprend-il la musique à l'insu de ses parents? 10. Il l'apprend à leur insu. 11. Vous êtes-vous marié à l'insu de votre sœur? 12. Je me suis marié à son insu. 13. Notre ami n'est pas dans la maison, il est dehors. 14. Il n'est pas hors de la ville, il est dedans. 15. Avez-vous de l'argent sur vous? 16. Je n'ai pas d'argent sur moi. 17. Demeurez-vous sur le derrière ou sur le devant de la maison? 18. Nous demeurons sur le devant. 19. La cuisinière a-t-elle mis les assiettes sur la table ou dessous? 20. Elle a mis les assiettes, les plats, les cuillers et les fourchettes sur la table. 21. Combien ces pommes de terre vous coûtent-elles? 22. Je les ai achetées à raison de cinq francs l'hectolitre. 23. Avez-vous fait réparer le dedans ou le dehors de la maison? 24. J'ai fait réparer l'intérieur et l'extérieur.

EXERCISE 156.

1. Have you bought that house without your father's knowledge? 2. I have bought it without his knowledge. 3. Have you forgotten to shut the front door? 4. I have shut the front door and the back door. 5. I have brought all my books except two or three. 6. Does your brother occupy the front of your house? 7. He occupies the back. 8. Whom have you met behind that house? 9. I met nobody behind the house. 10. Does that gentleman live behind your house? 11. Nobody lives behind our house. 12. There is no house behind yours. 13. Have you a knife about you? 14. I have no knife about me. 15. Do you carry a knife about you? 16. I never carry a knife about me. 17. Has not your brother money about him? 18. He has no money about him. 19. Will you put these pencils upon the table, or under it? 20. I will put them in the drawer (*tiroir*). 21. How much have you given for that wheat? 22. I bought it at the rate of twenty-five francs a hectolitre. 23. Is that lady's house out of the city? 24. It is not out of the city; it is within. 25. Has not your sister placed the plates upon the table? 26. She has put the plates upon the table, and the spoons under it. 27. Have you had your house repaired? 28. I have had the inside repaired, but

not the outside. 29. How much does that silk cost you? 30. I have bought it at the rate of five francs a metre. 31. Did you marry without your father's knowledge? 32. I married without his knowledge. 33. Have you sold my books without my knowledge? 34. I sold them without your knowledge. 35. I sold them without my sister's knowledge.

SECTION LXXXI.

THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUN *CE* (§ 105).

1. The pronoun *ce* answers to the English pronoun *it*, used before the verb *to be*, or a verb followed by *to be*, when the latter is itself followed by a personal, a demonstrative, or a possessive pronoun. In this case, the English personal pronouns are expressed:—*I* by *moi*, *thou* by *toi*, *he* by *lui*, *she* by *elle*, *we* by *nous*, *you* by *vous*, *they* (m.) by *eux*, *they* (f.) by *elles*.

The verb is used in the singular, except before personal pronouns of the third person plural, and before possessive and demonstrative pronouns in the plural. In the interrogative form, however, the verb remains in the singular even before personal pronouns of the third person plural.

<i>C'est moi, c'est lui, c'est elle.</i>	<i>It is I, it is he, it is she.</i>
<i>Ce sont elles qui parlent.</i>	<i>It is they who speak.</i>
<i>Ce peuvent être les miens.</i>	<i>They may be mine.</i>
<i>Est-ce eux? Est-ce elles?</i>	<i>Is it they?</i>
<i>Sont-ce ceux que vous connaissez?</i>	<i>Are they those you know?</i>
<i>Non, ce ne sont pas ceux que je connais.</i>	<i>No, they are not those I know.</i>

2. If the relative pronoun *qui* and another verb follow *être*, this second verb must agree in number and person with the pronoun preceding the relative:—

<i>C'est vous qui avez fait cela.</i>	<i>It is you who have done that.</i>
<i>C'est nous qui avons déchiré cette soie.</i>	<i>It is we who have torn that silk.</i>

3. *Ce* is also the equivalent of the English pronoun *it*, used impersonally with the verb *to be*, when the latter is not followed by an adjective* [§ 108 (5)]:—

<i>Ce fut en Allemagne qu'il trouva son ami.</i>	<i>It was in Germany that he found his friend.</i>
--	--

4. *Celui qui*, *celle qui*, *ceux qui*, m., *celles qui*, f., are equivalent to the English pronouns, *he who*, *she who*, *they who*: *celui que*, *celle que*, *ceux que*, *celles que*, render *he whom*, &c.

<i>Celui ou celle qui chante.</i>	<i>He or she who sings.</i>
-----------------------------------	-----------------------------

* *Être*, used impersonally, and not followed by any of the words mentioned above and in Sect. 82, has for subject *il*:—

<i>Il est vrai que je l'ai dit.</i>	<i>It is true that I have said it.</i>
<i>Il est difficile de le croire.</i>	<i>It is difficult to believe it.</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Est-ce vous qui nous avez avertis de cela ?	<i>Is it you who have warned us of that ?</i>
C'est nous qui vous en avons avertis.	<i>It is we who have warned you of it.</i>
Est-ce vous, mesdames, que nous avons rencontrées ?	<i>Is it you, ladies, whom we have met ?</i>
Ce n'est pas nous, ce sont eux que vous avez vus.	<i>It is not we ; it is they whom you have seen.</i>
Ce n'est pas vous, ce sont eux qui ont fait cela.	<i>It is not you ; it is they who have done that.</i>
C'est en Angleterre que je vous ai vu.	<i>It is in England that I have seen you.</i>
Connaissez-vous ces deux Portugais ?	<i>Do you know those two Portuguese ?</i>
Je connais celui qui parle à M.L.	<i>I know him who speaks to Mr. L.</i>

EXERCISE 157.

Appel-er, 1. <i>to call.</i>	Connaissance, f. <i>acquaintance.</i>	Expliqu-er, 1. <i>to explain.</i>
À toute force, <i>by all means.</i>	De jour en jour, <i>from day to day.</i>	Guerre, f. <i>war.</i>
Avert-ir, 2. <i>to warn.</i>		N ^o , <i>number.</i>
Blessure, f. <i>wound.</i>	De temps en temps, <i>from time to time.</i>	Phrase, f. <i>sentence.</i>
Combl-er, 1. <i>to overwhelm.</i>		Prélud-er, 1. <i>to prelude.</i>

1. Est-ce vous, Madame, qui avez appelé votre domestique ?
 2. Ce n'est pas moi qui l'ai appelé. 3. Est-ce vous, mon ami, qui voulez à toute force aller en Espagne ? 4. Ce n'est pas moi, c'est mon cousin. 5. N'est-ce pas lui qui a averti ce matelot de son danger ? 6. Ce n'est pas lui, c'est moi qui l'en ai averti. 7. Est-ce nous que vous attendez de jour en jour ?
 8. Ce n'est pas vous, ce sont eux que j'attends. 9. Est-ce vous, Madame, qui nous avez comblés de bienfaits ? 10. Ce n'est pas moi, Mesdames. 11. N'est-ce pas en Italie que vous avez fait connaissance avec lui ? 12. Ce n'est pas en Italie ; c'est en Russie. 13. Est-ce vous, Mesdames, ou vos cousines que nous avons vues au bal ? 14. C'est nous, ce ne sont pas nos cousines que vous avez vues. 15. Ne connaissez-vous pas ces deux messieurs ? 16. Je connais celui qui parle à Madame L. 17. Est-ce vous qui avez reçu une blessure à la guerre ? 18. Ce n'est pas moi, c'est mon voisin. 19. N'est-ce pas vous qui nous avez expliqué cette phrase ? 20. Est-ce vous, Monsieur, qui demeurez au N^o 18 ? 21. Ce n'est pas moi qui y demeure. 22. Entendez-vous ces musiciens ? 23. J'entends celui qui chante. 24. Je n'entends pas bien celui qui joue. 25. Nous entendons ceux qui préludent.

EXERCISE 158.

1. Is it you, my friend, who have warned me of my danger ?
 2. It is not I who have warned you of it. 3. Is it they whom you expect from day to day ? 4. It is not they whom we expect. 5. Is it you who have done this ? 6. It is not we ; it is you who have done it. 7. Was it in England that you

bought this hat? 8. It was not in England; it was in Germany. 9. Was it not in Russia that you became acquainted with him? 10. It was not in Russia; it was in Italy. 11. Was it you who were calling us? 12. It was not we; it was he. 13. Are you not acquainted with the two Poles who are reading? 14. I know the one who is near you. 15. Is that (*est-ce là*) the lady whom you expected? 16. It is not (she). 17. Is it you, gentlemen, who have loaded my brother with kindness? 18. It is not (we), Sir; we have not the pleasure of knowing him. 19. Is it you who have been wounded in the (*au*) arm? 20. It is not (I). 21. Do you not hear those two ladies? 22. I do not hear the one who sings. 23. I hear the one who plays. 24. Was it you who came to our house this morning? 25. It was not I; I was in London then (*alors*). 26. Was it you, Sir, who did us that favour? 27. It was not (I); it was my sister. 28. Was it your son who wished by all means to go to London? 29. It was not he; he is now in Germany. 30. Is it you who wrote that letter? 31. We have written no letter. 32. Who lives at (*au*) N° 20? 33. I live there (*c'est moi*). 34. Is it we whom you have seen? 35. It was not you whom I saw.

SECTION LXXXII.

1. The pronoun **ce** (and not the pronouns, **il**, **elle**, &c.) must be used for *he*, *she*, *they*, coming before the verb *to be*, or a verb followed by *to be*, when the latter is followed by a proper name, a noun, or an adjective used substantively, preceded by the *definite*, *indefinite*, or *partitive article*, or by a *possessive* or *demonstrative adjective*. When the word used in apposition with **ce** is plural, and in the third person, the verb is put in the plural, although **ce** remains unchanged [§ 105 (2) (3)]:—

C'est Henri.

It is Henry.

C'est Louis et Marie.

It is Louisa and Mary.

C'est un Polonais.

He is a Pole.

Ce sont des Anglais.

They are Englishmen.

C'est cette dame qui m'a parlé de
vous.

*It is that lady who spoke to me of
you.*

Ce doit être votre ami.

It must be your friend.

2. **Ce** is used as the nominative of the verb **être**, in sentences like the following, and the conjunction **que** is used idiomatically after it. The verb in this case is not put in the plural:—

Qu'est-ce que ces enfants?

What are those children?

Qu'est-ce que l'Italie?

What is Italy?

Qu'est-ce que le jardinage?

What is gardening?

3. **Que** is used in a number of sentences in order to give greater force to the expression:—

Ce sont de bons livres que les vôtres.

Yours are indeed good books.

Je dis que oui; je crois que non.

I say yes; I believe not.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Qui sont ces messieurs qui parlent à M. L. ?	<i>Who are the gentlemen who speak to Mr. L. ?</i>
Ce sont mes cousins, qui viennent d'arriver.	<i>They are my cousins, who are just arrived.</i>
De quel pays sont ces marchands ?	<i>Of what country are those merchants ?</i>
Ce sont des Polonais ; ils viennent d'arriver.	<i>They are Poles ; they are just arrived.</i>
Ils ne sont pas Polonais ; ils sont Russes.	<i>They are not Poles ; they are Russians.</i>
Ce ne sont pas des Polonais ; ce sont des Russes.	<i>They are not Poles ; they are Russians.</i>
Qu'est-ce que la Touraine ?	<i>What is Touraine ?</i>
C'est le jardin de la France.	<i>It is the garden of France.</i>
Votre fenêtre ne donne-t-elle pas sur la rue ?	<i>Does not your window look on the street ?</i>
Non, c'est sur la cour qu'elle donne.	<i>No, it looks on the yard.</i>
Je crois que oui ; je crois que non.	<i>I believe so ; I believe not.</i>

EXERCISE 159.

Bris-er, 1. <i>to break.</i>	Écossais, e, <i>Scotch.</i>	Soieries, f. p. <i>silk stuffs.</i>
Charron, m. <i>wheelwright.</i>	Etranger, e, <i>foreign.</i>	Sucre, m. <i>sugar.</i>
Confitures, f. p. <i>preserves.</i>	Fenêtre, f. <i>window.</i>	Suisse, <i>Swiss.</i>
Donn-er, 1. <i>to give, look.</i>	Lyon, <i>Lyons.</i>	Surprend-re, 4. ir. <i>to catch, surprise.</i>
	Mouchoir, m. <i>handkerchief.</i>	Vol-er, 1. <i>to steal.</i>
	Roue, f. <i>wheel.</i>	

1. Connaissez-vous ces étrangers ? 2. Oui, Monsieur, ce sont les frères de notre voisin. 3. Ne sont-ils pas Écossais ? 4. Non, Monsieur, ils sont Suisses. 5. Ne sont-ce point des Écossais qui vous ont fait présent de cette casquette ? 6. Non, Monsieur, ce sont des Suisses. 7. N'est-ce pas votre domestique qui vous a volé du vin ? 8. Ce n'est pas lui, c'est son frère. 9. N'est-ce pas lui qui a pris vos confitures ? 10. Ce n'est pas lui ; ce sont ses enfants. 11. Ne sont-ce pas là les enfants que vous avez surpris à voler votre sucre ? 12. Ce sont leurs frères. 13. Ne sont-ils pas cousins ? 14. Ils ne sont pas cousins ; ils sont frères. 15. Qu'est-ce que ces soieries ? 16. Ce sont des marchandises qu'on vient de nous envoyer. 17. N'est-ce pas une belle ville que Lyon ? 18. C'est une grande et belle ville. 19. N'est-ce pas là le mouchoir que vous avez perdu ? 20. Je crois que oui. 21. N'est-ce pas sur le jardin que donnent vos fenêtres ? 22. Oui, Monsieur, c'est sur le jardin qu'elles donnent. 23. N'est-ce pas notre charron qui a fait cette roue ? 24. Ce n'est pas lui qui l'a faite. 25. Ce sont nos amis qui l'ont brisée, et c'est le menuisier qui l'a faite.

EXERCISE 160.

1. Is that lady your friend's sister ? 2. No, Sir, she is a stranger. 3. Who are the two gentlemen who are speaking to your sister ? 4. They are Swiss gentlemen. 5. Are those the

gentlemen whom you have invited? 6. It is they (*eux*). 7. Do you not know that man? 8. I know him very well; he is the man who has stolen my wine. 9. What is Italy? 10. It is the garden of Europe. 11. Is not that the letter which you intended to carry to the post-office? 12. No, Sir, it is another. 13. Is the city of Havre fine? 14. Yes, Sir, Havre is truly a large and beautiful city. 15. Is not that the man whom you have caught stealing your fruit? 16. It is not, it is another. 17. Is not this the cup that you have bought? 18. Yes, Sir, I believe so. 19. Do not the windows of your room look on the street? 20. No, Madam, they look on the garden. 21. Do not the windows of your dining room look on the yard (*cour*)? 22. No, Sir, they look on the lake (*lac*). 23. Is it that little child who has taken your preserves? 24. It is his brother and sister. 25. What are those engravings? 26. They are engravings which I bought in Germany. 27. Are those gentlemen Scotch? 28. They are not Scotch; they are Italian. 29. Are those ladies Scotch? 30. No; they are the Italian ladies who came yesterday. 31. What is Marseilles? 32. It is one of the finest cities in (*de*) France. 33. Is it not your tailor who made that coat? 34. It is not he; it is an English tailor who made it. 35. It is your friend who broke my watch.

SECTION LXXXIII.

1. In French, as in other languages, when a verb has two subjects in the singular, it is put in the plural [§ 110 (2)]:—

L'oncle et la tante sont arrivés. The uncle and aunt are arrived.

2. When a verb has two or more subjects of different persons, it is put in the first person plural if one of the subjects is of the first person; and in the second person plural if there is no subject of the first. In this case all the subjects may be summed up into one, viz., **nous** or **vous**, which sometimes is only understood:—

Vous et moi irons demain à la chasse. You and I will go hunting to-morrow.

Vous et lui irez demain à l'école. You and he will go to school to-morrow.

Sa mère et moi nous avons écrit cette lettre. His mother and I have written that letter.

Toi, elle et ton frère, vous ne faites que bavarder. Thou, she, and thy brother do nothing but talk.

3. The above examples will show that, when a verb has several subjects, all of them pronouns, or partly pronouns and partly nouns, the words **moi**, **toi**, **lui**, **eux**, are used instead of **je**, **tu**, **il**, **ils**.

4. For further rules on this subject, see §110 and 111, and also the next section.

5. **Gêner** corresponds in signification to the English *to trouble, to incommode, to disturb, to be in the way, to hurt, and to*

pinch (in speaking of shoes and garments). Se gêner means to constrain, or trouble one's self:—

Est-ce que je vous gêne ?

Am I in your way ?

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Où irez-vous, ton frère et toi ?

Where will your brother and you go ?

Lui et moi irons en Angleterre.
Vous, elle et lui, vous achèterez du blé.

*He and I will go to England.
You, she, and he will buy wheat.*

Eux et moi, nous nous sommes fait mal à la tête.

They and I have hurt our heads.

Vous et lui, vous devriez vous prêter aux circonstances.

You and he should adapt yourselves to circumstances.

Lui et moi vous gênerons sans doute.

He and I shall without doubt incommode you.

Ma cousine et moi, nous craignons de vous gêner.

My cousin and I fear to be in your way.

Je ne me gêne jamais chez mes amis.

I am never under constraint with my friends.

Ne vous gênez pas ; mettez-vous à votre aise.

Be under no constraint ; place yourself comfortably.

Nous n'aimons pas à gêner les autres.

We do not like to incommode others.

Nous n'aimons pas à nous gêner.

We do not like to incommode ourselves.

EXERCISE 161.

À perte, *at a loss.*

Nullement, *by no*

Prodigue, *prodigal,*

À profit, *with a profit.*

means.

lavish.

Bras, *m. arm.*

Pardon, *excuse me.*

Société, *f. company,*

Dérang-er, *1. to disturb.*

Persist-er, *1. to persist.*

society.

Econome, *economical.*

Place, *f. room.*

Tous deux, *both.*

1. Si nous restions plus longtemps ici, nous craindrions de vous gêner. 2. Vous ne nous gênez nullement : votre société nous est très agréable. 3. N'avez-vous pas été trop prodigues, vous et votre frère ? 4. Lui et moi au contraire, nous avons été très économes. 5. N'avez-vous pas tort de gêner ce monsieur ? 6. Nous n'avons nullement envie de le gêner. 7. Est-ce que mon bras vous gêne, Monsieur ? 8. Non, Monsieur : nous avons assez de place, vous ne me gênez pas. 9. Ne devriez-vous pas vous prêter aux circonstances ? 10. Nous faisons, elle et moi, notre possible pour nous y prêter. 11. Ce jeune homme persiste-t-il dans sa résolution ? 12. Nous y persistons, lui et moi. 13. Persistez-vous tous deux à rester ici ? 14. Nous y persistons tous deux. 15. Cet homme est-il gêné dans ses affaires (*uncomfortably situated, badly off*) ? 16. Il était gêné dans ses affaires il y a un an. 17. Ne vous gênez pas, Monsieur. 18. Je ne me gêne jamais, Monsieur. 19. Est-ce que mon frère vous dérange ? 20. Non, Monsieur, il ne me dérange pas. 21. Je ne voudrais pas vous déranger. 22. Pardon, si je vous dérange. 23. Vous et votre associé avez vendu vos marchandises à perte. 24. Toi et moi, nous

vendons toujours à profit. 25. Votre père, votre frère et moi, nous avons acheté des marchandises.

EXERCISE 162.

1. Do my brother and I incommode you? 2. No, Sir; you do not incommode us; we are very glad to see you. 3. Are you not afraid to disturb your friend? 4. We are afraid to disturb him; he has much to do. 5. Is my foot in your way, Sir? 6. No, Sir; your foot is not in my way. 7. Will you and your brother go to Germany this year? 8. He and I intend to go there. 9. He, you, and I should write our lessons. 10. Should not you and your friends adapt yourselves to circumstances? 11. We should do so, if it were possible. 12. Do I not disturb you, Sir? 13. You do not disturb me by any means. 14. Does not my little boy disturb you? 15. He does not disturb me. 16. He disturbs nobody. 17. Does not your partner sell his goods at a loss? 18. He never sells at a loss. 19. He and I always sell at a profit. 20. Do you persist in your resolution? 21. Your friend and I persist in our resolution. 22. I never feel under constraint at your house. 23. Be under no constraint (make yourself at home). 24. Are you not wrong to incommode them? 25. I do not intend to incommode them. 26. We do not like to incommode ourselves (to put ourselves out of the way). 27. My little boy and I will, perhaps, be in your way. 28. No, Sir; we are very glad of your company. 29. Do I disturb you? 30. No, Sir; you do not disturb us. 31. Do I disturb your father? 32. No, Sir; you disturb no one. 33. Excuse me, Sir, if I disturb you. 34. Have you not been very lavish? 35. No, Sir; I assure you that your son and I have been very economical.

SECTION LXXXIV.

1. When a verb is preceded by several nouns not connected by *et*, it agrees with the last only, provided the nouns are nearly synonymous, or emphasis is laid on the last :—

Son amour, sa tendresse pour ses enfants est connue de tout le monde.	<i>His love, his tenderness for his children are known to every- body.</i>
Vos amis, vos parents, Dieu vous récompensera.	<i>Your friends, your relatives, God will reward you.</i>

2. When two or more nouns are connected by the conjunction *ou*, the verb agrees with the last only :—

Charles ou George écrira à votre ami.	<i>Charles or George will write to your friend.</i>
--	---

3. When a noun and a pronoun, or two or more pronouns (not being all in the third person), are joined by *ou*, the verb is put in the first or in the second person plural according to the rules given in No. 3, Sect. 83 :—

Vous ou moi partirons demain.	<i>You or I will go to-morrow.</i>
Ta sœur ou toi irez à l'église.	<i>Your sister or you will go to church.</i>
Vous ou lui avez pu seuls commettre cette action.	<i>You or he alone have probably committed this act.</i>

4. When two nouns are joined by **ni** repeated, or when **ni l'un ni l'autre** is used as subject of a verb, the verb is put in the plural, if the two nouns, or the two persons represented by **ni l'un ni l'autre**, perform or may perform the action together:—

Ni l'un ni l'autre ne liront. *Neither the one nor the other will read.*

Even in this case the verb may be put in the singular:—

Ni l'une ni l'autre n'a fait son devoir. (ACAD.)	<i>Neither of them has done her duty.</i>
--	---

5. When, however, only one can perform the action, the verb must be put in the singular:—

Ni l'un ni l'autre ne sera nommé préfet de ce département.	<i>Neither the one nor the other will be appointed prefect of this department.</i>
--	--

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Ni l'un ni l'autre n'ont trouvé le vin bon.	<i>Neither the one nor the other found the wine good.</i>
L'un et l'autre ont trouvé le dîner mauvais.	<i>Both found the dinner bad.</i>
Comment se trouvent Messieurs vos frères?	<i>How do your brothers do?</i>
Ni l'un ni l'autre ne se trouvent bien.	<i>Neither is well.</i>
L'un et l'autre se trouvèrent au rendez-vous.	<i>They both went to the place of meeting.</i>
Ni l'un ni l'autre ne sera élu président.	<i>Neither will be elected president.</i>
L'un ou l'autre y trouvera à redire.	<i>One or the other will find fault with it.</i>
Lui ou vous avez trouvé quelque chose à redire à notre conduite.	<i>He or you have found something to blame in our conduct.</i>
Ni lui ni moi n'avons trouvé à redire à la conduite de vos enfants.	<i>Neither he nor I have found any fault with your children's conduct.</i>

EXERCISE 163.

Auteur, m. <i>author.</i>	Plutôt, <i>rather.</i>	Trouv-er, 1. <i>to find,</i>
Devoir, m. <i>duty.</i>	Rempl-ir, 2. <i>to fulfil.</i>	<i>like, to fancy.</i>
Écriture, f. <i>writing.</i>	Rôti, m. <i>roast meat.</i>	Veill-er, 1. <i>to watch.</i>
Éli-re, 4. <i>ir. to elect.</i>	Secrétaire, m. <i>secretary.</i>	Vie, f. <i>life.</i>
Expos-er, 1. <i>to expose.</i>	Se trouv-er, 1. <i>ref. to</i>	
Intérêt, m. <i>interest.</i>	<i>find one's self.</i>	

1. Remplissez-vous bien votre devoir? 2. Nous ne le remplissons ni l'un ni l'autre. 3. Cherchent-ils l'un et l'autre à s'exposer? 4. Ni l'un ni l'autre ne cherchent à exposer leur vie (LA BRUYÈRE). 5. M. votre père et M^{me}. votre mère, se trou-

vent-ils mieux aujourd'hui? 6. Ni l'un ni l'autre ne se trouvent mieux. 7. Avez-vous trouvé à redire à mon écriture ou à celle de mon secrétaire? 8. Je n'ai trouvé à redire ni à l'une ni à l'autre. 9. Cet auteur ne trouve-t-il pas à redire à tout? 10. Il trouve à redire à tous les livres. 11. Y trouvez-vous quelque chose à redire? 12. Ni lui ni moi n'y trouvons rien à redire. 13. Lui ou moi, nous veillerons à vos intérêts. 14. Ni lui ni moi ne cesserons de veiller à la conduite de votre fils. 15. Nous y veillerons plutôt que d'y trouver à redire. 16. Lui et moi nous nous trouvâmes ensemble au rendez-vous. 17. Vous y trouverez-vous l'un ou l'autre? 18. Nous nous y trouverons l'un ou l'autre. 19. L'un ou l'autre sera-t-il élu président? 20. Ni l'un ni l'autre ne sera élu. 21. Comment trouvez-vous ce rôti? 22. Je le trouve excellent. 23. Je trouve ce livre bon. 24. Je ne le trouve pas bon. 25. Je trouve cela bien fait.

EXERCISE 164

1. How do you like that book? 2. Neither my sister nor I like it. 3. Did your brothers find the dinner good? 4. Both found it very good. 5. Did the professor find fault with your conduct? 6. He did not find fault with it. 7. Neither he nor my father find fault with my conduct. 8. Do they both watch over your conduct? 9. They both watch over my conduct and over my interests. 10. Have you both fulfilled your duty? 11. We have fulfilled it. 12. Have you not both criticised my writing? 13. Neither has criticised it. 14. Do not your two sisters do better to-day? 15. One is doing better. 16. The other is not so well. 17. Do not those ladies find fault with every thing? 18. They find fault with nothing. 19. Will either be elected prefect of the department? 20. Neither will be elected. 21. How do you like this bread? 22. I find it very good. 23. Did your two friends arrive in time at the appointed place? 24. Neither was there in (à) time. 25. Do you find fault with that (*cela*)? 26. I do not find fault with it (*y*). 27. Will you both expose yourselves to this danger? 28. We will not expose ourselves to it. 29. Do you find fault with my secretary's conduct? 30. I do not find fault with it. 31. Do you find fault with his writing? 32. I find fault with it; for it is very bad. 33. Will you not watch over my interests? 34. My brother and I will watch over them. 35. We will not cease to watch over your interests.

SECTION LXXXV

1. A verb having, as its subject, a general collective noun [§ 3 (6)] preceded by the article, agrees with the noun [§ 111 (1)]:—

La foule des pauvres est grande. The crowd of the poor is great.

2. A verb preceded by a partitive collective [§ 3 (6)] takes the number of the noun following the collective, unless at-

tention be particularly directed to the collective itself [§ 111 (2)]:—

Une foule de pauvres reçoivent des secours. *A crowd of poor people receive assistance.*

3. With the words, **la plupart**, *most*; **un nombre**, *a number*, &c., and the adverbs of quantity, **peu**, **assez**, **beaucoup**, **plus**, **moins**, **trop**, **tant**, **combien**, the rule (2) given above holds good.

4. **Rester** is often used impersonally in the sense of *to have left*. The adverbial expression **de reste** is often used in the same manner as the English word *left*:—

Il me reste deux francs. *I have two francs left—or, literally, There remains to me two francs.*

Nous avons cent cinquante francs de reste. *We have one hundred and fifty francs left.*

5. **Devenir**, (2. ir.), *to become*, with **être** as an auxiliary, corresponds in signification to the English *to become*, *to turn*:—

Qu'est devenu votre frère? *What has become of your brother?*
Il est en France, et est devenu avocat. *He is in France, and has turned lawyer.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES

La plupart de mes heures sont consacrées au travail.	<i>Most of my hours are devoted to labour.</i>
La foule des humains est vouée au malheur.	<i>The mass of mankind is devoted to misfortune.</i>
La plus grande partie des voyageurs le disent, et le répètent.	<i>The greatest number of travellers say it, and repeat it.</i>
Ne vous reste-t-il que cela?	<i>Have you only that left?</i>
Voilà tout ce qu'il me reste.	<i>That is all that I have left.</i>
Je ne sais ce qu'ils sont devenus.	<i>I do not know what has become of them.</i>
Je ne sais ce que vous deviendrez.	<i>I do not know what will become of you.</i>

EXERCISE 165.

Apprenti, m. <i>apprentice</i> .	Désol-er, l. <i>to desolate</i> .	Maigre, thin, lean.
Aveugle, blind.	Egar-er, l. <i>to mislay</i> .	Naissance, f. <i>birth</i> .
Bagatelle, f. <i>trifle</i> .	Emplettes, f. p. <i>pur-chases</i> .	Rue, f. <i>street</i> .
Boiteux, se, lame.	État, m. <i>trade</i> .	S'appliqu-er, l. ref. <i>to apply one's self</i> .
Chemin, m. <i>way, road</i> .	Habile, <i>skilful</i> .	Savant, e, <i>learned</i> .

1. La plupart de vos parents ne sont-ils pas venus vous voir?
2. Beaucoup sont venus. 3. Que sont devenus les autres?
4. Je ne saurais vous dire ce qu'ils sont devenus. 5. Que deviendra ce jeune homme s'il ne s'applique pas à l'étude?
6. Je ne sais pas ce qu'il deviendra. 7. Je sais qu'il ne deviendra jamais savant. 8. Combien de tableaux avez-vous de reste? 9. Il ne me reste qu'un tableau. 10. Combien vous restera-t-il quand vous aurez fait vos emplettes? 11. Il ne me restera qu'une bagatelle. 12. Cet apprenti est-il devenu habile

dans son état? 13. Il y est devenu habile. 14. Ce monsieur est-il aveugle de naissance, ou l'est-il devenu? 15. Il l'est devenu. 16. Savez-vous ce que sont devenus ces jeunes gens? 17. Ils sont devenus médecins. 18. Ne savez-vous pas ce que sont devenus mes livres? 19. Ils sont égarés. 20. Ne deviendrez-vous pas boiteux si vous marchez tant? 21. Je deviendrai boiteux et maigre. 22. La foule ne s'est-elle pas égarée dans ce bois? 23. La foule s'y est égarée, et n'a pu retrouver son chemin. 24. Une nuée de barbares désolèrent le pays. (ACAD.) 25. Une foule de citoyens ruinés remplissaient les rues de Stockholm. (VOLTAIRE.)

EXERCISE 166.

1. Have not most of your friends become rich? 2. Most of them have become poor. 3. Has not that young lady become learned? 4. I think that she will never become learned. 5. Is not the American army (*armée*) very small? 6. The American army is small, but most of the American soldiers are very brave (*braves*). 7. Can you tell me what has become of that gentleman? 8. I cannot tell you what has become of him. 9. Is your brother blind by birth (was your brother born blind)? 10. No, Sir, he has become so. 11. Were you born lame? 12. No, Sir, I became so three years ago (*il y a*). 13. Are not most of your hours devoted to play (*jeu*, m.)? 14. No, Sir, they are devoted to study. 15. How much of your money have you left? 16. I have only twenty-five francs left. 17. Do you know how much I have left? 18. You have only a trifle left. 19. How much shall you have left to-morrow? 20. I shall only have six francs left. 21. I shall only have two francs left when I have made my purchases. 22. What has become of your grammar? 23. I have mislaid it. 24. Do you know what has become of my hat? 25. You have left (*laissé*) it upon the table. 26. Will not that gentleman become blind? 27. He will not become blind, but lame. 28. Has your son become skilful in his trade? 29. He has not become skilful in it. 30. What has become of him? 31. He has lost his way in the wood. 32. Did the crowd lose their way? 33. Most of the soldiers lost their way. 34. A cloud (*nuée*, f.) of locusts (*sauterelles*) desolated our country.

SECTION LXXXVI.

1. The article, the demonstrative and the possessive adjectives, must be repeated, as before said, before every noun or adjective used substantively, which they determine [§ 79, 90, 22].

2. The prepositions *à*, *de*, and *en* are repeated before every word which they govern [§ 137].

3. The verb *quitter*, *to leave* (*to quit*), is said of persons and places, and also of things in the sense of *to abandon*, *to give up* :—

Vous avez quitté vos parents et vos amis. *You have left your relations and friends.*
 Nous avons quitté nos études. *We have discontinued our studies.*

4. **Laisser**, *to leave, to let*, is generally said of persons and things:—

Vous avez laissé votre livre sur la table. *You left your book upon the table.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

N'avez-vous pas quitté votre maison?	<i>Have you not left your house?</i>
J'ai quitté mon pays et mes parents.	<i>I have left my country and relations.</i>
J'ai laissé ma bibliothèque en Europe.	<i>I left my library in Europe.</i>
Ne voulez-vous pas laisser votre fils ici?	<i>Will you not leave your son here?</i>
Je n'aime pas à le quitter.	<i>I do not like to quit him.</i>
J'ai laissé votre lettre à son domestique.	<i>I left your letter with his servant.</i>
Mon père m'a laissé cinquante mille francs.	<i>My father left me fifty thousand francs.</i>
Les avez-vous laissés tranquilles?	<i>Have you let them alone?</i>
Je leur ai laissé le champ libre.	<i>I have left them a free choice (free room).</i>
Ce malade a quitté le lit.	<i>That sick man has left his bed.</i>
Votre frère a quitté le barreau.	<i>Your brother has left the bar.</i>
Je vous laisserai ce chapeau à ce prix.	<i>I will let you have that hat at that price.</i>

EXERCISE 167.

À bon compte, <i>cheap</i> .	Mauvais, <i>e, bad</i> .	Portier, <i>m. porter</i> .
Carte, <i>f. card</i> .	Moins, <i>less</i> .	Pourquoi, <i>why</i> .
Épée, <i>f. sword</i> ;	army Noyau, <i>m. fruit-stone</i> .	Prix, <i>m. price</i> .
(figuratively).	Pavie, <i>m. cling-stone</i> .	Robe, <i>f. gown</i> .
Habitude, <i>f. habit</i> .	Pension, <i>f. boarding-school</i> .	Service, <i>m. service, army</i> .

1. Vos oncles, vos cousins et vos neveux ont-ils quitté le commerce? 2. Ils ont quitté le commerce, et sont devenus médecins. 3. Le capitaine G. n'a-t-il pas quitté le service? 4. Il a quitté la France, mais il n'a pas quitté le service. 5. Où avez-vous laissé votre fils? 6. Je l'ai laissé dans une pension. 7. Est-il trop jeune pour quitter ses études? 8. Il est trop jeune; il n'a que douze ans. 9. A qui avez-vous laissé votre carte de visite? 10. Je l'ai laissée chez le portier. 11. Pourquoi ne le laissez-vous pas parler? 12. Parce qu'il est temps que nous vous quittions. 13. Me permettez-vous de lui communiquer cela? 14. Je vous laisse le champ libre à cet égard. 15. Ce jeune homme n'a-t-il pas quitté ses mauvaises habitudes? 16. Il les a quittées. 17. M. L. n'a-t-il pas quitté la robe pour l'épée? 18. Oui, Monsieur; il n'est plus juge; il est capitaine. 19. Ces pêches quittent-elles facilement le noyau? 20. Non, Monsieur; ce sont des pavies. 21. Je vous laisse cet habit

pour cinquante francs. 22. À quel prix me le laisserez-vous ? 23. Je vous le laisserai pour dix francs. 24. Je vous le laisse à bon compte : je ne saurais vous le laisser à moins.

EXERCISE 168.

1. The son, daughter, and cousin have left Paris. 2. My father, mother, and sister have left me here. 3. Do you like to leave your country ? 4. I do not like to leave my friends and country. 5. My parents do not like to leave me here ; I am too young. 6. Why does not your brother let his son speak [Sect. 97, 4] ? 7. Because he has nothing to say. 8. Have you let him alone ? 9. I have let him alone. 10. Why do you not let me alone ? 11. I will let them alone. 12. Has your friend left his bed ? 13. He has not yet left his bed ; he is yet very ill. 14. Has Captain G. left the army ? 15. He has not left the army. 16. Has not that gentleman left the army for the bar ? 17. He has left the army for the bar. 18. My friend has left the bar. 19. At what price will you let me have this silk ? 20. I will let you have it at two francs a yard. 21. Can you not let me have it for less ? 22. I let you have it cheap. 23. Will you let me have that book for twenty francs. 24. I will let you have it for twenty-two. 25. I could not let you have it for less. 26. With whom (*à qui*) have you left my book ? 27. I left it with your sister. 28. Why did you not leave it with my servant ? 29. Because he had left your house. 30. Do you like to leave your friends ? 31. I do not like to leave them. 32. Where have you left your book ? 33. I left it at my father's. 34. Has that merchant given up commerce ? 35. He has not given it up. 36. Those peaches do not part easily from the stone ; they are cling-stones.

SECTION LXXXVII.

1. The pronouns subject, *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles*, must be repeated, when the first verb of the sentence is negative, and the second affirmative, when the verbs are in different tenses, and when the different clauses are connected by conjunctions other than *et, ou, ni, mais* [§ 96, 2] :—

Il ne lit pas ; il écrit.

He does not read ; he writes.

Elle ne viendra pas ; elle est partie.

She will not come ; she is gone.

2. The pronouns of the third person are often omitted before the second verb in cases not coming within the above rule. The other nominative pronouns are also, sometimes, omitted. We should, however, not advise the student to omit the latter pronouns. It is always correct to repeat the nominative pronouns.

3. The student will bear in mind, that the objective pronouns must always be repeated.

4. *Connaître* à answers to the English expression, *to know by* :—

Je le connais à sa démarche.

I know him by his walk (carriage).

5. Connaître de nom, de visage, de vue, *mean, to know by name, by sight.*

Se connaître à quelque chose, or en quelque chose, corresponds in signification to the English expression, *to be a judge of something* :—

Vous vous connaissez en pierreries. *You are a judge of precious stones.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Je le connais, je l'aime, et je lui rends justice. GRESSET.	<i>I know him, love him, and do justice to him.</i>
Il s'écoute, il se plaît, il s'adonne, il s'aime. J. B. ROUSSEAU.	<i>He listens to himself, is pleased with himself, adorns himself, loves himself.</i>
À quoi connaissez-vous ce monsieur ?	<i>By what do you know that gentleman ?</i>
Je le connais à son habit noir.	<i>I know him by his black coat.</i>
Je le connais de vue.	<i>I know him by sight.</i>
J'ai reconnu ma mère à la voix.	<i>I recognised my mother by her voice.</i>
À quoi vous connaissez-vous ?	<i>Of what are you a judge ?</i>
Je me connais en marchandises.	<i>I am a judge of goods.</i>
Je ne m'y connais pas.	<i>I am not a judge of it (of them).</i>
Il ne s'y connaît point du tout.	<i>He is not the least judge of it (of them).</i>
Il s'y connaît mieux que moi.	<i>He is a better judge of it (of them) than I.</i>
Je n'y connais aussi bien que lui.	<i>I am as good a judge of it (of them) as he.</i>

EXERCISE 169.

Artisan, m. <i>mechanic.</i>	Étoffes, <i>cloths of all kinds.</i>	Gracieux, se, <i>graceful.</i>
Blond, e, <i>light.</i>		Grain, m. <i>grain.</i>
Bouclé, e, <i>curled.</i>	Fabricant, m. <i>manu-</i>	Œuvre, f. <i>work.</i>
Chevelure, f. <i>head of hair.</i>	facturer.	Orfèvre, m. <i>goldsmith.</i>
	Forgeron, m. <i>blacksmith.</i>	Poésie, f. <i>poetry.</i>
Cheveux, m. p. <i>hair.</i>	Gestes, m. p. <i>gestures.</i>	Tout, <i>quite.</i>

1. Ne reconnaissez-vous point votre amie ? 2. Je la reconnais à sa chevelure blonde. 3. À quoi reconnaissez-vous cette demoiselle ? 4. Je la reconnais à sa démarche gracieuse. 5. N'auriez-vous point reconnu votre ami à la voix ? 6. Je l'y aurais reconnu. 7. À l'œuvre on connaît l'artisan (LA FONTAINE). 8. Ne le reconnaitrez-vous point à ces marques ? 9. Je l'y reconnaitrai. 10. Cet orfèvre ne se connaît-il point à cela ? 11. Il ne s'y connaît point du tout. 12. Vous y connaissez-vous aussi bien que le forgeron ? 13. Je m'y connais tout aussi bien que lui. 14. Ne vous connaissez-vous point en poésie ? 15. Je ne m'y connais guère. 16. Le fabricant se connaît-il aussi bien en étoffes qu'en grain ? 17. Il se connaît beaucoup mieux à celles-là qu'à celui-ci. 18. Ne connaissez-vous pas ce monsieur à ses gestes véhéments ? 19. Je le connais à ses cheveux bouclés. 20. Ne vous êtes-vous pas fait connaître (*told your name*) ? 21. Je me suis fait connaître. 22. Ne nous ferons-nous pas connaître ? 23. Vous vous ferez

connaître. 24. Ils se feront connaître par leurs vertus (*they will make themselves known*).

EXERCISE 170.

1. Do you not know that man? 2. Yes, Sir; I know him by his large (*grand*) hat. 3. By what do you recognise me? 4. I recognise you by your walk. 5. Do you recognise my friend by his gestures? 6. No, Sir; I recognise him by his black coat. 7. Do you know him well? 8. I know him by sight, but I have never spoken to him. 9. Are you a judge of iron? 10. No, Sir; the blacksmith is a judge of iron. 11. By what will you know your book? 12. I shall know it by those marks. 13. Have you not known your friend by her voice? 14. No, Madam; I knew her by her light hair. 15. Have you told your name? 16. I have not told my name. 17. Did you know your sister's friend by her curled hair? 18. I knew her by it. 19. Is the merchant a good judge of cloth? 20. He is a better judge than I. 21. Is he a better judge of it than the manufacturer? 22. He is quite as good a judge as he. 23. Is not the goldsmith as good a judge of precious stones as you? 24. He is a better judge of them than I. 25. Of what are you a judge? 26. I am a judge of nothing. 27. Are not your sisters good judges of poetry? 28. They are not the least judges of it. 29. Do you not know that young lady by her dress (*robe*)? 30. I know her by her graceful carriage. 31. Have they made themselves known? 32. They have made themselves known by their merit (*mérite*). 33. Is not the workman known by his work? 34. The workman is known by his work. 35. He is a judge of it.

SECTION LXXXVIII.

1. **Quelque**, *whatsoever, however, some, any*, followed by a noun, takes the form of the plural. It is invariable when it is followed by an adjective or an adverb [§ 94 (1) 2, 3]:—

Quelques livres que vous ayez.
Quelque bons qu'ils soient.

*Whatever books you may have.
However good they may be.*

2. **Quel que**, followed by the verb *être*, or some other verb preceding *être*, is written in two words, the first (*quel*) agreeing in gender and number with the subject of the verb [§ 94 (1) 1]:—

Quelles que soient vos vertus.
Quelle que puisse être sa résolution.

*Whatever your virtues may be.
Whatever his resolution may be.*

3. The above examples show that **quelque—que** and **quel—que** govern the subjunctive.

4. **Tout** meaning *entirely, quite, nothing but*, though an adverb, takes the mark of the feminine and of the plural when it precedes an adjective or past participle feminine commencing with a consonant or an *h* aspirate:—

L'espérance, toute trompeuse qu'elle est, sert au moins à nous mener à la fin de la vie par un chemin agréable. *Hope, deceitful as it is, serves at least to conduct us to the termination of life by an agreeable road.*
(LA BRUYÈRE.)

5. The word **gré** signifying *consent, will, meaning, &c.*, forms a number of idioms:—

Je lui sais [savoir, 3. ir.] bon gré de cette action. *I am thankful to him (i.e., owe him good-will) for that action.*
Il nous sait mauvais gré de cela. *He is displeased with us for that.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Ne le ferez-vous pas de bon gré ?	<i>Will you not do it willingly ?</i>
Il s'est marié contre le gré de ses parents.	<i>He married against the will of his parents.</i>
Sa chevelure voltige au gré du vent.	<i>His hair flutters at the will of the wind.</i>
Je sais mauvais gré à votre frère de vouloir se mêler de mes affaires.	<i>I am displeased with your brother for wishing to interfere with my affairs.</i>
Je lui en sais bon gré.	<i>I am thankful to him for it.</i>
J'espère que vous ne me saurez pas mauvais gré, si je ne vous écris pas.	<i>I hope that you will not be displeased with me, if I do not write to you.</i>
C'est à mon gré le meilleur enfant du monde.	<i>He is, to my thinking, the best child in the world.</i>

EXERCISE 171.

Bon gré, mal gré, <i>willing or not willing.</i>	Men-er, 1. <i>to take, to lead.</i>	Recommand-er, 1. <i>to recommend.</i>
Chambre, f. <i>room.</i>	Nou-er, 1. <i>to tie, to fasten.</i>	Secret, m. <i>secret.</i>
Gard-er, 1. <i>to keep.</i>		Silence, m. <i>silence.</i>
Lit, m. <i>bed.</i>	Oblig-er, 1. <i>to oblige.</i>	Suite, f. <i>consequence.</i>
Malgré, <i>in spite of.</i>	Offre, f. <i>offer.</i>	Vol-er, 1. <i>to fly.</i>

1. Savez-vous mauvais gré à votre oncle de ce qu'il a dit ?
2. Je ne lui en sais aucun mauvais gré (VOLTAIRE). 3. Ne me sauriez-vous pas bon gré de vous emmener avec moi ? 4. Je vous en saurais le meilleur gré du monde. 5. Ne leur savez-vous pas bon gré d'avoir gardé ce secret ? 6. Je leur sais bon gré de l'avoir gardé. 7. Ne leur avez-vous pas recommandé de garder le silence ? 8. Je leur ai recommandé de le garder. 9. Ce malade garde-t-il encore le lit ? 10. Il ne garde plus le lit, mais il est encore obligé de garder la chambre. 11. Votre chevelure est-elle bien nouée ? 12. Non, Monsieur, elle vole au gré du vent. 13. Garderez-vous votre domestique ? 14. Je le garderai, il fait tout à mon gré. 15. Quelques offres qu'on lui fasse, il ne veut pas me quitter. 16. Quelque bonnes que soient ces dames, elles ne sont pas à mon gré. 17. Quelles que soient les suites de cette affaire, je vous sais bon gré de vos intentions. 18. Toute belle qu'elle est, elle n'est pas à mon gré. 19. L'avez-vous fait malgré vous ? 20. Non, Monsieur ; je l'ai fait de bon gré. 21. Bon gré, mal gré, il partira. 22.

Me garderez-vous le secret? 23. Je vous le garderais. 24. Il change d'opinion au gré des événements.

EXERCISE 172.

1. Will he marry against his father's consent? 2. He will not marry against his parent's consent. 3. Why are you displeased with me? 4. I am not displeased with you. 5. Is your little girl's hair tied? 6. It is not tied; it waves (*flotte*) with the wind. 7. What do you think of my book? 8. It is, in my opinion, the best book that I have read [Sect. 74, 3, 4]. 9. Will you not be displeased with me, if I do not come to-day? 10. I shall not be displeased with you. 11. Will you not read that letter? 12. However well written it may be, I will not read it. 13. Are those ladies handsome? 14. However handsome and good they may be, they do not strike my fancy. 15. Are you displeased with my brother? 16. No, Sir, I am thankful to him for his intentions, whatever may be the consequences of his conduct. 17. Will you keep this secret (for me)? 18. I will keep it willingly. 19. Does your sister keep her bed willingly? 20. She does not keep her room willingly. 21. Willingly or not, she must keep her room when she is ill. 22. Will you keep silent on this point? 23. I will willingly. 24. I am thankful to you for your good intentions. 25. Are you thankful to him for this (*de cela*)? 26. I am thankful to him for it. 27. Will the judge keep his servant? 28. He will keep him. 29. Does he do his work to his fancy? 30. He does it to his fancy. 31. Is your brother obliged to keep in the house? 32. He is obliged to keep his bed. 33. Has he not left his room? 34. He has not yet left his room; he is too ill to leave it. 35. I should be under the greatest obligations in the world to you, if you would do this.

SECTION LXXXIX.

1. **Servir** [2. *ir.*] is used in French in the sense of the English expression *to help to* :—

Que vous servirai-je?	<i>To what shall I help you?</i>
Vous servirai-je de la soupe?	<i>Shall I help you to some soup?</i>
Vous n'avez pas servi monsieur.	<i>You have not helped that gentleman.</i>

2. **Je vous remercie**, *I thank you*, said in answer to an offer, is in French always a refusal. This phrase is never employed like the English expression, *I thank you for (this or that)*, to signify a request. The French make use of other forms :—
Oserai-je vous prier de Oserai-je vous demander Je vous prie de Je vous prierai de :—

Oserai-je vous demander une aile de cette volaille, un morceau de ce rôti?	<i>I will thank you for a wing of that fowl, a slice of that roast meat.</i>
--	--

3. **S'il vous plait**, corresponds to the English, *if you please*.

The verb is used impersonally in that sentence and in the following :—

Comme il vous plaira.

As you please.

Il ne me plaît pas d'y aller.

It does not suit or please me to go there.

4. **Au plaisir de vous revoir, au revoir, adieu, jusqu'au revoir,** mean, *till I have the pleasure of seeing you again, till I see you again, &c :—*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Qu'aurai-je le plaisir de vous servir ?	<i>To what shall I have the pleasure of helping you ?</i>
Je vous demanderai un morceau de ce jambon.	<i>I will thank you, or I will trouble you, for a slice of that ham.</i>
Vous offrirai-je un morceau de ce rôti ?	<i>Shall I offer you a slice of this roast meat ?</i>
Je vous remercie, Monsieur ; je prendrai de préférence une aile de cette volaille.	<i>I thank you, Sir ; I would prefer a wing of that fowl.</i>
N'a-t-on pas encore servi ?	<i>Is not the dinner yet on the table ?</i>
Je vous souhaite le bonsoir.	<i>I wish you good evening.</i>
J'ai souhaité le bonjour à Madame.	<i>I have wished the lady a good morning.</i>
Prenez la peine de vous asseoir.	<i>Have the goodness to sit down.</i>
Messieurs, veuillez entrer.	<i>Gentlemen, have the kindness to walk in.</i>

EXERCISE 173.

Adieu, m. <i>adieu.</i>	Jambon, m. <i>ham.</i>	Remerci-er, l. <i>to thank.</i>
Aile, f. <i>wing.</i>	Légume, m. <i>vegetable.</i>	Remercement, m. <i>thanks.</i>
Attend-re, 4. <i>to wait for.</i>	Merci, <i>thank you.</i>	
Bouilli, m. <i>boiled meat, beef.</i>	Mett-re (se), ir. ref. 4. <i>to sit down.</i>	Rôti, m. <i>roast meat.</i>
Congé, m. <i>leare.</i>	Ortolan, m. <i>ortolan.</i>	Soupe, f. <i>soup.</i>
Côtelette, f. <i>cutlet, chop.</i>	Perdrix, f. <i>partridge.</i>	Suffisamment, adv. <i>sufficiently.</i>
	Pri-er, l. <i>to beg, to desire.</i>	Tranche, f. <i>slice.</i>

1. Monsieur, qu'aurai-je le plaisir de vous servir ? 2. Je vous demanderai une tranche de ce jambon. 3. Je vous prie de servir ces messieurs. 4. Oserai-je vous demander un morceau de ce bouilli ? 5. Vous offrirai-je une tranche de ce rôti ? 6. Je vous remercie, Monsieur ; j'en ai suffisamment. 7. Mademoiselle, aurai-je l'honneur de vous servir une aile de cette perdrix ? 8. Je vous remercie, Monsieur ; je prendrai de préférence un de ces ortolans. 9. Monsieur, vous enverrai-je de la soupe ? 10. Madame, je vous prie de servir mademoiselle. 11. Je vous en demanderai après. 12. Jean, présentez cette côtelette à monsieur. 13. Ces légumes sont délicieux. 14. Monsieur, je suis bien aise que vous les trouviez bons. 15. Monsieur, ne voulez-vous pas vous asseoir ? 16. Mille remerciements, Monsieur, mon père m'attend à la maison. 17. Ne leur avez-vous pas souhaité le bonjour ? 18. Je leur ai souhaité le bonsoir. 19. Leur avez-vous dit adieu ? 20. J'ai dit

adieu à mon frère. 21. J'ai pris congé d'eux. 22. Les avez-vous priés d'entrer? 23. Je les en ai priés. 24. Messieurs, on a servi. 25. Veuillez vous mettre ici.

EXERCISE 174.

1. Madam, to what shall I help you? 2. I will trouble you for a slice of that ham. 3. Shall I send you a wing of the fowl? 4. No, Sir, I thank you. 5. I thank you, Sir (*s'il vous plaît, Monsieur*). 6. Sir, shall I have the pleasure of helping you to a slice of this ham? 7. I thank you, Sir, I would prefer a slice of the partridge. 8. Shall I offer you a little of this boiled meat? 9. I thank you, Sir; I have some. 10. Madam, shall I send you a little of this soup? 11. Much obliged to you, Sir [*see No. 16, in the above exercise*]. 12. Sir, will you have the goodness to help this young lady? 13. With much pleasure, Sir. 14. John, take this soup to the gentleman. 15. These ortolans are delicious. 16. I am very glad that you like them. 17. Is the dinner on the table? 18. No, Sir; it is not yet on the table. 19. It is too early. 20. Does it please you to go there? 21. It does not please me to go to his house; but I will go, if you wish it. 22. Shall I go with you? 23. As you please. 24. Will not your friend sit down? 25. He is much obliged to you; he has not time to-day. 26. Have you wished your friend a good morning? 27. I wished him a good evening. 28. Have you not bid him farewell? 29. I have bid him farewell. 30. Have the goodness to sit down here. 31. I have taken leave of them. 32. I have taken leave of all my friends.

SECTION XC.

1. The verb *tenir* [2. *ir.*], *to hold*, often corresponds in signification to the English verb *to keep*; *tenir un hôtel*, *to keep an hotel*; *tenir table ouverte*, *to keep open table*; *tenir sa chambre propre*, &c., *to keep one's room clean*; *tenir la porte, les fenêtres ouvertes*, *to keep the door, the windows open*; *tenir les yeux ouverts, fermés*, *to keep one's eyes opened, shut*; *tenir la tête droite*, &c., *to keep one's head upright*; *tenir sa parole*, *to keep one's word*; *tenir compagnie à quelqu'un*, *to stay or remain with some or any one*.

2. *Tenir un langage singulier, tenir des propos . . . , des discours . . .*, would be rendered into English by *to make use of singular language, to use peculiar expressions, to advance things, &c.* :—

Ce jeune homme tient des propos insensés. *That young man says foolish things.*

3. *Tenir* is also used in the sense of *being attached to, to be tenacious of*:—

Je tiens à mon argent, à la vie. *I value (i.e., hold to) my money, my life.*

Je tiens à mon opinion. *I am tenacious of my opinion.*

4. *Tenir* is also used of a colour which is *fast* or *not* :—

Cette couleur tiendra ou ne tiendra pas. *This colour is fast (i.e., holds) or not.*

5. **Faire tenir** is used in the sense of *to forward, to send* :—

Faites-lui tenir cet argent, cette lettre. *Forward him this money, this letter.*

6. **Se tenir**, or **s'en tenir**, conjugated reflectively, may often be rendered by *to remain, to abide by, to be satisfied with* :—

Il se tient debout, assis. *He remains standing, seated.*
Je m'en tiens à votre opinion. *I am satisfied with your opinion.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

M. L. tient un hôtel superbe.	<i>Mr. L. keeps a superb hotel.</i>
Votre petite fille ne tient pas sa chambre bien propre.	<i>Your little girl does not keep her room very clean.</i>
Pourquoi tenez-vous les portes ouvertes ?	<i>Why do you keep the doors open ?</i>
Il fait si chaud que nous tenons toutes les fenêtres ouvertes.	<i>It is so warm that we keep all the windows open.</i>
Tenez la tête droite et les yeux ouverts.	<i>Keep your head upright and your eyes open.</i>
Pourquoi ne tenez-vous pas votre parole ?	<i>Why do you not keep your word ?</i>
Tenez compagnie à votre sœur ; elle est malade.	<i>Stay with your sister ; she is ill.</i>
Votre ami tient des propos bien singuliers.	<i>Your friend makes use of very singular expressions.</i>
Vous tenez des discours bien légers.	<i>You use very light language.</i>
La couleur de votre drap tiendra-t-elle ?	<i>Is the colour of your cloth fast ?</i>
Lui avez-vous fait tenir ce livre ?	<i>Have you sent him that book ?</i>
À quoi vous en tiendrez-vous ?	<i>What will be your decision ?</i>
Je m'en tiendrai à ce que j'ai dit.	<i>I shall abide by what I have said.</i>
Pourquoi se tient-il toujours debout ?	<i>Why does he always remain standing ?</i>
L'incrédule s'en tiendra-t-il au présent, qui doit finir demain ?	<i>Will the unbeliever be satisfied with the present, which is to end to-morrow ?</i>

MASSILLON.

EXERCISE 175.

Cocher, m. <i>coachman.</i>	Indisposé, e, <i>indisposed.</i>	Recommander, 1. <i>to recommend.</i>
Debout, <i>standing.</i>		
Défend-re, 4. <i>to forbid.</i>	Insolent, e, <i>insolent.</i>	Regard-er, 1. <i>to look.</i>
De près, <i>closely.</i>	Lieu, <i>place.</i>	Rue, <i>street.</i>
En dehors, <i>out, outside.</i>	Malade, <i>ill.</i>	Sav-oir, 3. <i>ir. to know.</i>
	Parfaitement, <i>perfectly.</i>	S'enrhumer, 1. <i>ref. to get a cold.</i>
Gens, m. pl. <i>people.</i>	Préférer, 1. <i>to prefer.</i>	Vie, <i>life.</i>

1. Quel hôtel votre frère tient-il ? 2. Il tient l'hôtel de l'Europe, rue de . . . 3. Votre petit garçon se tient-il bien propre ? 4. Il se tient bien propre. 5. À quoi vous en tiendrez-vous ? 6. Je m'en tiendrai à ce que je vous ai dit. 7. Ne savez-vous pas à quoi vous en tenir ? 8. Je sais parfaitement

à quoi m'en tenir. 9. Pourquoi vous tenez-vous debout? 10. Parce que nous n'avons pas le temps de nous asseoir. 11. N'avez-vous point défendu à ces jeunes gens de tenir de tels propos? 12. Je le leur ai défendu. 13. Votre cocher n'a-t-il pas tenu un langage bien insolent? 14. N'avez-vous pas peur de vous enrhummer, en tenant les portes ouvertes? 15. Nous préférierions les tenir fermées. 16. Votre maître vous recommande-t-il de tenir la tête droite? 17. Il me recommande de tenir les pieds en dehors. 18. Pourquoi votre ami ne vous tient-il pas compagnie? 19. Sa sœur est indisposée; il est obligé de rester avec elle. 20. Votre oncle ne vous a-t-il pas tenu lieu de père? 21. Il m'a tenu lieu de père et de mère. 22. Regarderez-vous de plus près à cette affaire? 23. Non, Monsieur; je m'en tiendrai à ce que j'en sais. 24. Ce médecin ne tient-il pas à son opinion? 25. Il y tient plus qu'il ne tient à la vie de ses malades.

EXERCISE 176.

1. Does that gentleman keep open table? 2. He keeps an hotel in Paris. 3. Why do you keep the windows open? 4. We keep them open because we are too warm. 5. Has not your friend kept his word? 6. He has kept his word; he always keeps his word. 7. Have you not told your scholar to keep his head upright? 8. I have told him to keep his head upright and his eyes open. 9. Why do you not stay with your sister? 10. Because I have promised to go to my cousin's this morning. 11. Have you forbidden your little boy to make use of these expressions? 12. I have forbidden him. 13. Does he make use of insolent language? 14. He does not. 15. What will be your decision? 16. I will abide by what I told your father. 17. Have you forwarded that money to your friend? 18. I have not yet forwarded it to him. 19. Will you forward it to him to-morrow? 20. I will forward it to him if I have an opportunity. 21. Why do you not keep standing? 22. Because I am weary. 23. Do you think that the colour of your coat is fast? 24. I think that it is fast; it (*elle*) appears very good. 25. Will you not look closely into your brother's affairs? 26. I shall not look closely into them. 27. I will be satisfied with your opinion. 28. Are you not tenacious of your opinion? 29. I am not too tenacious of it. 30. Does not your physician adhere too tenaciously to his opinion? 31. He adheres to it. 32. Does that lady hold your mother's place? 33. She is a mother to me. 34. Our cousin is a father to us. 35. That physician does not value the life of his patient.

SECTION XCI.

1. The verb *être* enters into a great many idioms besides those which we have already mentioned: *être en retard*, *to be late*, *to tarry*; *être en état*, *à même de*, *to be able to*; *être en peine de*, *to be uneasy about*; *être en vie*, *to be alive*, *to live*; *être en chemin pour*, *to be on the way to*; *être au fait*, *au*

courant de, to be familiar with ; être à la veille de, to be on the eve of ; être de trop, to be unnecessary, to be in the way ; être bien avec, to be on good terms with ; être brouillé avec, to be on bad terms with ; être aux prises avec, to be in open rupture, quarrel, or battle with ; être d'avis, to be of opinion, &c.

2. **Être**, as already said [Sect. 47, 5], is used in the sense of *appartenir, to belong*. It is also employed in the sense of *to behave, to become*. In the latter sense, it takes generally the preposition *de* before another verb :—

Est-ce à vous *de* lui faire des reproches ? *Does it become you to cast (make) reproaches upon him ?*

C'est à vous *à* parler. *It is your turn to speak.*

3. **Y être** is often used for *to be at home, to be in* :—

Votre père *y* est-il ? *Is your father at home ?*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Ne sommes-nous pas de trop ici ? *Are we not in the way here ?*
 Nous ne sommes pas bien avec nos parents. *We are not on good terms with our relations.*

Nous sommes au courant de tout cela. *We are familiar with all that.*

Je suis à même de satisfaire à sa demande. *I am able to satisfy his demand.*

Nous sommes brouillés. *We are not on good terms, we are at variance.*

Ma sœur est à la veille de se marier. *My sister is on the eve of her marriage.*

Nous sommes d'avis que vous alliez lui faire des excuses. *It is our opinion that you should go and apologise to him.*

Ce n'est pas à lui de nous reprocher notre bonté. *It does not become him to reproach us with our kindness.*

A qui est-ce à lire ? *Whose turn is it to read ?*

C'est à ma sœur à lire ce matin. *It is my sister's turn to read this morning.*

Cette maison est à lui et à moi. *That house is his and mine.*

Elle est à moi, elle est à lui. *It is mine, it is his.*

Ces souliers ne sont pas à nous. *These shoes are not ours.*

Ils appartiennent à notre frère. *They belong to our brother.*

Ils lui appartiennent. *They belong to him.*

Monsieur* n'y est pas. *The gentleman is not at home.*

Madame *y* est. *The lady is in.*

EXERCISE 177.

Achet-er, 1. <i>to buy.</i>	Gravure, f. <i>engraving.</i>	Part-ir, 2. <i>ir. to start,</i>
Arriv-er, 1. <i>to arrive.</i>	Hôte, m. <i>host.</i>	<i>set out.</i>
Correspondant, <i>correspondent.</i>	Libraire, m. <i>bookseller.</i>	Propriétaire, m. <i>land-lord.</i>
Craind-re, 4. <i>ir. to fear.</i>	Mois, m. <i>month.</i>	
D-evoir, 3. <i>to owe, be obliged.</i>	Montre, f. <i>watch.</i>	Pun-ir, 2. <i>to punish.</i>
	Mort, p. p. <i>from</i>	Veille, f. <i>eve, day before.</i>
	mourir, <i>to die.</i>	
Embarqu-er, (s'), 1. <i>ref. to embark.</i>		

* **Monsieur, Madame**, not followed by a name, are generally understood to mean the master and mistress of the house, the heads of the family ; they are so used especially by, and when speaking to, servants.

1. Y a-t-il longtemps que vous êtes brouillés? 2. Il y a plus d'un mois que je suis brouillé avec lui. 3. Votre ami est-il encore en vie? 4. Non, Monsieur, il y a dix ans qu'il est mort. 5. Votre correspondant est-il en chemin pour Paris? 6. Je crois qu'il doit être arrivé. 7. Ce jeune homme n'est-il pas en retard? 8. Oui, Monsieur; il ne vient jamais à temps. 9. Ces gravures sont-elles à vous ou à votre libraire? 10. Elles sont à moi; je viens de les acheter. 11. Ne craignez-vous pas d'être de trop ici? 12. Nous sommes trop bien avec notre hôte pour craindre cela. 13. À qui est-ce à aller chercher les livres? 14. C'est à moi à les aller chercher. 15. Est-ce à vous de le punir, quand il le mérite? 16. C'est à moi de le punir, car je lui tiens lieu de père. 17. Ces maisons n'appartiennent-elles pas à notre propriétaire? 18. Elles ne lui appartiennent pas. 19. Elles sont à notre correspondant. 20. À qui sont ces lettres? 21. Elles ne sont point à moi, elles sont à ma cousine. 22. Cette montre est à lui. 23. N'êtes-vous point à la veille de partir pour Londres? 24. Nous sommes à la veille de nous embarquer pour Cadix. 25. Il y a longtemps que nous sommes aux prises.

EXERCISE 178.

1. Are you able to pay him? 2. I am not able to pay him; I have not received my money. 3. Are you on good terms with your bookseller? 4. I am not on good terms with him. 5. I am on bad terms with him. 6. How long have you been on bad terms with him? 7. It is more than a month. 8. Are you not able to satisfy my friend's demand? 9. I am able to satisfy it (*d'y satisfaire*). 10. Are you on your way to Naples? 11. No, Sir; I am on my way to Rome. 12. Is not your physician on the eve of starting for Montpellier? 13. He is on the eve of starting for Paris. 14. Am I in the way here? 15. No, Sir; you are not in the way. 16. Whose turn is it to speak? 17. It is my turn to speak and to read. 18. Is it my place (*à moi*) to make apologies to him? 19. It is your brother's place to apologise to him. 20. Does it become you to punish that child? 21. It behoves me to punish him. 22. Do you hold the place of a father towards him? 23. I hold the place of a father towards him. 24. Is that coat yours? 25. No, Sir, it is not mine; it is my brother's. 26. Have you broken openly with him? 27. We have been quarrelling two months. 28. Is not that large house yours? 29. No, Sir, it is not mine; it is my sister's. 30. Does it become your brother to reprehend him with his kindness? 31. It does not become him to do it. 32. Whose turn is it to go and fetch the books? 33. It is my place to go and fetch them. 34. Is the gentleman in? 35. No, Sir, the gentleman is not in; but the lady (of the house) is in.

SECTION XCII.

1. **Avancer, retarder**, correspond to the English verbs *to gain, to lose, to put forward, to put back*, in speaking of a watch or

clock, &c. The preposition **de** is placed before the word expressing the variation :—

Ma montre retarde d'une demi-heure.	<i>My watch is half an hour too slow.</i>
La mienne avance d'un quart d'heure.	<i>Mine is a quarter of an hour too fast.</i>
J'ai avancé cette pendule d'une demi-heure.	<i>I set that clock half an hour forward.</i>
Retardez votre montre de cinq minutes.	<i>Put your watch five minutes back.</i>

2. **Mettre** [4. ir.] à l'heure, means *to set right, to put right, to set* :—

Mettez cette montre à l'heure. *Set that watch right.*

3. **S'accorder**, *to agree*, is said also of clocks, watches, &c.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Votre montre va-t-elle bien ?	<i>Does your watch go well ?</i>
Elle retarde d'une demi-heure par jour.	<i>It loses half an hour a day.</i>
Elle avance d'un quart d'heure par semaine.	<i>It gains a quarter of an hour a week.</i>
De combien avance-t-elle ?	<i>How much has it gained ?</i>
Je viens de mettre ma montre à l'heure.	<i>I have just set my watch right.</i>
Si votre montre retarde; pourquoi ne l'avancez-vous pas ?	<i>If your watch loses, why do you not set it forward ?</i>
Ma pendule avance; je viens de la retarder.	<i>My clock gains; I have just set it back.</i>
Quelle heure est-il à votre montre ?	<i>What o'clock is it by your watch ?</i>
Ma pendule sonne les heures et les demies.	<i>My clock strikes the hour and the half hour.</i>
J'ai oublié de la monter (or remonter).	<i>I have forgotten to wind it up.</i>
Votre montre est dérangée.	<i>Your watch is out of order.</i>
Il faudra la faire nettoyer.	<i>It will be necessary to have it cleaned.</i>
La sonnerie en est dérangée.	<i>The striking part is out of order.</i>
Votre pendule et ma montre ne s'accordent pas.	<i>Your clock and my watch do not agree.</i>
Les pendules à ressort vont mieux que les pendules à poids.	<i>Spring-clocks go better than weight-clocks.</i>
L'horloge a sonné deux heures.	<i>The clock has struck two.</i>

EXERCISE 179.

Aiguille, f. <i>hand</i> .	Droit, e, <i>straight</i> .	Ressort (grand), m. <i>main-spring</i> .
Arrêt-er (s'), 1. ref. <i>to stop</i> .	Fêlé, e, <i>cracked</i> .	Secondes (montre à), <i>watch with a second-hand</i> .
Balancier, m. <i>pendulum</i> .	Matin, m. <i>morning</i> .	Perfection, f. <i>perfection</i> .
Boîte, f. <i>watch-case</i> .	Plat, e, <i>flat, thin</i> .	Timbre, m. <i>bell of a clock</i> .
Cadran, m. <i>face, dial</i> .	Régl-er, 1. <i>to regulate</i> .	Vite, <i>quick, quickly</i> .
Cass-er, 1. <i>to break</i> .	Répétition (montre à), f. <i>repeater</i> .	
Double, <i>double</i> .		

1. N'avez-vous pas une montre à répétition? 2. J'ai une montre d'or à double boîte. 3. Va-t-elle mieux que la mienne? 4. Elle ne va pas bien, elle retarde d'une heure par jour. 5. Est-ce une montre à secondes? 6. C'est une montre à secondes et à cadran d'or. 7. Votre pendule ne sonne-t-elle pas? 8. Elle ne sonne plus, le timbre en est cassé. 9. Pourquoi ces pendules ne s'accordent-elles pas? 10. Parce que l'une avance et l'autre retarde. 11. N'avez-vous point cassé le grand ressort de votre montre? 12. Je l'ai cassé en la remontant. 13. Votre pendule est-elle juste? 14. Oui, Monsieur: elle est juste: je viens de la faire régler. 15. La sonnerie de cette pendule est-elle dérangée? 16. La sonnerie en est dérangée et le timbre en est fêlé. 17. La petite aiguille de ma montre plate est cassée. 18. Le balancier de votre pendule n'est pas droit. 19. De combien votre pendule avance-t-elle? 20. Elle avance de cinq minutes par jour. 21. La perfection d'une pendule n'est pas d'aller vite, mais d'être réglée (DEUILLE). 22. Votre montre s'arrête-t-elle souvent? 23. Elle s'arrête tous les matins. 24. Votre pendule s'est arrêtée.

EXERCISE 180.

1. Does your watch gain or lose? 2. It does not lose: it goes very well. 3. It loses twenty-five minutes a day. 4. Does your clock gain much? 5. It gains one hour a week. 6. How much does your son's gold watch lose? 7. It loses much: it loses one hour in (*en*) twenty-four (*heures*). 8. I have put it forward one hour. 9. I will put it back half an hour. 10. Does not your clock strike the half-hour? 11. No, Sir: it only strikes the hour. 12. Have you forgotten to wind up your repeater? 13. I have forgotten to wind it up, and it has stopped. 14. Is your silver watch out of order? 15. It is out of order, and it will be necessary to have it cleaned. 16. What o'clock is it by your watch? 17. It is three o'clock by my watch: but it gains. 18. How much does it gain a week? 19. It gains more than five minutes a day. 20. Is your watch right? 21. No, Sir: it is not right: it is out of order. 22. Does your clock strike right? 23. It does not strike right: the striking part is out of order. 24. Have you broken the hands of your clock? 25. I have broken the hour-hand and the dial. 26. Has the clock struck three? 27. It has struck twelve. 28. It has stopped. 29. Does it stop every morning? 30. It does not stop every morning: it stops every evening. 31. Your watch does not agree with mine. 32. Have you not broken the main-spring of your brother's watch? 33. He has broken it in winding it up. 34. My brother's watch is right: he has had it cleaned and regulated. 35. My sister's watch is not right: it requires cleaning.

SECTION XCIII.

1. **Se démettre** [4. *ir.*] **le bras, le poignet**, corresponds to the English expression *to dislocate one's arm, wrist, to put one's arm*

out of joint. In this sense **se démettre** takes no preposition before its object, the reflective pronoun being a dative :—

Je me suis démis l'épaule. *I have dislocated my shoulder.*

2. **Se démettre**, used in the sense of *to resign, to give up*, takes the preposition **de** before its object :—

Il s'est démis de sa place. *He has resigned his place.*

3. **S'emparer**, *to seize, to lay hold of*, takes **de** before its object :—

Il s'est emparé de ce chapeau. *He seized upon his hat.*

4. **S'empêcher**, *to prevent one's self, to forbear, to help*, takes **de** before another verb :—

Je ne puis m'empêcher de rire. *I cannot help laughing.*

Je ne puis m'en empêcher. *I cannot help doing so.*

5. **S'inquiéter** answers to the English expression, *to be or become uneasy, to trouble one's self*; it takes **de** before its object, be this object noun, pronoun, or verb :—

Je ne m'inquiète pas de cela. *I am not uneasy about that.*

6. **Se comporter** answers to the expressions *to behave, to deport one's self*.

7. **S'attendre** means *to await, to expect*. It takes **à** before its object :—

Je ne m'attendais pas à cela. *I did not expect that.*

Je ne m'y attendais pas. *I did not expect it.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Vous êtes-vous démis l'épaule ? *Have you dislocated your shoulder?*

Je me la suis démise [Sect. 45, 2, § 130]. *I dislocated it.*

Cette demoiselle s'est démis le poignet. *That young lady dislocated her wrist.*

Qui le lui a remis ? *Who set it for her ?*

Le Dr. L. a remis l'épaule à ma sœur. *Dr. L. set my sister's shoulder,*

Vous êtes-vous démis de votre place ? *Have you resigned your situation ?*

Je m'en suis démis [§ 131, 11]. *I have resigned it.*

Nous ne pouvions nous empêcher de sourire pendant ce récit. *We could not help smiling during that narration.*

Vous êtes-vous emparé de ce livre ? *Have you seized that book ?*

Je m'en suis emparé. *I laid hold of it.*

De quoi vous inquiétez-vous ? *What do you trouble yourself about ?*

Je ne m'inquiète de rien. *I trouble myself about nothing.*

Comment ce jeune homme se comporte-t-il ? *How does that young man behave ?*

Il se comporte comme il faut. *He behaves properly.*

Je ne m'attendais pas à une telle réponse. *I did not expect such an answer.*

Je ne m'y attendais nullement. *I did not expect it by any means.*

EXERCISE 181.

A l'avenir, <i>in future.</i>	Gauche, <i>left.</i>	Part, <i>f. part.</i>
Bras, <i>m. arm.</i>	Mieux, <i>better.</i>	Paysan, <i>m. peasant.</i>
Cass-er, <i>1. to break.</i>	Monde (tout le), <i>every-</i>	Prusse, <i>f. Prussia.</i>
Droit, <i>e, right.</i>	<i>body.</i>	Séjour, <i>m. stay.</i>
Durant, <i>during.</i>	Obligé, <i>obliged.</i>	Traitement, <i>m. treat-</i>
Écritoire, <i>f. inkstand.</i>	Pareil, <i>le, similar,</i>	<i>ment.</i>
Ennemi, <i>m. enemy.</i>	<i>such.</i>	Ville, <i>f. city.</i>

1. Ne vous étiez-vous pas démis le bras? 2. Je ne me l'étais pas démis; je me l'étais cassé. 3. Si vous alliez en Amérique, vous démettriez-vous de votre place? 4. Je serais obligé de m'en démettre. 5. Y a-t-il longtemps que votre cousin s'est démis de la sienne? 6. Il y a un mois qu'il s'en est démis. 7. L'ennemi s'est-il emparé de la ville? 8. Il s'en est emparé. 9. Votre fils se comportera-t-il mieux à l'avenir? 10. Il s'est très bien comporté durant son séjour en Prusse. 11. Vous attendiez-vous à un pareil traitement de sa part? 12. Je ne m'y attendais pas. 13. À quoi vous attendiez-vous? 14. Je m'attendais à être traité comme il faut. 15. Pourquoi vous êtes-vous moqué de lui? 16. Parce que je n'ai pu m'en empêcher. 17. Si vous laissiez votre écritoire ici, le paysan s'en emparerait-il? 18. Il s'en emparerait certainement. 19. Votre associé se comporte-t-il bien envers vous? 20. Il se comporte bien envers tout le monde. 21. Qui a remis le poignet à votre sœur? 22. Le Dr. G. le lui a remis. 23. M. votre père ne s'est-il pas démis le bras droit ce matin? 24. Il ne se l'est pas démis; il se l'est cassé ce matin à cinq heures.

EXERCISE 182.

1. Has not Dr. L. resigned his place? 2. He has not resigned it. 3. He would resign it if he went to Germany. 4. Are you obliged to resign your place? 5. I am not obliged to resign it. 6. Has your cousin dislocated his arm? 7. He has not dislocated his arm, but his shoulder. 8. Who set it for him? 9. Doctor F. set it for him. 10. Has not your mother dislocated her wrist? 11. She has not dislocated her wrist; she has broken her arm. 12. Has the enemy seized the town? 13. The enemy has seized the town. 14. Will not some one lay hold of your hat, if you leave it here? 15. Some one will lay hold of it. 16. How has your son behaved this morning? 17. He behaved very well. 18. He always behaves properly. 19. Do you not trouble yourself uselessly (*inutilement*)? 20. I do not trouble myself at all (*du tout*). 21. Did you expect such treatment from (*de la part de*) your son? 22. I did not expect such treatment from him (*de sa part*). 23. Does that young lady behave well towards her mother? 24. She behaves well towards everybody. 25. Will you behave better in future? 26. We will behave well. 27. Have you broken your finger (*doigt*)? 28. I have broken my thumb (*pouce*). 29. Could you help going to sleep (*de dormir*)? 30. We could not help smiling. 31. My sisters could not help

laughing. 32. Why are you uneasy? 33. Because (*parce que*) my son does not behave well. 34. Did your father expect to be well treated? 35. He expected to be treated properly. 36. We did not expect such an answer.

SECTION XCIV.

1. **N'importe**, an ellipsis of **il n'importe**, answers to the English expression "*no matter*," *it does not matter, never mind* :—
 Donnez-moi un livre, n'importe *Give me a book, no matter which.*
 lequel.

2. **Qu'importe**? answers to the English phrase *what matter?* *What does it matter?* When that expression is followed by a plural subject, the verb **importer** is put in the plural :—

Que nous importent leurs murmures? *What do we care for their murmurs?*

3. **N'est-ce pas**? corresponds to the English expressions, *is it not?* *is he not?* &c., *do they not?* following an assertion :—

Il fait froid; n'est-ce pas? *It is cold; is it not?*

4. **N'est-ce pas**? frequently precedes the assertion, and is then followed by **que** :—

N'est-ce pas que votre frère est arrivé? *Your brother is come, is he not?*

5. **Regarder**, *to look at*, is used in the sense of *to concern* :—

Cela regarde votre frère. *That concerns your brother.*

6. **En vouloir** (3. ir.) **à quelqu'un, à quelque chose**, means *to have a design against or upon; a grudge against any one: to be angry with any one on account of something* :—

Il en veut à notre vie. *He has a design against our life.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Pourvu que vous veniez, n'importe par quel chemin.	<i>Provided you come, no matter which way.</i>
Pourvu qu'il le fasse, n'importe comment.	<i>Provided he does it, no matter how.</i>
Apportez-moi quelque chose, n'importe quoi.	<i>Bring me something, no matter what.</i>
J'en mourrai; n'importe.	<i>I shall die through it; no matter.</i>
Il n'est pas satisfait; qu'importe?	<i>He is not satisfied with it; what matters it?</i>
Il refuse nos présents; qu'importe?	<i>He refuses our presents; what does it matter?</i>
Que nous importe cette affaire?	<i>What do we care for that affair?</i>
Que vous importe son arrivée?	<i>What is his arrival to us?</i>
Vous viendrez; n'est-ce pas? }	<i>You will come; will you not?</i>
N'est-ce pas que vous viendrez? }	
Est-ce que cela me regarde?	<i>Does that concern me? Is that anything to me?</i>
Cela ne regarde personne.	<i>That concerns nobody. That is nobody's business.</i>
Il en veut à nos biens.	<i>He has a design upon our property.</i>
Il en veut à nos amis.	<i>He has a grudge against our friends.</i>
Cela vous regarde-t-il?	<i>Is that your business?</i>

EXERCISE 183.

Accord-er, 1. <i>to grant.</i>	Hasard, m. <i>chance.</i>	Pouv-oir, 3. <i>ir. to be able.</i>
Approuv-er, 1. <i>to ap- prove.</i>	Loin, <i>far.</i>	
Auteur, m. <i>author.</i>	Moqu-er (se), 1. <i>ref. to laugh at.</i>	Sang, m. <i>blood.</i>
Bien, <i>very.</i>	Murmure, m. <i>murmur.</i>	Va, <i>from aller, to go.</i>
Condamn-er, 1. <i>to con- demn.</i>	Peu, <i>little.</i>	Velours, m. <i>velvet.</i>
Demande, f. <i>request.</i>	Plainte, f. <i>complaint.</i>	Vers-er, 1. <i>to pour, shed.</i>
		Vil, e, <i>vile.</i>

1. Que vous apporterai-je de Londres? 2. Apportez-nous ce que vous pourrez, n'importe quoi. 3. Lui avez-vous dit d'apporter du velours? 4. Je lui ai dit d'en apporter, n'importe de quelle qualité. 5. Pourvu que quelqu'un vienne, n'importe qui. 6. Que m'importe qu'Arnaud m'approuve ou me condamne? (BOILEAU.) 7. Vous accorde-t-il votre demande? 8. Il refuse; qu'importe? 9. Est-il satisfait des efforts que vous avez faits? 10. Il n'en est pas satisfait; qu'importe? 11. Il n'a pas voulu nous recevoir; peu m'importe. 12. Qu'importent les plaintes et les murmures des auteurs, si le public s'en moque? (FÉRAUD.) 13. Qu'importe qu'au hasard un sang vil soit versé? (RACINE.) 14. Cela vous regarde; n'est-ce pas? 15. Cela ne me regarde pas. 16. Cela ne regarde que moi. 17. Vous leur avez dit que ces affaires ne les regardaient pas; n'est-ce pas? 18. Vous m'en voulez; n'est-ce pas?—N'importe. 19. À qui en voulez-vous? 20. Nous n'en voulons à personne. 21. Nous ne vous en voulons pas. 22. Vous m'en voudrez; n'est-ce pas? 23. En voulez-vous à la vie de votre ami? 24. Je n'en veux pas à sa vie. 25. Il m'en veut; qu'importe? 26. Va, César est bien loin d'en vouloir à sa vie! (VOLTARE.)

EXERCISE 184.

1. Which way will your brother come? 2. Provided he comes to-morrow, it does not matter which way. 3. Will he write to your brother? 4. He will not write to him; but it is no matter. 5. Will you not lend me a book? 6. Which book do you wish to have? 7. No matter which. 8. Shall I bring you some silk from Paris? 9. Bring me what you can; no matter what. 10. Does that concern your brother? 11. That does not concern him, but it concerns me. 12. Does he refuse to write to us? 13. He refuses to (*de*) write; but what does it matter? 14. Bring me a book, no matter which. 15. Your brother will come, will he not? 16. Has he been willing to receive your brother? 17. He has refused to receive him, but no matter. 18. He is pleased, is he not? 19. He is not pleased, but it is no matter. 20. Is that your business? 21. It is my business. 22. It is my brother's business. 23. I have told you that it is nobody's business. 24. Has that man a design against your father's life? 25. He has no design against his life; but he has a design upon his property. 26. Are you angry with us on that account? 27. I am not angry

with you for this. 28. Have you a grudge against my friends? 29. I have no grudge against them. 30. That concerns you, does it not? 31. That concerns me. 32. Is that your business? 33. It is very warm this morning; is it not? 34. My sister will come this afternoon; will she not? 35. If she does not come, it does not matter. 36. What is her coming to us?

SECTION XCV.

1. The word **monde**, *world*, is often used in French in a restricted sense. It has then the meaning of *people, company, retinue, servants, &c.* :—

Y avait-il beaucoup de monde à l'église? *Were there many people at church?*

Se mettant à la tête de son monde, il ouvrit lui-même la porte. *Placing himself at the head of his people, he himself opened the door.*
VOLTAIRE.

2. The word **gens** also means *people*, and is of the masculine gender; but, by a singular anomaly, the adjectives which precede **gens** are put in the *feminine*, while those which follow it must be in the *masculine* gender :—

Ce sont les meilleures gens du monde. *They are the best people in the world.*

Ces gens sont fort dangereux. *Those people are very dangerous.*

3. The words **tout, tel, quel, certain**, not preceding immediately the word **gens**, are put in the masculine, except when the word coming between is an adjective having a different termination in the two genders :—

Tous ces gens-là étaient-ils chrétiens? *Were all those people Christians?*
PASCAL.

Tous ces gens-là sont sottement ingénieux. *All those people are foolishly ingenious.*
J. J. ROUSSEAU.

4. The words **tout, tel, quel, certain**, are put in the feminine when they precede immediately the word **gens**, or are separated from it by an adjective having a different termination in the feminine :—

Quelles gens êtes-vous? Quelles sont vos affaires? *What people are you? What is your business?*
RACINE.

Quelles bonnes gens! *What good people!*

However, when **tout**, although immediately preceding **gens**, refers to a noun masculine and not to **gens**, it is used in the masculine :—

Ces moines, tous gens de santé robuste. *Those monks, all of them men of robust health.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Après s'être fait craindre de tout le monde, il craignit tout le monde aussi. *After having inspired everybody with fear, he feared everybody.*
FLÉCHIER.

Il dit du mal de tout le monde. *He slanders everybody.*

Tout le monde le dit.
Avez-vous amené beaucoup de monde ?

Le monde n'est pas encore arrivé.
Il n'y avait pas grand monde.
Il y a du monde avec lui.
Il a congédié tout son monde.

Ce capitaine a tout son monde.
Voilà de sottes gens.
Il s'arrête chez les premières
bonnes gens qu'il trouve.

BOISTE.

Il y a à la ville, comme ailleurs,
de fort sottes gens, des gens
fautes, oisifs, désoccupés.

LA BRUYÈRE.

Quels braves gens !
Quelles viles et méchantes gens !

*Everybody says so.
Have you brought many people ?*

*The company is not yet come.
There were not many people there.
There is some person with him.
He has discharged all his servants
(people).*

*That captain has all his crew.
Those are foolish people.
He stops with the first good people
that he finds.*

*There are in the city, as elsewhere,
very silly people, tedious, idle,
unemployed people.*

*What worthy people !
What vile and wicked gens !*

EXERCISE 185.

Accommod-er (s'), 1. Équipage, m. *crew*. Rassembl-er, 1. *to bring*
ref. *to put up with*, Eveill-er, 1. *to awake*. together.
to agree with. Gens de lettres, m. Rev-ir, 2. *ir. to re-*
Attend-re, 4. *to await*, of letters. turn.
to expect. Gens d'épée, military Salon, m. *drawing-*
Bord (à), on board. men. room.
Campagne, f. *country*. Gens de robe, lawyers. Serv-ir, 2. *ir. to serve*.
Démêl-er, 1. *to settle*, Patron, m. *patron* Terre, f. *land, shore*.
arrange. saint. Voyag-er, 1. [§ 49] *to*
Dès que, *as soon as*. l'erd-re, 4. *to lose*. travel.

1. Avez-vous rassemblé beaucoup de monde chez vous ?
2. Il n'est venu que peu de monde. 3. À quelle heure
servira-t-on le dîner aujourd'hui ? 4. On le servira dès que
notre monde sera venu. 5. Le capitaine a-t-il tout son équipage
à bord ? 6. Non, Monsieur, il a envoyé du monde à terre. 7.
Vos gens se lèvent-ils de bonne heure ? 8. Il faut que tous les
jours j'éveille tout mon monde (MOLIÈRE). 9. Les Moscovites
perdirent trois fois plus de monde que les Suédois (VOLTAIRE).
10. Où est Madame votre mère ? 11. Elle est dans le salon,
il y a du monde avec elle (*company*). 12. Tout le monde peut
voyager comme moi (X. DE MAISTRE). 13. Ainsi va le monde.
14. Elle attend pour quitter le monde, que le monde l'ait
quittée (FLÉCHIER). 15. Vos gens sont-ils revenus de la cam-
pagne ? 16. Nous attendons nos gens aujourd'hui. 17. Y
a-t-il ici une société de gens de lettres ? 18. Non, Monsieur ;
il n'y a qu'une société de gens de robe. 19. Connaissiez-vous
ces braves gens ? 20. Je crois que ce sont des gens d'épée.
21. Tels sont les gens aujourd'hui. 22. Telles gens, tels
patrons (LA BRUYÈRE). 23. Tous mes gens sont malades. 24.
Il faut savoir s'accommoder de toutes gens (L'ACADÉMIE). 25.
Que pouvez-vous avoir à démêler avec de telles gens ?

EXERCISE 186.

1. Are there many people at your brother's? 2. There are not many people there. 3. Does that young man slander everybody? 4. He slanders nobody. 5. Have you brought many people with you? 6. We have brought but few people with us. 7. Is there company with your mother? 8. There is no company with her. 9. Who has told you that? 10. Everybody says so. 11. Is the company come? 12. The company is not yet come. 13. Has your mother discharged two servants (*domestiques*)? 14. She has discharged all her people. 15. Do you know those people? 16. I know them very well; they are very worthy people. 17. When he travels, he stops always with good people. 18. Are there foolish people here? 19. There are foolish people everywhere (*partout*). 20. Do you awake your people every morning? 21. Yes, Sir; I must awake them every day. 22. What can your brother have to settle with those people? 23. They are the best people in the world. 24. Were there many people at church this morning? 25. There were not many people there. 26. Are your people ill? 27. Yes, Sir; all my people are ill. 28. There is here a society of learned men. 29. There are in Paris several societies of lawyers. 30. What worthy people! 31. What good people! 32. Do you expect your people to-day? 33. We expect them this evening. 34. So goes the world. 35. Has your captain all his crew? 36. He has all his crew on board.

SECTION XCVI.

1. When property or possession is affirmed of things inanimate, the relation of possession is expressed by the relative pronoun **en** when the thing possessed is not in the same clause as the inanimate possessor [§ 92 (5)]:—

Voilà un bel arbre ; le fruit en est excellent. *That is a fine tree ; its fruit is excellent.*

2. When, however, the inanimate possessor and the thing possessed are in the same clause, the possessive adjective is used [§ 92, (4)]:—

Cet arbre a perdu son fruit. *That tree has lost its fruit.*

3. **Entendre**, *to hear*, is used in the sense of *to understand*. It is also used reflectively. It means then, *to be understood*, *to understand one's self*, or *one another*, or *to agree with one another*. It means also, *to be expert in anything*. In this latter sense it takes **à** before its object, which may be replaced by the pronoun **y**:—

Comment entendez-vous cela ? *How do you understand that ?*

Cela s'entend. *That is understood.*

Il s'entend aux affaires. *He is expert in business.*

4. **Se faire entendre** corresponds to the English, *to make one's self understood*, *to make one's self heard*:—

Nous nous sommes fait entendre. *We made ourselves understood, or heard.*

5. **Taire** [4. ir.] means, *to conceal, to keep to one's self.* **Se taire**, *ref., to be silent.*

Taisez-vous. Taisons-nous. *Be silent (hold your tongue).*

Let us be silent.

Dites-lui de se taire.

Tell him to be silent.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

L'auteur d'un bienfait est celui qui en reçoit les plus doux fruits. *The author of a good deed is the one who receives its sweetest fruits.* DUCLOS.

Votre jardin est magnifique ; les arbres en sont superbes. *Your garden is magnificent ; its trees are very beautiful.*

La vie a ses plaisirs et ses peines. *Life has its pleasures and its troubles.*

L'étude a ses charmes.

Study has its charms.

Entendez-vous bien le latin ?

Do you understand Latin well ?

Cet avoué n'entend rien aux affaires.

That attorney has no knowledge of business.

Il ne s'y entend pas.

He is not expert in this.

Je lui ai donné à entendre qu'il était de trop ici.

I gave him to understand that he was in the way here.

Qu'entendez-vous par là ?

What do you mean by that ?

Il y avait tant de bruit, que nous n'avons pu nous faire entendre.

There was so much noise, that we could not make ourselves heard.

Taisez le premier, ce que vous voulez qu'on taise.

Keep to yourself that which you would wish others to keep secret.

Pourquoi ne vous taisez-vous pas ?

Why are you not silent ?

Nous l'avons fait taire.

We made him hold his tongue (silenced him).

EXERCISE 187.

Agrément, m. *plea*. Chirurgien, m. *sur-* Manehe, f. *sheer*.
sure. *geou.* Mèl-er, 1. *to mix.*

Avantage, m. *advan-* Consent-ir, 2. ir. *to* Muet, te, *dumb, mute.*
tage. *consent.* Pays, m. *country.*

Basque, f. *skirt of a* Court, e, *short.* Raison, f. *reason.*
coat. Force, f. *force, power.* Réuss-ir, 2. *to succeed.*

Brave, *worthy.* Fort, *very.*

1. Est-ce un habit neuf que votre fils porte ? 2. C'est un habit neuf, le drap en est très fin. 3. Les manches n'en sont-elles pas trop courtes ? 4. Je crois que les manches en sont trop courtes et les basques trop longues. 5. La campagne n'a-t-elle pas ses avantages ? 6. J'aime la campagne ; j'en connais les avantages. 7. Paris a ses agréments. 8. J'aime Paris ; j'en connais les agréments. 9. Ce chirurgien s'entend-il à la médecine ? 10. Il n'y entend rien du tout. 11. Entendez-vous la médecine. 12. Je ne m'y entends pas. 13. Je ne l'entends pas. 14. Je n'y entends rien. 15. Avez-vous réussi à vous faire entendre ? 16. Nous n'y avons pas réussi. 17. Mon voisin est un brave homme, et je m'entends fort bien avec lui. 18. Faire taire certaines gens est un plus grand

miracle que de faire parler les muets (BALZAC). 19. Savez-vous de quel pays est cet homme? 20. Il tait son pays et sa naissance. 21. Par la force de la raison, elle apprit l'art de parler et de se taire (FLÉCHIER). 22. Voulez-vous vous taire, impertinente, vous venez toujours mêler vos impertinences à toutes choses (MOLIÈRE). 23. Qui se tait consent (PROVERB).

EXERCISE 188.

1. Have you a very good garden? 2. We have a very large one, but its soil (*terre*, f.) is not good. 3. Is your brother's coat new? 4. He has a new coat, but its sleeves are too short. 5. Are not its skirts too long? 6. No, Sir; its skirts are too short. 7. Have you not heard that preacher (*prédicateur*)? 8. There was so much noise, that I could not hear him. 9. Does not the country have its pleasures? 10. The country has its pleasures. 11. Does not your brother like the city? 12. He likes the country; he knows its pleasures. 13. What does your brother mean by that? 14. He means what he says. 15. Is your father expert in business? 16. My father has no knowledge of business. 17. Does that young man understand English well? 18. He understands French and English very well. 19. Do you agree well with your partner? 20. My partner is an honest man [§ 86]; I agree very well with him. 21. Does that young man conceal his age? 22. He conceals his age and his country. 23. Does your father understand medicine? 24. He does not understand it. 25. He has no knowledge of it. 26. Be silent, my child. 27. Tell that child to be silent. 28. Silence gives consent. 29. Will you not be silent? 30. What have you given him to understand? 31. We gave him to understand that study has its charms. 32. Have you silenced him? 33. Yes, Sir; we silenced him. 34. Tell him to be silent. 35. I have already (*déjà*) told him to be silent. 36. Let us be silent.

SECTION XCVII.

THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE.—THE VERBAL ADJECTIVE.

1. The present participle is invariable, and ends always in **ant**. It expresses action, not situation. It cannot be rendered into English by an adjective, but should be expressed by the participle present or any other tense preceded by a relative pronoun. The present participle may have an object [§ 66 (1)].

Ces hommes, prévoyant le danger, *Those men, foreseeing the danger,*
s'enfuirent. *fled.*

2. The part of the verb used after the preposition **en**, is always the present participle:—

En écrivant, en lisant.

In writing, in reading.

3. When the word ending in **ant** is used to express the qualities, properties, or moral or physical situation of a noun, it is a verbal adjective, and assumes in its termination the

gender and number of the noun which it qualifies. It must in this case be rendered into English by an adjective [§ 66 (2)] :—

Ces hommes sont prévoyants. *Those men are cautious, provident.*

4. The verbs **entendre**, *to hear* ; **faire**, *to cause, to make* ; **laisser**, *to let, &c.*, followed by another verb completing their meaning, are not in French separated from that verb. In the corresponding sentences in English, the two verbs are usually separated by other words :—

J'ai laissé tomber mon couteau. *I have let my knife fall (dropped).*
J'ai entendu dire cela. *I have heard that said.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Je connais des personnes dormant d'un sommeil si profond, que le bruit de la foudre ne les réveillerait pas. BESCHER.	<i>I know persons, sleeping (who sleep) so profoundly, that the noise of thunder would not awake them.</i>
Les eaux dormantes sont meilleures pour les chevaux que les eaux vives. BUFFON.	<i>Sleeping (still) waters are better for horses than running waters.</i>
Nous avons trouvé cette femme mourante.	<i>We found that woman dying.</i>
Cette femme mourant dans la crainte de Dieu, ne craignait point la mort.	<i>That woman, dying in the fear of God, did not fear death.</i>
On est heureux en se contentant de peu.	<i>One is happy in contenting one's self with little.</i>
Avez-vous laissé passer ce voleur ?	<i>Have you let that thief pass ?</i>
Je l'ai laissé passer.	<i>I let him pass.</i>
Pourquoi avez-vous fait faire un habit ?	<i>Why have you had a coat made ?</i>
Je n'ai pas fait faire d'habit.	<i>I have had no coat made.</i>
J'ai laissé tomber quelque chose.	<i>I let something fall.</i>
Lui avez-vous entendu dire cela ?	<i>Have you heard him say that ?</i>
Je le lui ai entendu dire.	<i>I heard him say it.</i>
Je l'ai entendu dire.	<i>I heard it said.</i>
Je l'ai entendu dire à ma sœur.	<i>I heard my sister say it.</i>

EXERCISE 189.

Appliqu-er (s'), 1.ref. <i>to apply one's self.</i>	Essay-er, 1. <i>to try.</i>	Prévenant, e, <i>obliging.</i>
Besoin, m. <i>want.</i>	Hât-er (se), 1. ref. <i>to hasten.</i>	Préven-ir, 2. ir. <i>to anticipate.</i>
Changement, m. <i>alteration.</i>	Lecture, f. <i>reading.</i>	Répét-er, 1. <i>to repeat.</i>
Émous-s-er, 1. <i>to blunt.</i>	Obligeant, e, <i>obliging.</i>	Suivant, e, <i>following.</i>
Empêch-er, 1. <i>to prevent.</i>	Plai-re, 4. ir. <i>to please.</i>	Suiv-re, 4. ir. <i>to follow.</i>
	Pleuv-oir, 3. ir. <i>to rain.</i>	Voyant, e, <i>bright, showy.</i>
	Pointe, f. <i>point.</i>	

1. Ma cousine est-elle aussi obligeante que la vôtre ? 2. Elle est aussi obligeante, et bien plus charmante que la mienne. 3. Vos enfants sont-ils prévenants ? 4. Mes enfants, prévenant tous mes besoins, ne me laissent rien à désirer. 5. Lisez bien attentivement les pages suivantes. 6. Ces demoiselles, suivant l'exemple de leur mère, s'appliquent à la lecture. 7. Les couleurs voyantes ne me plaisent point. 8. Mes sœurs,

voyant qu'il allait pleuvoir, se hâtèrent de revenir. 9. Qu'avez-vous laissé tomber? 10. J'ai laissé tomber ma plume; la pointe en est émoussée. 11. Les avez-vous fait parler? 12. Je les ai fait parler, mais avec difficulté. 13. Avez-vous fait faire des changements dans votre maison? 14. J'y en ai fait faire. 15. Où en avez-vous fait faire? 16. J'en ai fait faire à la salle à manger et au salon. 17. Avez-vous laissé passer cet homme? 18. Je n'ai pas essayé de l'en empêcher. 19. A qui (*whom*) avez-vous entendu dire cela? 20. Je l'ai entendu dire à mon père. 21. Je le lui ai entendu répéter. 22. Il vous l'a entendu dire. 23. Il vous a vu faire cela. 24. Il vous l'a vu faire. 25. Je l'ai vu passer.

EXERCISE 190.

1. Are still waters good for horses? 2. Buffon says that they are better for horses than running waters. 3. Are your sisters cautious? 4. They are not very cautious. 5. My sisters, foreseeing that it was going to rain, brought their umbrellas. 6. What have you let fall? 7. I have let my knife and book fall. 8. Do very bright colours please your brother? 9. Very bright colours do not please him. 10. Have you read the following pages? 11. Have you seen the dying woman? 12. Your sister, dying in the fear of God, was very happy. 13. Your sister, following your example, applies herself to study. 14. Have you made them read? 15. I have made them read and write. 16. I made my brother write. 17. I have had a book bound (*relier*). 18. Has your father had alterations made in his house? 19. He has had some made in it. 20. In which room has he had some made? 21. He has had some made in my brother's room. 22. Whom have you heard say that? 23. I heard my sister say it. 24. Have you heard him say that? 25. I have not heard him say it. 26. Have you seen my father pass? 27. I have not seen him pass. 28. I have heard him speak. 29. Make him speak. 30. Let it fall. 31. Do not let it fall. 32. What has your brother dropped? 33. He has dropped nothing. 34. Whom have you heard say that? 35. I heard your brother say it. 36. I have heard you repeat it. 37. We have seen you do that.

SECTION XCVIII.

THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE CONTINUED.

1. French present participles are *never* employed substantively to express an action. English present participles, when so used, are rendered in French—*a*, by nouns; *b*, by infinitives used substantively; *c*, by verbs in a personal mood* :—

- a. Gaming is a terrible passion. Le jeu est une passion terrible.*
b. Skating is a wholesome exercise. Patiner est un exercice salubre.

* The second verb is used in a personal mood when it has another subject than the first.

- b *Sleeping is necessary to health.* Le **dormir** est nécessaire à la santé.
 c *They came in without my seeing them.* Ils entrèrent sans que je les **visse**.

2. When the English present participle has an object, and is subject of *to be*, it is generally expressed in French by an infinitive preceded by **de**, the French sentence being introduced by **être** with **il** or **ce** as impersonal subject * :—

Doing that well is meritorious. **Il est méritoire de bien faire cela.**
Loving his parents is a good son's duty. **C'est le devoir d'un bon fils d'aimer ses parents.**

3. Used with a verb, a French present participle may refer to the subject or to the object. When the French present participle refers to the subject it may be preceded by the preposition **en** :—

He spoke to me while he was writing. **Il me parlait tout en écrivant.**
Being tired, I will go to bed directly. **Étant fatigué, je vais me coucher.**

But when the French present participle refers to the object of the verb to which it is joined, the preposition **en** † must never be placed before it; in this case a verb in the infinitive or in a personal mood may replace the present participle :—

I see her working. **Je la vois travailler.**
She perceived a child coming towards her. **Elle aperçut un enfant qui venait à elle.**

4. Many French present participles are used as nouns in reference to persons and things :—

There are many Protestants in France. **Il y a beaucoup de protestants en France.**
Your son has lost his shuttle-cock. **Votre fils a perdu son volant.**

5. When an English present participle follows the verb *to be*, it is translated into French in the same tense as *to be* is in English, but *to be* is left out :—

Your father is speaking to a gentleman. **Votre père parle à un monsieur.**

However, *to be* may be expressed in French, but the English participle is replaced by an infinitive preceded by the preposition **à**; this form frequently occurs in French in familiar conversation and letter-writing :—

His sister will be singing at that time. **Sa sœur sera à chanter à cette heure-là.**

* As to the use of **il est**, and of **c'est**, see Rule 1, Section 82.

† The preposition **en** is the only one which governs the present participle; all the others require the present or the past tense of the infinitive.

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

<i>Fishing is a pleasant pastime.</i>	La pêche est un passe-temps agréable.
<i>Travelling is instructive.</i>	Voyager est instructif.
<i>I like her speaking.</i>	J'aime son parler.
<i>The prisoner slipped away without their seeing him.</i>	Le prisonnier s'échappa sans qu'ils le vissent.
<i>Obeying him is necessary.</i>	Il est nécessaire de lui obéir.
<i>Complying with the laws is every citizen's duty.</i>	C'est le devoir de tout citoyen d'observer les lois.
<i>She was laughing while she was speaking to me.</i>	Elle riait tout en me parlant.
<i>Wishing to see you soon, I shall start to-morrow.</i>	Désirant vous voir bientôt, je partirai demain.
<i>Do you hear him singing?</i>	L'entendez-vous chanter?
<i>He descried three men coming towards him.</i>	Il aperçut trois hommes qui venaient à lui.
<i>The edge of a knife.</i>	Le tranchant d'un couteau.
<i>There were fifty thousand combatants.</i>	Il y avait cinquante mille combattants.
<i>I should be working if I were not ill.</i>	Je travaillerais si je n'étais pas malade.
<i>He was writing to you, when he received your note.</i>	Il était à vous écrire, quand il reçut votre billet.

EXERCISE 191.

Appris (from apprendre), learnt.	Escalier, m. stairs.	Regardez, look at.
Arroser, watering.	Etudier, studying.	Savoir nager, being able to swim.
Assemblée, f. meeting.	Eveillez, awake.	
Attendait (from attendre), was waiting for.	Fenêtre, f. window.	Se sépara, broke up.
Attendez, wait.	Fièvre, f. fever, ague.	Souffraient (ir. from souffrir), were suffering.
Broder, embroidering.	Habitants, m. inhabitants.	
Choux, m. cabbages.	Lire, reading.	Tard, late.
De, from.	Manger, eating.	Tout en, while.
Dort (ir. from dormir), sleeps.	Montaient, coming up.	Utile, useful.
Droit, right.	Penchant, m. inclination.	Ven-ir, 2. ir. coming.
Écoutant, listening.	Presque, almost.	Volant, stealing.
	Primes (ir. from prendre), caught.	Voyais (from voir), saw.

1. L'assemblée se sépara tard. 2. Savoir nager est utile. 3. Le manger est nécessaire à tous les animaux. 4. Regardez vos enfants, qui s'amuse dans le jardin. 5. Nous les avons entendus venir. 6. Ayant appris que mon père était ici, je suis parti immédiatement. 7. Il écrivait tout en m'écoutant avec attention. 8. Je les entendais qui montaient l'escalier en chantant. 9. De ma fenêtre je la voyais lire, arroser ses fleurs et broder. 10. Presque tous les habitants de cette ville souffraient de la fièvre. 11. Nous les primes volant nos choux. 12. Son penchant pour le jeu sera sa ruine. 13. Il dort, ne l'éveillez pas. 14. Elle est à étudier, attendez. 15. Il est aisé de le lui écrire. 16. C'est le droit et le devoir d'un père de corriger ses enfants.

EXERCISE 192.

<i>Beating</i> , battre.	<i>Hunting</i> , chasse, f.	<i>Success</i> , succès, m.
<i>Bell</i> , cloche, f.	<i>I attribute</i> , j'attribue.	<i>Teaching</i> , enseigner.
<i>Besiegers</i> , assiégeants.		<i>Telling</i> , dire.
<i>By herself</i> , toute seule.	<i>I will have</i> , je veux.	<i>To his knowing</i> , à ce qu'il connaît.
<i>Clapper</i> , battant, m.	<i>Laughing</i> , rire.	<i>Truth</i> , vérité, f.
<i>Climbing</i> , grim pant sur.	<i>Meet</i> , rencontrer.	<i>Upright</i> , honnête.
<i>Drinking</i> , le boire.	<i>Minister</i> , ministre, m.	<i>Walking</i> , se promener.
<i>Given</i> , donné.	<i>Money</i> , argent, m.	<i>Weak</i> , faible.
<i>Heard</i> , entendions.	<i>Playing</i> , jouer.	<i>While</i> , en.
<i>He must have</i> , il lui faut.	<i>Receipt</i> , reçu, m.	<i>Whilst</i> , tandis que.
	<i>Reinforcements</i> , renforts, m.	<i>Writing</i> , écrire.

1. Hunting is a wholesome and pleasant pastime. 2. Teaching is difficult. 3. Drinking is necessary to man. 4. I attribute his success to his knowing the minister. 5. We heard them laughing. 6. I often read while walking. 7. Having given him his money, I will have a receipt. 8. We sometimes meet her walking by herself. 9. Did you see her going to the station? 10. They caught him climbing a tree, and stealing fruit. 11. The clapper of the bell has fallen. 12. He is weak, he must have stimulants. 13. Your brother is playing in the garden, whilst my cousin is writing her exercises. 14. The besiegers received reinforcements. 15. Telling the truth is an upright man's duty. 16. Beating that poor dog is cruel.

SECTION XCIX. [§ 130, 131.]

PRACTICAL SUMMARY OF THE RULES OF THE PAST PARTICIPLE.—I.

The participle past is VARIABLE under any of the following conditions :—

1. When employed as an adjective; in which case it agrees in gender and number with the noun which it qualifies, after which it is always placed * :—

Des livres imprimés.	<i>Printed books.</i>
Ces femmes paraissent bien abattues.	<i>Those women appear very dejected.</i>

2. When used in the formation of the tenses of passive verbs; when it always agrees with the *subject* :—

Elles sont bien reçues de tout le monde.	<i>They are well received by everybody.</i>
--	---

3. When employed in forming the compound tenses of neuter verbs having *être* as an auxiliary; in which instance, as in the preceding case, it agrees with the *subject* :—

Votre sœur est partie ce matin.	<i>Your sister went away this morning.</i>
---------------------------------	--

4. When employed in forming the tenses of active verbs

* The past participle *prétendu* is the only exception; it is placed before its noun : *La prétendue princesse*, the self styled princess.

having **avoir** as an auxiliary ; in which connexion it agrees not with the subject, but with the *direct object*, provided that object *precedes* the auxiliary :—

Les maisons que nous avons achetées. *The houses which we have bought.*

5. When used along with **être** in the formation of the compound tenses of pronominal reflective verbs, wherein the reflective pronoun is the direct object ; in which position it agrees with that *pronoun* or *direct object* :—

Ces dames se sont flattées. *Those ladies have flattered themselves.*

6. When used along with **être** (as in Rule 5) in the formation of the compound tenses of reciprocal and reflective verbs, in which the reflective pronoun is not the direct, but the indirect object ; in which event it agrees with the *direct object*, provided (as in Rule 4) that object *precedes* the auxiliary :—

Les histoires qu'ils se sont racontées. *The stories which they related to each other.*

Les chevaux que mon ami s'est donnés. *The horses which my friend has given to himself.*

7. When used along with **être** in the formation of the compound tenses of naturally pronominal verbs, in which case the past participle always agrees with the subject :—

Ma sœur s'est repentie. *My sister has repented.*

Leurs chevaux se sont cabrés. *Their horses have reared.*

8. However, the naturally pronominal verb **s'arroger** is an exception ; its reflective pronoun being indirect object, and this verb admitting of a direct object, its past participle agrees with the latter according to the rules given above :—

Les droits que votre sœur s'est arrogés. *The rights which your sister has arrogated to herself.*

9. When forming part of a compound tense of a verb governing a succeeding infinitive, it is at the same time preceded by a direct object which is represented as performing the action denoted by the infinitive ; in which condition it agrees with that direct object :—

Les dames que j'ai entendues chanter. *The ladies whom I heard sing (singing).*

10. When in a sentence containing the pronoun **en**, the participle is preceded by another object which is direct ; or, when being joined to an adverb of quantity, the latter precedes the auxiliary : in which cases it agrees with that *direct object* :—

Je les en ai avertis.

I have warned them of it.

Vous les en avez informés.

You have informed them of it.

Plus il a eu d'ennemis, plus il en a vaincus. *The more enemies he has had, the more he has conquered.*

11. When a past participle has for direct object the adverbial

phrase **le peu**, it agrees with the following noun, when **le peu** means *a small quantity* :—

Le peu de fortune que j'ai acquise *The little fortune I have acquired is enough for me.*

12. The past participles **coté** and **valu** only agree when taken in a figurative sense :—

Je ne regrette pas les peines que *I do not regret the trouble that*
cet ouvrage m'a coûtées. *work has cost me.*

Les honneurs que sa conduite lui *The honours his conduct pro-*
a valués. *duced him.*

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Vous avez des livres bien reliés.	<i>You have well bound books.</i>
Vos filles sont estimées.	<i>Your daughters are esteemed.</i>
Ces terres sont bien labourées.	<i>Those lands are well ploughed.</i>
Mes voisines sont tombées d'accord.	<i>My neighbours have come to an understanding.</i>
Elles sont venues nous trouver.	<i>They came to us.</i>
La victoire que nous avons remportée.	<i>The victory which we have gained.</i>
Les champs que vous avez labourés.	<i>The fields which you have ploughed.</i>
Vous vous êtes repentis de votre faute.	<i>You have repented of your fault.</i>
Elle s'est souvenue de sa promesse.	<i>She remembered her promise.</i>
Les soldats que j'ai vus passer.	<i>The soldiers whom I saw passing.</i>
Les musiciennes que j'ai entendues jouer.	<i>The musical ladies whom I heard playing.</i>
L'indiscrétion que nous nous sommes reprochée.	<i>The indiscretion with which we reproached one another.</i>
Les événements qu'elles se sont racontés.	<i>The events which they related to one another.</i>
Les fruits que j'en ai reçus.	<i>The fruits which I received from it.</i>
Plus il a eu d'amis, plus il en a trompés.	<i>The more friends he has had, the more he has deceived.</i>
Le peu de patience qu'il a montrée a suffi pour le faire réussir.	<i>The little patience he showed has sufficed to make him succeed.</i>
Quels avantages vous a valués les peines qu'il vous a coûtées ?	<i>What advantages have you derived from the troubles he has given you ?</i>

EXERCISE 193.

A l'ordinaire, <i>as usual</i> .	Fleur, <i>f. flower</i> .	Reproch-er (se), 1. <i>ref.</i>
Avert-ir, 2. <i>to warn</i> .	Malade, <i>sick person</i> .	to reproach one's self.
Boue, <i>f. mud</i> .	Merveille (à), <i>wonder</i> .	Rire, 4. <i>ir. to laugh</i> .
Coutume (de), <i>usually</i> ,	fully, perfectly.	Sérieux, <i>se, serious</i> .
<i>usual</i> .	Parven-ir, 2. <i>ir. to</i>	Souri-re, 4. <i>ir. to smile</i> .
Cueill-ir, 2. <i>to gather</i> .	<i>succeed</i> .	Suivant, <i>according to</i> .
Déchiff-rer, 1. <i>to decipher</i> .	Plus tôt, <i>sooner</i> , <i>car-</i>	Tomb-er, 1. <i>to fall</i> .
Décourag-er, 1. <i>to discourage</i> .	<i>lier</i> .	Trouv-er, <i>to find</i> .
	Port-er (se), 1. <i>to be</i> ,	Vol-er, 1. <i>to steal</i> .
	<i>to do</i> .	

1. Cette demoiselle ne se trouve-t-elle pas bien fatiguée ? 2. Elle est fatiguée et découragée. 3. Votre sœur est-elle allée à

P'église suivant sa coutume? 4. Ma mère et ma sœur y sont allées. 5. Votre sœur est-elle revenue plus tôt que de coutume? 6. Elle est revenue plus tard qu'à l'ordinaire. 7. Cette pauvre malade est-elle tombée? 8. Elle est tombée dans la boue. 9. Ma mère est-elle parvenue à déchiffrer ma lettre? 10. Elle n'y est pas parvenue. 11. Quelles fleurs avez-vous cueillies? 12. Les fleurs que j'ai trouvées sont plus belles que celles que vous m'avez envoyées. 13. Votre cousine ne s'est-elle pas bien portée? 14. Elle s'est portée à merveille. 15. De quel livre vous êtes-vous servie, Mademoiselle? 16. Je me suis servie du vôtre. 17. Nous nous sommes servies des nôtres. 18. Quelles fautes votre fils s'est-il reprochées? 19. Les fautes qu'il s'est reprochées ne sont pas sérieuses. 20. Les avez-vous vus rire? 21. Je les ai vus sourire. 22. Les avez-vous vus voler des fruits? 23. Je les ai vus voler des pommes. 24. Les avez-vous avertis de leurs fautes? 25. Je les en ai avertis. 26. Je ne les en ai pas avertis.

EXERCISE 194.

1. Are your books well bound? 2. They are well bound, and well printed. 3. Did not your little girl find herself discouraged? 4. She found herself tired, but not discouraged. 5. Have your sisters come to an understanding? 6. They have not come to an understanding. 7. My brothers have come to an understanding. 8. Who came to you? 9. Your friends came to us. 10. Is not your sister gone to church? 11. My sister is gone to church as usual. 12. Did your sister return sooner than usual? 13. My sister returned later than usual. 14. Are the fields which you have ploughed large? 15. The fields which I have bought are very large. 16. Where are the gentlemen whom you saw pass? 17. The ladies whom I heard sing are in their room. 18. Did your poor sister fall? 19. Did that poor sick woman fall in the mud? 20. Did your sister succeed in reading that book? 21. She succeeded in reading it. 22. Have you warned your sisters of their danger? 23. I have warned them of it. 24. I have not warned them of it. 25. What pen has your mother used? 26. She has used mine. 27. Have not those young ladies used my book? 28. They have not used it. 29. Has your mother been well? 30. She has been perfectly well. 31. Has she remembered her promise? 32. She has remembered it. 33. Have you seen those boys laugh? 34. I have seen them smile. 35. Have you seen them play? 36. I have heard them play.

SECTION C. [§ 130, 131.]

PRACTICAL SUMMARY OF THE RULES OF THE PAST PARTICIPLE.—II.

The participle past is INVARIABLE :—

1. In active verbs, when the direct regimen follows the participle :—

Mes nièces ont étudié leurs leçons. *My nieces have studied their lessons.*

Elles ont négligé leurs études. *They have neglected their studies.*

2. In neuter verbs conjugated with **avoir** :—

Mes cousines ont disparu.	<i>My cousins have disappeared.</i>
Les cinq heures qu'elles ont dormi.	<i>The five hours which they have slept.</i>

In the latter sentence, the word **pendant** is understood after **heures** :—

Les cinq heures <i>pendant lesquelles</i>	<i>The five hours during which they</i>
elles ont dormi.	<i>slept.</i>

3. In impersonal verbs, whether conjugated with **être** or with **avoir** :—

Les chaleurs qu'il a fait cette année.	<i>The heat there has been this year.</i>
Il est arrivé bien des malheurs.	<i>Many misfortunes have happened.</i>

4. In reflective or pronominal verbs, of which the second pronoun is an indirect object, when no direct object precedes :—

Elle s'est proposé de partir.	<i>She proposed to herself to leave.</i>
Elle s'est brûlé les doigts.	<i>She has burnt her fingers.</i>

5. When the participle precedes an infinitive, and is preceded by a direct object, which is not the actor, but the object acted upon.* In this case the infinitive is generally rendered in English by the passive voice :—

Les chansons que j'ai entendu chanter.	<i>The song, which I heard (being) sung.</i>
--	--

6. When the direct object preceding a participle is not the object of this participle, but of a verb following :—

La règle que je vous ai conseillé d'étudier.	<i>The rule which I advised you to study.</i>
--	---

7. The past participle of **faire**, **fait**, followed by an infinitive, is always invariable :—

Je les ai fait raccommoder.	<i>I have had them mended.</i>
-----------------------------	--------------------------------

8. After the pronoun **en**, when no direct object precedes; and, when joined to an adverb of quantity, the latter follows the auxiliary or the past participle :—

Vous a-t-on donné des fleurs ?	<i>Have they given you flowers ?</i>
On m'en a donné.	<i>They have given me some.</i>
Il n'avait plus de livres, mais il en a beaucoup acheté.	<i>He had no more books but he has bought many.</i>
Nous n'avions plus de chiens, mais nous en avons acheté plusieurs.	<i>We had no more dogs, but we have bought several.</i>

9. The past participles, **coûté** and **valu**, taken in their literal

* It follows from this rule, and No. 9, Section 99, that the agreement or non-agreement of the past participle, followed by an infinitive, considerably modifies the meaning of a sentence; e.g. : **Je les ai laissés punir**, with the participle agreeing with **les**, means, *I allowed them to punish*; whilst **je les ai laissé punir**, with the participle not agreeing with **les**, means *I allowed them to be punished*; that is literally, *I allowed (somebody understood) to punish them*. Students should bear this in mind when they translate French into English, or vice versa.

sense ; the past participles **dû**,* **voulu**,* and **pu**, at the end of a sentence, *when there is an infinitive understood*, never agree :—

Les mille francs que ce cheval m'a coûté, il ne les a jamais valu.	<i>That horse was never worth the thousand francs it cost me.</i>
Nous avons fait toutes les démarches que nous avons pu.	<i>We took all the steps we could (take).</i>
Ils n'ont pas rempli les devoirs qu'ils auraient dû.	<i>They have not fulfilled the duties they ought (to have fulfilled).</i>
Ils ont obtenu toutes les grâces qu'ils ont voulu.	<i>They have obtained all the favours they wished (to obtain).</i>

10. A past participle preceded and followed by **que**, or between **que** and **qui**; a past participle having for object **le peu**, meaning *lack*, *absence*, never agrees :—

La lettre que vous avez exigé que j'écrive.	<i>The letter you required me to write.</i>
Les marchandises que j'avais cru qui m'étaient expédiées, ne sont pas même commandées.	<i>The goods which I thought had been forwarded to me are not even ordered.</i>
Le peu de patience qu'il a eu l'a empêché de réussir.	<i>His lack of patience prevented his being successful.</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Elles nous ont donné de bons conseils.	<i>They have given us good advice.</i>
Elles nous en ont donné.	<i>They have given us some.</i>
Les trois lieues qu'il a couru.	<i>The three leagues which he ran.</i>
Les années que ces édifices ont duré.	<i>The years that those edifices have lasted.</i>
La belle journée qu'il a fait hier !	<i>What a beautiful day it was yesterday !</i>
C'est la plus belle fête qu'il y ait eu.	<i>It is the finest feast that there has been.</i>
Il s'est présenté deux de vos amis.	<i>There appeared two of your friends.</i>
Ces demoiselles se sont nuï.	<i>Those young ladies have injured one another.</i>
Les Asiatiques se sont fait une espèce d'art de l'éducation de l'éléphant. BUFFON.	<i>The Asiatics have made the education of the elephant a kind of art.</i>
Elle s'est imaginé qu'elle pourrait réussir.	<i>She conceived the idea that she might succeed.</i>
Les fruits que j'ai vu voler.	<i>The fruits which I saw being stolen.</i>
Les soldats blessés que j'ai vu porter.	<i>The wounded soldiers whom I saw (being) carried.</i>
La chanson que j'ai entendu chanter.	<i>The song which I heard sung.</i>
Les pommes que je vous ai défendu de manger.	<i>The apples which I forbade you to eat.</i>

* When there is no infinitive understood, the past participles **dû** and **voulu** agree with their direct object :—

J'ai enfin reçu la somme qu'ils m'ont due si longtemps.	<i>I have at last received the sum they had been owing to me so long.</i>
Je lui ai donné toutes les sommes qu'il a voulues.	<i>I have given him all the sums he wanted.</i>

Je les ai fait partir.	<i>I obliged them to leave.</i>
Elles m'ont apporté des oranges.	<i>They have brought me oranges.</i>
Elles m'en ont apporté.	<i>They have brought me some.</i>
Je regrette les quinze francs que ce cachet m'a coûté.	<i>I regret the fifteen francs this seal cost me.</i>
Il ne les a jamais valu.	<i>It was never worth it.</i>
Je lui ai rendu tous les services que j'ai pu.	<i>I have done him all the services I could.</i>
Les marchandises que j'ai su que vous aviez reçues.	<i>The goods which I knew you had received.</i>
Voilà la lettre que j'ai cru qui vous était parvenue.	<i>Here is the letter which I thought had reached you.</i>
Le peu de constance qu'il a montré l'a fait échouer.	<i>The lack of constancy he showed caused him to fail.</i>

EXERCISE 195.

Auberge, f. <i>inn.</i>	Enterr-er, 1. <i>to bury.</i>	Pièce, f. <i>pièce.</i>
Bien, m. <i>good.</i>	Habill-er, 1. <i>to dress.</i>	Racont-er, 1. <i>to relate.</i>
Derni-er, ère, <i>last.</i>	Jou-er, 1. <i>to play.</i>	Reven-ir, 2. <i>ir. to re-</i>
Disparaît-re, 4. <i>ir. to disappear.</i>	Lion d'or, m. <i>Golden Lion.</i>	turn.
Dorm-ir, 2. <i>to sleep.</i>	Mort, e, <i>dead.</i>	Soieries, <i>silk goods.</i>

1. Quelle auberge vous a-t-on recommandée? 2. On m'a recommandé l'auberge du Lion d'or. 3. Quelles nouvelles avez-vous apportées? 4. J'ai apporté des nouvelles agréables. 5. Vos voisines sont-elles habillées? 6. Elles ne sont pas encore habillées. 7. Ont-elles bien dormi la nuit dernière? 8. Elles n'ont pas bien dormi. 9. Quand sont-elles arrivées? 10. Elles sont arrivées à quatre heures et demie. 11. Ont-elles dormi plus de cinq heures? 12. Les six heures qu'elles ont dormi leur ont fait beaucoup de bien. 13. Vos sœurs se sont-elles amusées? 14. En jouant elles se sont fait mal au bras. 15. Se sont-elles raconté notre conversation? 16. Elles se la sont racontée. 17. Vos amies ont-elles disparu? 18. Elles n'ont pas disparu; elles sont revenues chez elles. 19. Les soldats que vous avez vus partir sont-ils revenus? 20. Ils sont morts; je les ai vu enterrer. 21. Ne les avez-vous pas fait étudier? 22. Je les ai fait lire. 23. Avez-vous apporté des soieries? 24. Je n'en ai pas apporté. 25. Les soieries que j'en ai apportées sont superbes.

EXERCISE 196.

1. Have you not recommended my nieces? 2. I have recommended them. 3. Have you brought me good oranges? 4. I have brought you some. 5. Have you given any to my two daughters? 6. I have given them some. 7. I would have given them some if I had had many. 8. Have you not neglected your studies? 9. I have not neglected them; I never neglect them. 10. The years which that church has lasted, speak in favour (*en faveur*) of the architect. 11. The ten miles which he has run, have fatigued him. 12. Have your sisters injured each other? 13. They have flattered themselves. 14. Did my friends present themselves? 15. There

came three of your sisters. 16. What did they imagine? 17. She conceived the idea of reading Tasso (*Le Tasse*). 18. Have you seen them (m.) steal my apples? 19. I saw them steal your peaches. 20. Have you heard them (f.) sing? 21. I have heard them sing. 22. The songs which I heard sung are not new. 23. I found in your room the books which I had forbidden you to take. 24. The peaches which I have forbidden you to eat are not ripe (*mûres*). 25. Have you seen those soldiers? 26. I saw them pass last week. 27. I saw them carried to the hospital (*à l'hôpital*) this morning. 28. Have you brought oranges from France? 29. I brought some. 30. The oranges which I brought from it (*en*) are good. 31. Have you brought silk goods? 32. I have brought some. 33. I have brought none.

SECTION CI.

THE PAST PARTICIPLE USED SUBSTANTIVELY.

1. Like present participles, French past participles are used substantively in reference to persons and inanimate objects. In the latter case they are of either gender, but most of them feminine; in the former they assume the gender indicated by their meaning:—

Les vaincus furent traités avec respect.	<i>The conquered were respectfully treated.</i>
Sa prétendue est riche.	<i>His future wife is rich.</i>
On vient d'apporter le mort.	<i>They have just brought the dead man.</i>
Mes protégées sont là.	<i>The ladies I patronise are here.</i>
Donnez-moi un reçu de cet argent.	<i>Give me a receipt for that money.</i>
À la tombée de la nuit.	<i>At nightfall.</i>
Ce sont de belles pensées.	<i>These are beautiful thoughts.</i>
Ces faits sont bien connus.	<i>Those facts are well known.</i>

MISCELLANEOUS EXAMPLES.

Ce parvenu est fort importun.	<i>This upstart is very troublesome.</i>
Les deux mariées sont fort belles.	<i>The two brides are beautiful.</i>
Après la bataille on porta secours aux blessés.	<i>After the battle they attended the wounded.</i>
Les exilées supportaient leur sort avec fermeté.	<i>The exiled ladies bore their fate with firmness.</i>
Le fini d'un tableau.	<i>The finish of a picture.</i>
La crue de la rivière.	<i>The rise of the river.</i>
Il a passé la nuit dans les tranchées.	<i>He spent the night in the trenches.</i>
Il a deux coups.	<i>He has two broughams.</i>

EXERCISE 197.

Arrêté, <i>arrested.</i>	Enterra, <i>buried.</i>	On, <i>they.</i>
Arrivée, f. <i>arrival.</i>	Étonna, <i>astonished.</i>	Parut (from paraître), <i>appeared.</i>
Bientôt, <i>soon.</i>	Fort, adv. <i>very.</i>	Prétendu, adj. <i>sham.</i>
Champ de bataille, m. <i>battle-field.</i>	Gardées, <i>guarded.</i>	Tiroir, m. <i>drawer.</i>
Condamné, m. <i>convict.</i>	Intéressantes, <i>interesting.</i>	Trouverez, <i>will find.</i>
Couvert (from couvrir), <i>covered.</i>		

1. Le champ de bataille était couvert de morts. 2. Le prétendu général fut bientôt arrêté. 3. L'arrivée du ministre nous étonna. 4. C'est un fait bien connu. 5. Les tranchées étaient bien gardées. 6. On enterra la morte immédiatement. 7. Le condamné parut. 8. Mes petites protégées sont fort intéressantes. 9. Vous trouverez leurs reçus dans votre tiroir.

EXERCISE 198.

<i>Broken</i> , cassé.	<i>Fire</i> , feu, m.	<i>Still</i> , encore.
<i>Doctor</i> , docteur, m.	<i>In spite</i> , malgré.	<i>Turned out</i> , mis à la
<i>Do you know</i> , connais- sez-vous.	<i>No</i> (before a noun), pas de.	porte.
<i>Enemy</i> , ennemi, m.	<i>Opened</i> , ouvrirent.	<i>Were lying</i> , gisaient.
		<i>Work</i> , ouvrage, m.

1. They opened the trench in spite of the enemy's fire. 2. You will find beautiful thoughts in that work. 3. His brougham is broken. 4. These facts astonished us. 5. The sham doctor was soon turned out. 6. The dead and wounded were still lying on the battle-field. 7. Do you know that upstart? 8. Have you seen the bride? 9. The exiled ladies had no fortune.

SECTION CII.

EXAMPLES ILLUSTRATING THE VARIOUS USES OF THE PRINCIPAL CONJUNCTIONS.

À MOINS QUE.

Il n'en fera rien, à moins que vous ne lui parliez.	<i>He will do nothing of the kind, unless you speak to him.</i>
À moins que vous ne preniez bien votre temps, vous n'en viendrez pas à bout.	<i>Unless you choose your time well, you will not accomplish it.</i>
Quel indigne plaisir peut avoir l'avarice?	<i>What unworthy pleasure can avarice offer?</i>
Et que sert d'amasser, à moins qu'on en jouisse?	<i>What is the use of hoarding up unless we enjoy?</i>

BOURSAULT.

AUSSI.

Aussi ils n'ont aucune force pour le posséder sûrement.	<i>Therefore, they have no strength to possess it safely.</i>
PASCAL.	
Ma douleur serait trop médiocre, si je pouvais la dépeindre; aussi je ne l'entreprendrai pas.	<i>My grief would be too trifling if I could depict it; so that I will not undertake it.</i>
MME. DE SEVIGNÉ.	

AU RESTE.

C'est ce qu'il y a de plus sage; au reste, c'est aussi ce qu'il y a de plus juste.	<i>This is the wisest way; besides, it is also the most just.</i>
--	---

MARMONTEL.

CAR.

Voilà les périls, voici le moyen de les éviter ; car enfin, le bras de Dieu n'est pas raccourci.

MASSILLON.

Le peuple se figure une félicité imaginaire dans les situations élevées, où il ne peut atteindre, et il croit (car tel est l'homme) que tout ce qu'il ne peut avoir, c'est cela même qui est le bonheur qu'il cherche.

MASSILLON.

Those are the dangers, this is the way of avoiding them ; for finally, the influence of God is not less powerful.

The people picture to themselves an imaginary happiness in elevated stations which they cannot reach, and they believe (for such is man) that all that they cannot obtain, forms the very happiness which they seek.

COMME—QUE.

Comme l'ambition n'a pas de frein, et que la soif des richesses nous consume tous, il en résulte, que le bonheur nous fuit à mesure que nous le cherchons. TH. CORNEILLE.

La reconnaissance est le plus doux, comme le plus saint des devoirs. THOMAS.

Comme il sonna la charge, il sonne la retraite.

LA FONTAINE.

As ambition has no limits, and as the thirst of riches devours us all, the result is, that happiness avoids us as we proceed in our search after it.

Gratitude is the sweetest as well as the holiest of duties.

As he sounded the charge, so he sounds the retreat.

DONC.

Votre maître vous aime ; donc, vous devez l'aimer.

Je suis donc un témoin de leur peu de puissance. RACINE.

Et d'où peut donc venir ce changement extrême ?

VOLTAIRE.

Si ce n'est toi, c'est donc ton frère.—Je n'en ai pas.—C'est donc quelqu'un des tiens.

LA FONTAINE.

Allons donc ! répondit-on, et la transaction n'eut pas lieu.

DE CUSSEY.

Your master loves you ; therefore you should love him.

I am, therefore, a witness of their want of power.

Whence, therefore, can this extreme change proceed ?

If it is not you, then it is your brother.—I have none.—Then it must be some one of your family.

"Nonsense !" replied they, and the affair did not take place.

DE MÊME QUE.

De même que le soleil brille sur la terre, de même le juste brillera dans les cieux.

L'ACADÉMIE.

As the sun shines upon earth, so will the just shine in heaven.

ET.

C'est être faible et timide que d'être inaccessible et fier.

MASSILLON.

Une famille vertueuse est un vaisseau tenu pendant la

To be inaccessible and proud is to be weak and timid.

A virtuous family is a vessel strengthened during the tem-

tempête par deux ancres, la religion et les mœurs.

C'HATEAUBRIAND.

Quel carnage de toutes parts !
On égorge à la fois les enfants,
les vieillards,
Et la sœur et le frère,
Et la fille et la mère,
Les fils dans les bras de son père.

RACINE, "Esther."

pest by two anchors, religion and morals.

What carnage on all sides !

They murder at once the children and the old men, the sister and the brother, the daughter and the mother, the son in the arms of his father.

LORSQUE—QUAND.

Lorsque l'innocence habitait la terre.

BOSSUET.

Quand vous me haïriez, je ne m'en plaindrais pas.

RACINE.

Quand nous n'aurions égard qu'au repos seul de notre vie, quand nous n'aurions point d'autre intérêt ici-bas que de nous préparer des jours heureux, quel bonheur de prévenir d'avance et d'étouffer dans leur naissance tant de passions violentes.

MASSILLON.

When innocence inhabited the earth.

If even you hated me I would not complain.

If even we considered merely the repose of our lives, if even we had no other interest here than to prepare for ourselves happy days, what happiness it would be, to prevent beforehand, to stifle in their birth, so many violent passions.

MAIS.

C'était déjà la puissance impériale qu'on lui a vue depuis, mais avec l'assentiment universel des peuples, avec des formes moins royales, mais plus dignes peut-être.

THIERS.

L'harmonie ne frappe pas simplement l'oreille, mais l'esprit.

BOILEAU.

C'est un parti sage à la guerre de se tenir sur la défensive, mais ce n'est pas le plus brillant.

LA ROCHEFOUCAULD.

Il n'y a point de mais qui tienne ; je ne donnerai point ma fille à un muet.

BRUEYS.

It was already the imperial power of which we have since seen him possessed, but with the consent of the people, with forms less regal, but perhaps more dignified.

Harmony does not only strike the ear, but the mind.

To keep on the defensive is a wise course in war, but it is not the most brilliant.

There is no "but" in the matter ; I will not give my daughter to a mute.

XI.

Heureux celui qui sait se contenter de peu ! Son sommeil n'est troublé ni par les craintes, ni par les désirs honteux de l'avarice.

TRAD. D'HORACE.

Vous perdez ainsi la confiance de vos amis, sans les avoir rendus ni meilleurs ni plus habiles.

VOLTAIRE.

On n'est jamais si heureux, ni si malheureux qu'on se l'imagine.

LA ROCHEFOUCAULD.

Happy is he who can content himself with little ! His sleep is disturbed neither by the fear, nor the shameful desires of avarice.

You lose thus the confidence of your friends without having rendered them either better or more skilful.

We are never so happy nor so unhappy as we fancy.

Cette loi sainte ne connaît plus
ni pauvre, ni riche, ni noble,
ni roturier, ni maître, ni es-
clave. MASSILLON.

*That holy law knows no longer
either poor or rich, noble or
plebeian, master or slave.*

OR.

Or sus, mettons-nous à l'ouvrage.
Or ça, Gil Blas, me dit-il un
jour, le temps de ton enfance
est passé. LE SAGE.

*Now, then, let us go to work.
"Now, then, Gil Blas," said he
to me one day, "the time of
your childhood is over."*

OU.

La fortune, soit bonne ou mau-
vaise, soit passagère ou con-
stante, ne peut rien sur l'âme
du sage. MARMONTEL.

*Fortune, be it good or bad, be it
transient or constant, has no
power over the soul of the wise.*

La liberté de publier ses pen-
sées, ou la liberté de la presse,
doit être réglée sur la liberté
même d'agir.

*The liberty of publishing one's
thoughts, or the liberty of the
press, should be regulated upon
the liberty of action itself.*

B. DE ST. PIERRE.

PARCE QUE.

Les grands hommes entrepren-
nent de grandes choses parce
qu'elles sont grandes, et les
fous parce qu'ils les croient
faciles. VAUVENARGUES.

*Great men undertake great
things because they are great ;
and fools because they believe
them easy.*

Là tout est beau, parce que tout
est vrai. J. J. ROUSSEAU.

*Everything there is beautiful, be-
cause everything is true.*

POURTANT.

Le style le moins noble a pour-
tant sa noblesse. BOILEAU.

*The least elevated style has,
nevertheless, its elevation.*

PUISQUE.

Pourquoi le demander, puisque
vous le savez ? RACINE.

*Why ask about it, since you know
it !*

Ne vous lassez jamais d'exa-
miner les causes des grands
changements ; puisque rien ne
servira jamais tant à votre in-
struction. BOSSUET.

*Never be weary of examining into
the causes of great changes ; for
nothing will ever be of so much
service to your instruction.*

Puisque vous le voulez, je vais
changer de style. BOILEAU.

*Since you will have it so, I will
change my style.*

QUE.

Jamais on ne vit un si grand
exemple, que le courage n'est
point incompatible avec la
mollesse. VOLTAIRE.

*Never was such a striking exam-
ple seen, that courage is not in-
compatible with effeminaey.*

Nous n'avons que peu de temps
à vivre, et loin d'en profiter,
nous ne cherchons qu'à le
perdre. LAVEAUX.

*We have but little time to live,
and instead of improving it, we
only seek to waste it.*

A quoi vous servira d'avoir de l'esprit, si vous ne l'employez pas, et que vous ne vous appliquiez pas? BOSSUET.

Toutefois, que sert-il de me justifier? RACINE.

Qu'il fasse ce qu'il lui plaira. Que le monde est grand! Qu'il est magnifique! MASSILLON.

Que de beaux jours n'ont pas de beaux soirs! BOISTE.

Sais-tu quelque chose de plus?

Oh! que oui. BRIEYS.

C'est une maladie d'esprit, que de souhaiter des choses impossibles. FÉNELON.

Il n'y aura jamais de meilleur directeur que l'Evangile.

GANGANELLI.

La véritable conversion du cœur fait autant aimer Dieu qu'on a aimé les créatures.

PASCAL.

Crois-tu que dans son cœur, il ait juré ta mort? RACINE.

Ce n'est pas que j'eusse mieux fait que vous.

MME. DE SÉVIGNÉ.

Il a fallu que mes malheurs m'aient instruit, pour m'apprendre ce que je ne voulais pas croire. FÉNELON.

QUOIQUE—QUOI . . . QUE.

Quoique Dieu et la nature aient fait tous les hommes égaux en les formant d'une même boue, la vanité humaine ne peut souffrir cette égalité.

BOSSUET.

Quoi que vous écriviez, évitez la bassesse. BOILEAU.

Quoi que ce soit qu'elle dise, elle ne me persuadera pas.

GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.

Of what use will be your wit, if you do not employ it, and do not apply yourselves?

However, what is the use of justifying myself?

Let him do what he pleases.

How great is the world! How magnificent!

How many fine days have not beautiful evenings!

Do you know anything more?

That, I do.

Wishing for impossible things is a disease of the mind.

There will never be any better guide than the Gospel.

The true conversion of the heart makes us love God as much as we have loved the creatures.

Do you believe that he has sworn your death in his heart?

It is not that I might have done better than you.

It was necessary that my misfortunes should instruct me, to teach me what I would not believe.

Although God and nature have made all men equal in forming them from the same earth, human vanity cannot bear that equality.

Whatever you may write, avoid baseness.

Whatever she may say, she will not persuade me.

SI.

Si vous le vouliez, nous partirions ensemble.

Si vous le prenez sur ce ton, je me retire.

Nul empire n'est sûr, s'il n'a l'amour pour base. RACINE.

S'il le faut, nous partirons.

Votre esprit a toujours en réserve quelque si, quelque mais.

DESTOUCHES.

If you wished it we would go together.

If you go on in this way, I withdraw.

No empire is safe, unless it has affection for its basis.

If it must be so, we will go.

Your mind has always in reserve some 'if,' some 'but.'

SINON.

Ils répondirent, qu'il fallait rétablir l'équilibre européen rompu, qu'il fallait le rétablir sinon sur le continent, où il était tout à fait détruit, au moins sur l'Océan.

THIERS.

They replied, that it was necessary to re-establish the disturbed European balance; that it was necessary to restore it, if not on the continent, where it was entirely destroyed, at least on the ocean.

SOIT.

Soit qu'il le fasse, soit qu'il ne le fasse pas.

Soit la hardiesse de l'entreprise, soit la seule présence de ce grand homme, soit la protection visible du ciel, il étonne par sa résolution.

FLÉCHIER.

Soit en bien, soit en mal, mon ami, la prudence dit, qu'il faut rarement juger sur l'apparence.

CHÉRON.

Vous le voulez? ainsi soit-il!

Un mal funeste et contagieux se répandit dans les principales villes de la Normandie; soit que l'intempérie des saisons eût laissé dans les airs quelque maligne impression, soit qu'un commerce fatal eût apporté des pays éloignés, avec de fragiles richesses, des semences de maladie et de mort, soit que l'ange de Dieu eût étendu la main pour frapper cette malheureuse province.

FLÉCHIER.

Whether he does it, whether he does it not.

Be it the boldness of the enterprise, be it the presence alone of this great man, be it the visible protection of heaven, he astonishes by his resolution.

Be it for good, be it for evil, my friend, prudence says, that we must rarely judge from appearances.

You will have it so! So be it!

A fatal and contagious disease spread in the principal cities of Normandy, be it that the inclemency of the season had left in the air some malignant impression, be it that a fatal commerce had brought from distant countries, with perishable riches, the seeds of disease and death, be it that the angel of God had stretched forth his hand to smite that unfortunate province.

SECTION CIII.

The following is a list of the most usual abbreviations employed in French:—

ABBREVIATIONS.

A. P. À protester.
A. S. P. Accepté sous protêt.
A. S. P. C. Accepté sous protêt pour à compte.
B^{on}. Baron.
C^{he}. Chevalier.
C^{te}. Comte.
C^{tesse}. Comtesse.
D^r. Docteur.
D^r. Mⁿ. Docteur-médecin.
E. Est.

MEANINGS.

To be protested.
Accepted under protest.
Accepted under protest on account.
Baron.
Chevalier, knight, sir.
Count.
Countess.
Doctor.
Doctor of medicine.
East.

ABBREVIATIONS.	MEANINGS.
J.-C. Jésus-Christ.	<i>Jesus Christ.</i>
LL. AA. II. Leurs Altesses Impé- riales.	<i>Their Imperial Highnesses.</i>
LL. AA. RR. Leurs Altesses Royales.	<i>Their Royal Highnesses.</i>
LL. AA. SS. Leurs Altesses Sérenissimes.	<i>Their Most Serene Highnesses.</i>
LL. Ém. Leurs Eminences.	<i>Their Eminences.</i>
LL. Ex. Leurs Excellences.	<i>Their Excellencies.</i>
LL. III. Leurs Hautesses.	<i>Their Highnesses.</i>
LL. MM. Leurs Majestés.	<i>Their Majesties.</i>
LL. MM. II. Leurs Majestés Impé-riales.	<i>Their Imperial Majesties.</i>
LL. MM. RR. Leurs Majestés Royales.	<i>Their Royal Majesties.</i>
M. ou Mr. Monsieur.	<i>Sir, Mr.</i>
M. A. Maison assurée.	<i>House insured.</i>
M. A. C. I. Maison assurée contre l'incendie.	<i>House insured against fire.</i>
M ^d . Marchand.	<i>Dealer, shopkeeper, m.</i>
M ^{de} . Marchande.	<i>Dealer, shopkeeper, f.</i>
M ^{gr} . Monseigneur.	<i>My lord.</i>
Mis. Marquis.	<i>Marquis.</i>
Misc. Marquise.	<i>Marchioness.</i>
Mlle. Mademoiselle.	<i>Miss.</i>
MM. Messieurs.	<i>Messrs., Gentlemen.</i>
M ^{me} . Madame.	<i>Madam, Mrs.</i>
Mst. Manuscrit.	<i>Manuscript.</i>
M ^{re} . Maître.	<i>Master.</i>
N. B. Nota bene.	<i>Nota Bene.</i>
N.-D. Notre-Dame.	<i>Our Lady.</i>
N.-N.-E. Nord-nord-est.	<i>North north-east.</i>
N.-N. O. Nord-nord-ouest.	<i>North-north-west.</i>
N ^o . Numéro.	<i>Number.</i>
N.-S. Notre-Seigneur.	<i>Our Lord.</i>
N.-S. J. C. Notre-Seigneur-Jésus- Christ.	<i>Our Lord Jesus Christ.</i>
N ⁱ . Négociant.	<i>Merchant, m.</i>
N ^e . Négociante.	<i>Merchant, f.</i>
O. Ouest.	<i>West.</i>
O. N. Ouest-nord.	<i>West-north.</i>
O. S. Ouest-sud.	<i>West-south.</i>
P. S. Post-scriptum.	<i>Postscript.</i>
R. P. Révérend père.	<i>Reverend father.</i>
S. Sud.	<i>South.</i>
S. A. I. Son Altesse Impériale.	<i>His or Her Imperial Highness.</i>
S. A. R. Son Altesse Royale.	<i>His or Her Royal Highness.</i>
S. A. S. Son Altesse Sérenis- sime.	<i>His Most Serene Highness.</i>
S.-E. Sud est.	<i>South-east.</i>
S. Ém. Son Eminence.	<i>His Eminence.</i>
S. Ex. Son Excellence.	<i>His Excellency.</i>
S. G. Sa Grandeur.	<i>His Grace (to a Bishop).</i>
S. H. Sa Hautesse.	<i>His Highness (the Turkish Em- peror).</i>
S. M. Sa Majesté.	<i>His or Her Majesty.</i>

ABBREVIATIONS.

S. M. B. Sa Majesté Britan-
nique.
S. M. C. Sa Majesté Catholique.
S. M. I. Sa Majesté Impériale.
S. M. R. Sa Majesté Royale.
S. M. S. Sa Majesté Suédoise.
S. M. T. C. Sa Majesté Très-
Chrétienne.
S. M. T. F. Sa Majesté Très-
Fidèle.
S.-O. Sud-ouest.
S. P. Saint Père.
SS. PP. Les Saints Pères.
S. S. Sa Sainteté.
S.-S.-E. Sud-sud-est.
S.-S.-O. Sud-sud-ouest.

MEANINGS.

His or Her Britannic Majesty.
His Catholic Majesty.
His Imperial Majesty.
His Royal Majesty.
His Swedish Majesty.
His Most Christian Majesty.
His Most Faithful Majesty.
South-west.
Holy Father.
The Holy Fathers.
His Holiness.
South-south-east.
South-south-west.



